

UC-NRLF



\$B 211 355

THE IGNOBLE WARRIOR



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

THE IGNOBLE WARRIOR

「軍艦よりも寧ろ客船を沈める方が餘程樂ですわね向ふから發砲しませんから」
定期船「アラバ」の撃沈は武装なき船舶に在る抵抗力なき男女小兒を溺死せしめたる最悪なる一例なり



"WE HAVE BETTER LUCK WITH PASSENGER STEAMERS THAN
WITH WARSHIPS. THEY CANNOT SHOOT"

The torpedoing of the liner "Falaba" was one of the worst cases of drowning men, women and children of an unarmed vessel.

ルシタニアの小兒

獨逸潜航艇の爲に撃沈されたる海船ルシタニア號より收容せる小兒等の死體（ルシタニア號には砲の裝置もなく又た銃器も搭載せざる客船）



THE CHILDREN OF THE "LUSITANIA"

Some of the dead bodies from the torpedoed liner "Lusitania" (which carried neither mounted nor unmounted guns.)

THE IGNOBLE WARRIOR

A Collection of Facts for the Study of the
Origin and Conduct of the War

BY

J. W. ROBERTSON SCOTT

*Author of "Japan, Great Britain and the World,"
"The Land Problem," "A Free Farmer
in a Free State," etc.*

IN ENGLISH AND JAPANESE

WITH

38 CARTOONS

BY

LOUIS RAEMAKERS

AND

26 ORIGINAL ILLUSTRATIONS, REPRODUCTIONS AND
LETTERS IN FACSIMILE

MARUZEN & COMPANY, LTD.

TOKYO, OSAKA, KYOTO, FUKUOKA & SENDAI

TO THE DEAD AND THE LIVING

I

*To the Glorious Memory
of the Young Men
who, profoundly hating War,
gladly gave their lives
in the Cause of Civilisation*

II

*To my Japanese Friends
who, from their knowledge of
English History, Literature and Character,
understand the motives
which have actuated the British People*

CONTENTS

THE PICTURES

THE ARTIST RAEMAKERS AND THE STORY HE TELLS

PAGE

THE STORY

I.—BEFORE THE INVASION OF BELGIUM

- 1.—HOW GERMANY PROMISED IN FOUR TREATIES TO
RESPECT THE NEUTRALITY OF BELGIUM
The Treaties from 1831 to 1907..... 1
- 2.—HOW GERMAN MINISTERS PROMISED THE SAME
THING FOUR TIMES
The Undertaking of Two Chancellors 3

II.—DURING THE INVASION

- 3.—BELGIUM INVADED
A Story of Baseness and Nobility..... 5
- 4.—GERMAN EXCUSES BEGIN
“The French would have forestalled us” 8
- 5.—GREAT BRITAIN'S DECISION TO FIGHT
Why the British People went to War 11
- 6.—THE MURDERER ASSAILS HIS VICTIM'S CHARACTER
German Allegations against Belgium and her Neigh-
bours 16
- 7.—MILITARY ACHIEVEMENT OF BELGIUM IN THE WAR
The Sacrifices of Belgian Life 25
- 8.—WHAT HAPPENED IN BELGIUM
Appalling Outrages Aggravated by Slander..... 29
- 9.—THE HORRORS OF THE SIX TOWNS
1. The “Scientific and Deliberate Destruction of
Louvain..... 41

	PAGE
2. The 650 Victims at Tamines	44
3. The 800 Murdered at Dinant	44
4. Execution by Axe at Andenne	48
5. The Exhumations at Aerschot.....	50
6. The Massacre of 2,000 in Namur	51
10.—THE TERRIBLE FINDINGS OF THE BRITISH COMMISSION OF INQUIRY	
Seven Violations of the Rules of War of which there are "Absolutely Authentic Proofs"	52
11.—SOME OF THE EVIDENCE ON WHICH THE FINDINGS WERE BASED	
1. "Deliberately and Systematically Organised" Massacre, Murder and Outrage	55
2. Outrages on Women.....	59
3. Human Shields for Soldiers.....	63
4. The Killing of Wounded and Prisoners	64
5. Looting and Wanton Destruction	67
6. Systematic Incendiarism.....	69
12.—SOME FACTS AND A GERMAN COMMENTARY	
Germany Self Convicted	71
<i>III.—DURING THE OCCUPATION</i>	
13.—THE ILL USAGE OF THE BELGIANS CONTINUED DURING THE OCCUPATION	
1. How they have been robbed by Thefts, Fines and Taxes.....	78
2. How they have been Starved	82
3. How Civil Justice has been denied	87
4. A Typical Instance: The Murder of Miss Cavell	88
<i>IV. THE FACTS OF HISTORY</i>	
14.—THE LIE AS TO THE MOTIVE FOR THE INVASION OF BELGIUM	
Germany's Real Aim Disclosed	93

15.—GREAT BRITAIN'S EFFORTS TO LIVE ON GOOD TERMS WITH GERMANY AND HOW THEY WERE STEADILY THWARTED	
The Strange Story of the Naval Negotiations	98
16.—HOW GREAT BRITAIN TWICE PREVENTED WAR Germany Makes her Purpose Plain	101
17.—GERMANY'S GREATER AIMS Plans for World Dominion.....	108
18.—HOW GERMANY FORCED THE PRESENT WAR What Happened in 1913.....	111
19.—THE DIPLOMATIC HISTORY OF THE WAR YEAR Sir Edward Grey's Struggle to Avoid War	114
20.—WHAT THE ALLIES ARE FIGHTING FOR A Precise Statement by the British Foreign Minister	121
21.—WERE OTHER POWERS BLAMEWORTHY? A Candid Examination of the Facts.....	128
22.—DID THE BRITISH HATE THE GERMANS? Why 5,000,000 Civilians Became Soldiers	133
23.—THE CONCLUSION OF THE WHOLE MATTER What Hinders Peace.....	138

APPENDIX

THE BRITISH CHARACTER IN WORLD HISTORY	
A Swiss Writer's Collection of Facts from a Hundred Years	143
THE BRITISH CHARACTER IN THE PRESENT WAR	
1.—"Tokyo Nichi Nichi"	146
2.—"Herald of Asia"	147
BRITAIN'S BUSHIDO	
A French Writer on the British and Japanese Spirit	149
TRANSLATION OF THE PROCLAMATIONS	155

ILLUSTRATIONS

1.—*RAEMAKERS CARTOONS*

	facing page
"We have Better Luck with Passenger Steamers than with Warships. They Cannot Shoot"	ii
The Children of the "Lusitania"	iii
The Children of Belgium	xii
"Why Couldn't She Submit? She would have been Well Paid"	xiii
German Emperor as a Savage Breaking into Belgium.....	xvi
Belgians used as a Shield for German Troops	1
A Familiar Scene	4
The Retreat from Antwerp	5
"It's All Right. If I had not Done it Someone Else Would" ..	8
The Friend of Belgium.....	9
The Views of the Devil	12
Kultur has Passed this Way.....	13
The Dream	16
"The Way to Calais".....	17
The Massacre of the Innocents	18
Kultur from the Sky.....	19
The Mothers of Belgium.....	24
The Widows of Belgium	25
A Wounded Belgian Soldier Burying his Child.....	32
Exhumation of the Martyrs of Aerschot	33
Shooting of Innocent Hostages in Belgium	40
Executions in Belgium in the Presence of Wives and Children ..	41
A Belgian Home	48
Kultur	49
Able-Bodied Belgians Deported to Germany	56
The Friend of Belgium Again.....	57
Hungry Belgians Outside the American Relief Committee's Office.....	64
The Homeless in Winter.....	65
The Mysteries of German War Finance	72
Serbia, Autumn, 1915	73

	facing page
Germany and Death	80
Cannon Food	81
The Triumph of the Zeppelin	88
The Execution of Miss Cavell	89
Civilisation in the Grip of Militarism	96
Germany's Peace Proposals.....	97

2.—*FACSIMILES AND ILLUSTRATIONS FROM ORIGINAL PHOTOGRAPHS*

Sisyphus	104
"Before the Leaves Fall You Will Have Peace"	105
A German Soldier's Gleeful Account of Killing the Wounded	112
Hanging of Three Women Admitted	113
Extract from a German Soldier's Letter about Mutilating the Wounded	113
A Confession of Murder	120
Incendiarism and Piety.....	120
Confession of Disgraceful Conduct.....	121
German Soldiers' Incendiary Tablets	128
A Case of Bestiality	128
The King of the Belgians Encouraging his Soldiers.....	129
Where the King of the Belgians lives during the War	136
The Belgian Crown Prince.....	136
King George and King Albert.....	137

3.—*ILLUSTRATIONS IN THE TEXT*

	page
1. The Bravery of Belgium.....	7
2. Patriotic Proclamation of the Belgian General at Liège on the German Invasion	25
3. Japanese Sword Presented to King Albert.....	27
4. Proclamation of Civil and Military Governors Warning people against taking up Arms	31
5. Proclamation of a Burgomaster directing those who may possess guns to surrender them	33
6. Invitations to attend a Mass near Liège for the Souls of 61 massacred persons, four of whom were women	37
7. A List Published at Tamines of the Names of 336 persons killed (including 2 priests and 9 women) and of 59 persons wounded	43

	facing page
8. German Proclamation ordering the Surrender of Lists of the Dead.....	46
9. Invitation to a Mass in Rome for the Souls of 48 Priests Shot in Belgium	56
10. Advertisement in "Cologne Gazette" of Furniture Remover offering to take goods from Belgium to Germany	79
11. Order in German Government Gazette imposing the War contribution of 40,000,000 francs	81
12. Different Points of View.....	141

NOTE

Since this book was written much additional evidence has come to light as to the way in which Germany deliberately planned War. As for example :

May, 1914.—German Reservists called up from the Far East.

Early June.—Arms for German cruisers sent out to Buenos Ayres.

June 15th.—Contracts in America for coaling German cruisers *at sea* at specified places and dates in August and September.

June, Late.—German Reservists called up from Natal.

Last instalment due of the great German War Loan.

July.—Bills on London far in excess of trade requirements drawn by Germans, such bills falling due after August 1st.

July 31st.—The German "Kronprinzessin Cecilie" in mid-Atlantic receives message in special cipher, "War has broken out. Return to New York." Now War had *not* broken out. The English ultimatum was not sent till August 4th. Germany was still "negotiating."

ERRATA

Page 9, line 21; page 11, line 7; page 12, lines 32 and 35: for "Minister" read "Ambassador."

Page 19, line 7, for "Character", read "Chapter"

Page 64, line 17, for "Third" read "Fourth." Page 67, line 4, for "Fourth" read "Fifth." Page 69, line 27, for "Fifth" read "Sixth."

Page 80, line 5, for "140,000 francs," read "65,000,000 francs"



THE CHILDREN OF BELGIUM

「何故彼女は従はぬだらふ、従ひさへすればそれだけの得は有つたらうに」
 圖は獨逸大學の教授等が白耳義にして獨逸に抵抗せずして之に屈服したらんには白耳義は大なる利益を得たりし
 ならんとの宣言を爲せることを示したるものなり



“WHY COULDN'T SHE SUBMIT? SHE WOULD HAVE BEEN WELL PAID”

An allusion to the suggestion in a manifesto by German professors that it would have paid Belgium better to submit to Germany than to resist her!

INTRODUCTION

THE ARTIST RAEMAKERS

AND THE STORY HE TELLS

"It makes all the difference whether we put Truth in the first place or the second place."—*Whateley*

THE GREATEST ARTIST THE WAR HAS PRODUCED.—The object of this book is twofold. First, to introduce to Japan an artist of exceptional distinction. Second, to record quite simply the remarkable series of events on which he has concentrated his genius.

Raemakers is by far the greatest artist the War has produced. He has devoted his talents to throwing a light on the treatment of Belgium by Germany. He is not, however, a Belgian. He was born of a Dutch father in Holland, the people of which country have been in the past by no means on cordial terms with the Belgians, and his mother was a German.

The drawings, of which those collected in this book form a small part, first began to appear in a Dutch paper. The aim of Raemakers was not only humane but patriotic. In size and in geographical relationship with Germany, Holland closely resembles Belgium. Believing that Holland might ultimately be exposed to the same dangers as Belgium, Raemakers desired to make plain to his Dutch fellow countrymen the real policy and mentality of the German invaders of Belgium.

The fame of Raemakers' War drawings quickly grew. A great exhibition of them was held in Paris. They began to be published in a London weekly, "Land and Water." Soon Raemakers was acclaimed in Europe and America as the greatest artist the War has brought into notice.

THE QUALITY OF HIS WORK.—Raemakers is remarkable not only because of a great technical skill. He is a great artist because of his deep sincerity and a real insight into character. With these gifts and a burning scorn of wrong, Raemakers has been able to picture with relentless truth the baseness of the Ignoble Warrior. As a great French

critic has written, he seems to have clearly discerned the actual character of the average German conscript:

"He is shown to be fierce, but the artist also distinctly indicates that at the very moment when the brute is unchained in this warrior by battle, by pillage, by sensual indulgence and by the orders of his officers, dictated by a barbarous conception of War, he is after all, only an inflamed ironmonger of some petty town in Pomerania. The artist indeed retains the attitude of a philosopher who ascertains, explains, gives one a realising idea of the situation."

It is evidence of the degree to which the Germans have felt the scorn of Raemakers that 6,000 yen are reported to have been offered for his capture. He is now living in London.

THE ARTIST'S SUBJECT.—In order to understand the feeling which inspires these drawings by Raemakers it is necessary to understand exactly what has happened in Belgium. In the following pages I have been at great pains to set down the simple facts, without passion or prejudice, so carefully and precisely that no one can dare to question their truth. All I have written is based on official publications or other works of an absolutely trustworthy character.

The Raemakers cartoons had unfortunately to be imported in large sheets, to which English and Japanese lettering had to be added. This accounts for a somewhat less artistic presentation of them than would have been obtainable with the cartoons themselves or with blocks.

I tried hard to keep the book from getting so long. But it has been necessary to cover a great deal of ground in order to furnish a sufficiently complete view of a large subject. Many readers will no doubt be familiar with the facts set forth in some of the Chapters. I am hopeful, however, that there may be other Chapters which contain a narrative of events which may be by no means so well known to them.

I need not say that no one can be more conscious than I am that the book might have been much better. It has been written with not a few disadvantages. I have had to do without some books by consultation with which I could have made my pages more forceful. Some of the works which I have been able to consult arrived very late. One merit, however, may be claimed for the book. Its author has most sincerely endeavoured to write, in the words of the oath administered to witnesses in English courts of justice, "the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth." He dares to hope that the agonising story of outrage, of ignoble militarism, and of baseness in high places which he has felt it to be his duty to set forth at this critical period in the moral

development of the nations of the world will be read by a kindly and chivalrous people with feelings of horror and with sentiments of sympathy.

ATTITUDE TOWARDS GERMANY.—The author would deeply regret if this book had the effect of obscuring from any reader the high degree of German attainment in many fields before the War. He would be equally sorry if anyone should so misunderstand his aim as to imagine that he did not recognise to the full the conspicuous bravery of many German soldiers and sailors, and the sacrifices which are being made and the unity which is being displayed by so considerable a proportion of the German people. The German virtues are not hidden from those who have at heart the progress of mankind and the development of Civilisation. That these virtues should have been so ignobly prostituted, that a mean conception of the ends of life and of International relations should have imposed itself on the mind and conscience of a great nation, is one of the saddest things in the history of Europe. The peoples at War with the Germanic Powers are appalled and bewildered as might be the members of a peaceful family by the discovery of a murderer in their midst. In the anguish and sorrow which the populations of the Allied countries have been called upon to bear, feelings of revenge for their sufferings are not uppermost in their thoughts. But a stern duty is indubitably laid upon them. That duty is, as an International Police Force, effectually to restrain and to punish the criminal, and to make sure that such a crime as has been committed shall never again darken the records of mankind.

THE BASIS OF PEACE.—We are far away in Japan from the scenes of horror. But we are able to realise something of the woe which has come upon Europe. It is a natural human instinct, then, to desire Peace. But in seeking for Peace, at a time when a bloodied world seems to have taken leave of sanity, it is above all things imperative to use commonsense. And it is the most obvious commonsense that there can be no hope of finding a sound basis for Peace without first establishing, in the eyes of the world and of the German people, the causes of the infraction of Peace.

Before the War, every nation had been for years pouring out money on armaments, War was the calling of many millions of men. The possibilities of War were taken as a matter of course. The world had become a powder magazine. No nation was willing to spend the price of a single Dreadnought on promoting good relations with its

neighbours on the sure foundation of an understanding of their aims and needs. It is idle, therefore, to try to cast on a single people entire responsibility for War. But it is the solemn claim of this book that, as far as it is possible to determine national responsibility for War, Germany alone was the cause of the present carnage. This is a terrible indictment. It may not be brought against Germany without abundant evidence. The author of these pages invites the reader carefully to examine the facts which he has brought together, not only as to the Causes but as to the Conduct of the War, and to form his own judgment.

The case for the Allies was thus summarised by Viscount Grey on October 24, 1916:

People say it is useless to return and go over the same old ground, but you cannot return to the ground too often, for it affects the future peace conditions.

Nobody in July, 1914, thought of attacking Germany. It was simply the story of 1870 over again. Everything was prepared in Berlin, and when the chosen moment came the manoeuvre was made to provoke another country into a defensive attitude, a step which was then resented by an ultimatum.

It was the same thing with the invasion of Belgium. The strategic railways and plan of campaign were all prepared.

All efforts to avoid War in 1914 failed because Germany had willed that the War should be.

I should like nothing better than to see all these statements investigated before an independent and impartial tribunal.

It is for the reader of the following pages to say whether the case for the Allies is made out.

J. W. ROBERTSON SCOTT

Koeiji Temple, Tatsuzawa, Naganoken. Autumn, 1916.

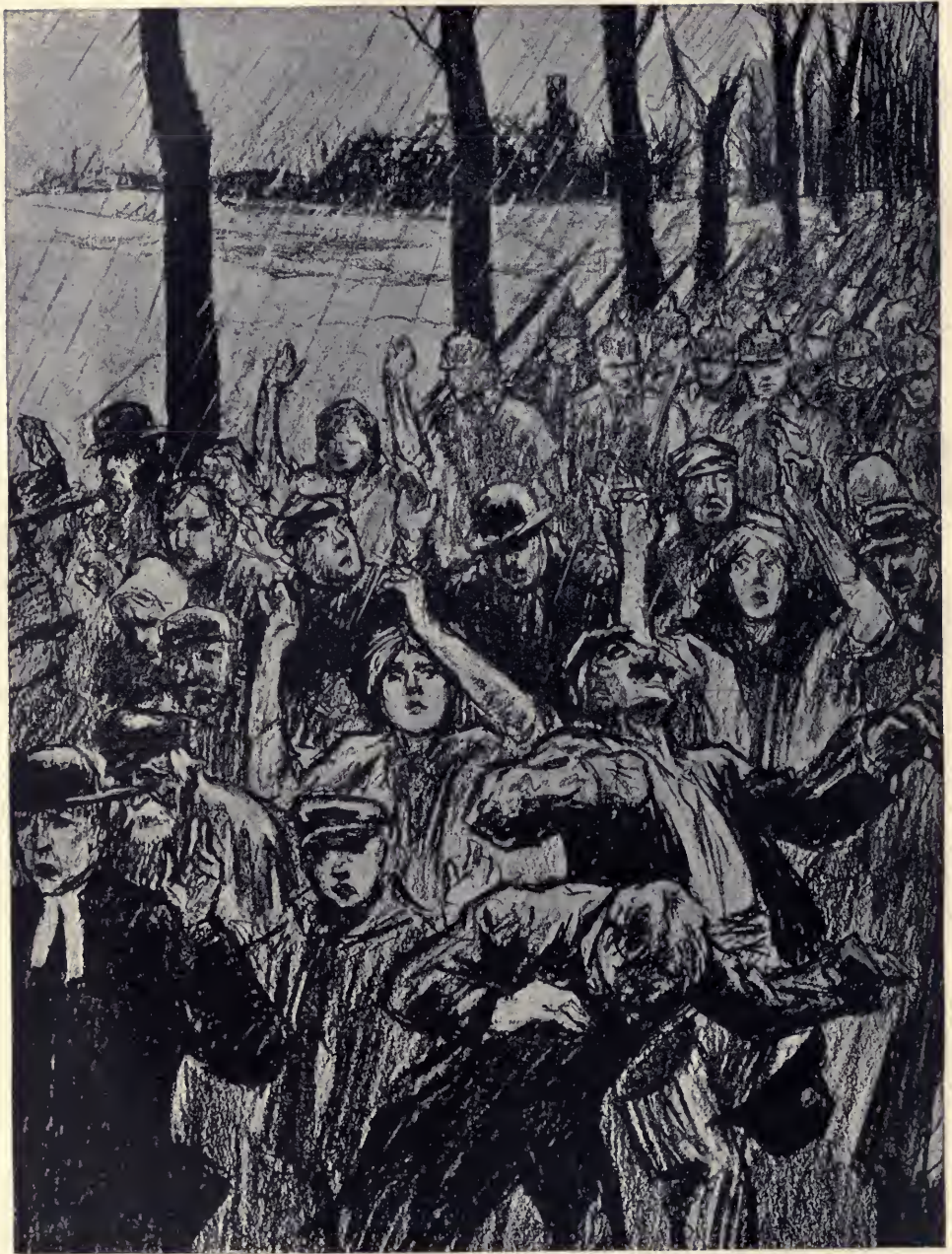
野蠻人の如く白耳義に侵入せる獨逸皇帝
 「到處獨乙」と記せる祭壇上に犠牲として置かれたるは白耳義なり、第一頁より第六頁まで白耳義の中立維持に
 關する獨逸の約束の條參照



GERMAN EMPEROR AS A SAVAGE BREAKING INTO BELGIUM

Belgium is represented as being sacrificed on an altar inscribed "Germany over all."

See pages 1 to 4 for German promises to preserve Belgian neutrality.



BELGIANS USED AS A SHIELD FOR GERMAN TROOPS

"The rules and usages of War were frequently broken by placing civilians, including women and children, as a shield for troops exposed to fire."—*Report of British Commission of Inquiry. See page 63.*

獨軍の楯として用ひられたる白耳義人
獨軍に戦争の法規慣習を破り非戦闘員殊に婦人小兒に至る迄敵火に暴露する軍の楯として前面に立たしめたり。
第八十九頁英國調査委員報告書参照

CHAPTER I

HOW GERMANY PROMISED IN *FOUR* TREATIES TO RESPECT THE NEUTRALITY OF BELGIUM

THE TREATIES FROM 1831 TO 1907

"Truth must be constantly re-stated for falsehood never ceases to whisper in our ears."—*Goethe*

MARQUIS OKUMA EXPLAINS.—"The existence of Belgium as a Buffer State," the Marquis Okuma has very clearly explained, "is indispensable to the peace of the world." As the ex-Premier points out, because of the geographical position and flatness of Belgium, "nearly all the important battles of Western Europe" have been fought there. "It is because of this," he says, "that the European Powers had placed Belgium in a state of perpetual neutrality." Yet, as he goes on to say, "this Buffer State is to-day occupied by the Germans." The facts could not be more faithfully summarised. In the present Chapter the story is told in greater detail.

HOW BELGIUM CAME INTO EXISTENCE.—In the year 1831 Belgium, disliking her connexion with Holland, was detached from Holland and made into a separate kingdom. In that year a Treaty was signed by Great Britain, France, Russia, *Austria and Prussia** which enacted that "*Belgium shall form a perpetually neutral State.*" The five Powers guaranteed to it also the integrity and inviolability of its territory.

In 1839 Holland, which had naturally resented the secession of Belgium, finally recognised the new Belgian State. In a Treaty with Belgium, Holland recognised that "Belgium shall form an independent and perpetually neutral State." Thereupon in the Treaty of London signed in the same year, that is 1839, the Sovereigns of the five Great Powers, including *Prussia and Austria*, declared that the Dutch-Belgian Treaty was "*placed under the guarantee of their Majesties.*"

* The German Empire was not founded until 1871.

2 WHAT GERMANY PROMISED IN FOUR TREATIES

HOW BELGIAN NEUTRALITY WAS RESPECTED IN THE FRANCO-PRUSSIAN WAR.—In 1870 came the War between France and Prussia. In order that there should be no doubt as to the neutrality of Belgium, the belligerents, at the instance of Great Britain, entered into a fresh Treaty with her (August 9) “without invalidating or impairing the conditions of the Quintuple Treaty above mentioned,” that is the Treaty of 1839. This new Treaty between Great Britain, Prussia and France specified that Prussia “notwithstanding the hostilities with which *the North German Confederation** is engaged with France, *has the fixed determination to respect the neutrality of Belgium.*” France, on her part, made the same engagement, and Great Britain in order to leave no possible room for doubt as to her own attitude, undertook to attack either Prussia or France if either should break her undertaking and invade Belgium. Two instances may be given of the respect which during this War of 1870 was paid to the neutrality of Belgium. First, Napoleon and his army had the opportunity of escaping from Sedan into Belgium and thus avoiding the humiliation of surrender at that place, but did not avail themselves of it. Second, after the surrender of Sedan, Prussia asked for permission to transport her wounded across Belgium to Germany, but this permission was refused.

WHAT THE HAGUE CONVENTION PROVIDED.—The only other Treaty having relation to the case of Belgium is the Hague Convention of 1907, signed by forty-four countries *including Germany and Austria*. It specifies that “the territory of neutral powers” such as Belgium “is inviolable.”

“*Belligerents,*” it says, “*are forbidden to move across the territory of a neutral power troops and convoys either of munitions of war or of supplies.*”

“The fact of a neutral power repelling even, by force, attacks on its neutrality,” it goes on to state, “cannot be considered a hostile act.”

* The style under which Prussia and the other German States engaged in War with France.

CHAPTER II

HOW GERMAN MINISTERS PERSONALLY PROMISED THE SAME THING FOUR TIMES

THE UNDERTAKINGS OF TWO CHANCELLORS

A GERMAN LEGAL VIEW.—So much for the way in which the neutrality of Belgium was protected by Treaties which may be called part of the Public Law of the World.

But Germany went farther than giving the guarantee of her signature to these Treaties. She gave the authority not only of the leading German text-book of International Law, but of two of her Chancellors and of two of her Ministers. First, as to what the "*Handbuch des Völkerrechts*" says. In Volume III, part 16, pages 93,108,109, it lays down the absolute inviolability of Belgium in all circumstances and without exception. It declares that such Treaties as the Treaties guaranteeing the neutrality of Belgium are the great "landmarks of progress," and that the guarantors must step in, *whether invited or uninvited*, to vindicate them. "*Nothing*," it is declared, "*could make the situation of Europe more insecure than an egotistical repudiation by the great States of these duties of international fellowship.*"

WHAT BISMARCK SAID AND WROTE.—Now as to the declarations of German statesmen. When, in 1870, France declared war on Prussia, the Belgian Minister in Berlin feared that, notwithstanding the Treaties, Germany might, if hard pressed, not scruple to violate the neutrality of Belgium. But Bismarck, the German Chancellor, reassured him.

"In confirmation of my oral assurances," (he wrote, July 22) "I give you in writing the declaration, superfluous in view of the Treaties in force, that *the North German Confederation and its Allies will respect the neutrality of Belgium.*"

And, as we have seen in the last Chapter, the undertaking was respected.

THE UNDERTAKINGS OF BETHMAN HOLLWEG AND VON JAGOW.—In 1905 the German Minister at Brussels declared at a public banquet

4 WHAT GERMAN MINISTERS PROMISED FOUR TIMES

that, "*respect for Belgian neutrality is a political axiom in Germany.*"

Six years later, in 1911, Belgium thought it well to make representations to Germany in regard to certain newspaper articles. Thereupon the Imperial Chancellor (Herr von Bethmann Hollweg) declared that "*Germany has no intention of violating Belgian neutrality.*"

In 1913, a year before the present War, the German Secretary for Foreign Affairs (Herr von Jagow), in the course of a debate in the Budget Committee of the Reichstag, (April 29), gave the following assurance to a deputy who had suspicions that the German Army might not be too scrupulous about Belgium: "*Belgian neutrality is provided for by International Conventions, and Germany is determined to respect these Conventions.*" As another deputy still doubted, the Minister of War rose and said, "*Germany will not lose sight of the fact that the neutrality of Belgium is guaranteed by International Treaty.*"

ASSURANCES RENEWED ON THE VERY EVE OF INVASION.—Now we come down to 1914. War between Germany and France seemed imminent. But the Belgian Minister of Foreign Affairs, confident in the Treaty guarantees of Germany and in the personal assurances of German Ministers, expressed the opinion that it did not seem possible that Belgian neutrality could be threatened. On the day on which he spoke, indeed, the German Minister in Brussels told the Belgian Government that he was "*certain that the sentiment expressed (by Herr Von Bethmann Hollweg in the previous year) had not changed.*"

Two days afterwards, on August 2, the German Army was mobilised, and the same German Minister in Brussels received the anxious editors of the newspapers of the Belgian capital. He assured them that "*the troops will not cross Belgian territory.*" The Minister also saw the Belgian Foreign Minister and added "his personal opinion as to the feelings of security which the Belgians had the right to entertain" towards Germany.

A "VERY CONFIDENTIAL" REQUEST.—Yet on the evening of the very day on which these assurances had been given, the German Minister presented to the Belgian Government a formal Note, marked "Very Confidential," demanding permission, before seven o'clock the next morning, that is *within twelve hours*, for a free passage of the German Army through Belgium, and threatening to regard Belgium as an enemy if she refused!

「獨軍は白耳義の各地に於て非戦闘員の虐殺を企て圖の如き光景は隨處に現はる」英國調査委員報告書第七十六頁
参照



A FAMILIAR SCENE

"In many parts of Belgium the Germans deliberately organised the massacre of civilians."—*Report of the British Commission of Inquiry. See page 55.*

アントワープの退却
退却中の白耳義兵婦女小兒の避難者を助く



THE RETREAT FROM ANTWERP

Retreating Belgian Soldiers helping the women and children refugees.

CHAPTER III

BELGIUM INVADED

A STORY OF BASENESS AND NOBILITY

BELGIUM'S TERRIBLE PREDICAMENT.—What was Belgium's reply at this terrible crisis? The people of Belgium were only seven millions against Germany's sixty millions. In a military sense, Belgium was a pigmy facing a giant. She might have said, in the words which the German Chancellor used later, "Necessity knows no law." She might have argued that her case was utterly hopeless; that she had not had even a week to mobilise; that her first duty was to the safety of the lives and property of her own population; that France—before whom she might stand for a short time as a tiny shield—was nothing to her; and that any support which might come from England would, in the circumstances of the case, probably arrive too late to be of much value. She might have decided during that single night, which was all that was allowed her for consideration, that her honour would be satisfied by a merely formal military demonstration against the invaders.

"Every material interest indeed," (as a distinguished American jurist has written), "suggested acquiescence in the peremptory demands of her powerful neighbour. The success of Germany, in taking advantage of France by making a quick move through Belgium, seemed probable; and Belgium by facilitating that triumph of Germany, would be in a position to participate in the spoils of victory. But the Belgians dared to live up to the reputation of the ancient Belgae whom Caesar declared to be of all the tribes of Gaul "the bravest."

WHAT THE BELGIANS DID.—What the Belgians did was to send the following reply—surely one of the noblest in history:

"The attack upon the independence of Belgium which the German Government threatens constitutes a flagrant violation of International Law.

"The Belgian Government, if they were to accept the proposal submitted to them, would sacrifice the honour of the nation and betray their duty towards Europe.

"The Belgian Government are firmly resolved to repel by all the means in their power every attack upon their rights."

The next morning the Germans invaded Belgium amid the scenes of horror which will be described in later Chapters.

A HUMAN INCIDENT.—It will not unduly delay the narrative to record the fact, recorded by the Belgian Under Secretary for Foreign Affairs, M. de Bassompierre, that not one member of the large staff of the Ministry “dreamt for an instant that the reply to the German Note could be anything other than an indignant refusal.” The general sentiment was, he says :

“If we are crushed, we shall be crushed gloriously, and our fate will be no worse than if we did what the Germans demand. If we should yield, we could never again look a Frenchman or an Englishman in the face.”

The next morning, after the reply had been delivered, Mr. Webber, attaché at the British Legation, appeared at the Foreign Office to ask for copies of the German Note and of the Belgian reply. M. de Bassompierre thus describes a human incident :

“He knew the general tenor of the documents but not the precise words. I read them both to him. When I came to the sentence, ‘The Belgian Government, if they were to accept the proposals submitted to them, would sacrifice the honour of the nation and betray their duty towards Europe,’ I felt my throat swell ; emotion almost mastered me. I succeeded however in reading to the end.

“Webber had not moved a muscle ; he remained on his feet in front of me. He took my two hands, and, having gazed at me a moment in silence, he said simply ‘Bravo, Belgians !’ in a voice that was not quite steady. Then he swiftly copied the two notes in shorthand and hurried off with them to his chief.”

THE GERMAN BLUNDER.—There was at least one Belgian public man who held that the purpose of Germany had been only to intimidate Belgium, and that Germany imagined that, in view of the military weakness of the country, consent to the crossing of Belgian territory by the German armies would be given. He thought the determined reply of the Belgian Government might cause Germany to hesitate before invading.

“The political blunder that Germany would commit in beginning a world War by an absolutely unjustifiable violation of the neutrality of a friendly country seemed to him so enormous, and the universal reprobation which must inevitably follow it, seemed to him so certain to weigh heavily in the final adjustment of accounts.”

But, as we know, Germany did not realise her blunder. And Belgium proceeded to carry out her duty.

THE EMOTION OF THE DIPLOMATISTS.—Speaking of the scenes of emotion at the Palace in the presence of the King on the day of the invasion, M. de Bassompierre says :

“In the middle of the room, a little apart from the rest, stood the Counsellor of the Austro-Hungarian Legation. His presence there was accidental. He had come with

some communication from his Government, altogether foreign, it may be, to the dramatic events of the moment. He was unable to withstand the universal emotion that encompassed him. He was wiping the tears from his eyes.”

At the historic joint session of the Chambers, when the King declared that a country which defends itself compels universal respect and cannot perish, and the Foreign Minister hurled at Germany the defiant words, “We may be conquered but submit—never!”

“tears fell from the eyes of more than one foreign diplomat. Those tears did honour to those who shed them no less than to those whose splendid courage caused them to flow. By resolutely carrying political honour to its extremest consequences, Belgium had entered into glory.”



1.—THE BRAVERY OF BELGIUM

Relative sizes of Belgium (shaded)
and Germany (black).

——白耳義の勇敢

白耳義(線入) 獨逸(黒) の大きさの比較

CHAPTER IV

GERMAN EXCUSES BEGIN

"THE FRENCH WOULD HAVE FORESTALLED US!"

THE CONFESSION OF GUILT.—It was to be expected that unprecedented efforts would be put forth by Germany in order to frame some sort of excuse for her appalling conduct.

She had acted in defiance of a whole series of Treaty engagements.

She had given the lie to the personal assurances of her diplomatists.

She had acted in opposition to the plain statement of her duty in the German textbook of International Law.

In her slaughter of the unoffending Belgians who opposed her at their frontier, she had committed the grossest outrage on humanity.

Faced by an outburst of indignation the world round, the Imperial Chancellor had at once to admit in the Reichstag what he could not deny that Germany had committed "*a breach of International Law.*" He spoke of "*the rightful protests of Belgium*" and "*the wrong we commit.*" There could not be a clearer confession of guilt.

THE SLANDER ON FRANCE.—Then the excuses began. Herr von Bethmann Hollweg (in the Reichstag) and Herr von Jagow (in conversation with the Belgian Minister in Berlin) both pleaded that if Germany had not invaded Belgium, France would have done so and was in fact going to do so!

There is a saying in Europe that "he who excuses himself accuses himself." *Not an atom of proof of this French intention to forestall Germany by invading Belgium herself has ever been brought forward.* As no German allegation has been more frequently challenged, Germany must undoubtedly have brought forward any facts with which she could substantiate her charge, did such facts exist. But they do not exist.

On the other hand, France, renewing previous assurances, had given on July 31, undertakings both to the British and the Belgian Governments that she was "resolved to respect the neutrality of Belgium." The French Minister in the Belgian capital had also explicitly told the Belgian Government that "no incursion of French troops into Belgium would take place even if considerable forces are massed upon the

辨明

「構はないよ若し僕がやらなければ誰かやるに極まつて居るよ、獨逸は若し獨逸が白耳義に侵入せざりしならば佛蘭西が之なせるならんといふ不法の言ひ掛りを爲し居れり、第十一頁参照



“ITS ALL RIGHT. IF I HAD NOT DONE IT SOMEONE ELSE WOULD”

Germany made the utterly false charge that the French would have invaded Belgium had the Germans not done so. See page 8.

説得

白耳義の良友、獨逸はこれでも白耳義の良友たるを主張して居る、第百六十五參照



THE FRIEND OF BELGIUM

Germany claims to be the true friend of Belgium. See page 94.

frontier of your country." To these assurances may be added actual proof that the French were unprepared to make a sudden attack on Germany through Belgium. The proof is that it was not until two weeks after the outbreak of War and the receipt of the Belgian request for help that the French were able to throw a force of some importance into Belgium.*

Convincing evidence of the baselessness of a German charge that the French violated the frontiers of Belgium before Germany did is to be found in the fact that this was not mentioned in the German ultimatum. All the ultimatum said was that the German Government had received information that French forces "have the intention" of violating Belgian territory. The same with the German Chancellor's speech in the Reichstag on August 4. Herr von Bethmann Hollweg merely says that "France is ready to invade Belgium." "It is useless," as the Belgian Government says, "to insist at length on the fantastic character of the German slander on France." The Belgian Government has expressly stated that there was no violation of its territory by French troops.

THE SLANDER OFFICIALLY ABANDONED.—But the German Secretary of State, Herr von Jagow, himself illustrated *the utter baselessness of the German statement that Germany only invaded Belgium because France would have done so if she had not*. In a talk with the British Minister in Berlin on August 4 he said that the Germans

"had to advance into France by the quickest and easiest way, so as to be able to get well ahead with their operations and strike some decisive blow as early as possible. It was a matter of life and death for them, as if they had gone by the more southern route they could not have hoped, in view of the paucity of roads and the strength of the fortresses, to have got through without formidable opposition entailing great loss of time. This loss of time would have meant time gained by the Russians for bringing up their troops to the German frontier. Rapidity of action was the great German asset, while that of Russia was an inexhaustible supply of troops."

Similarly, speaking to the Belgian Minister in Berlin the previous day, Herr von Jagow had said:

"If the German armies do not want to be caught between the hammer and the anvil they must strike a decisive blow at France in order then to turn back again against Russia."

* Date of invasion of Belgium and of Belgian appeal to Great Britain, France and Russia for armed help, Aug. 4. Date of arrival of some French cavalry, Aug. 5. Dates of arrival of French forces of some importance, Aug. 16 and 19. Date of British forces going to Mons, August 22.

"But," said the Belgian Minister, "the frontiers of France are sufficiently extended to make it possible to avoid passing through Belgium." "*They are too strongly fortified,*" Herr von Jagow replied.

OFFICIAL ADMISSIONS OF THE CORRECTNESS OF BELGIUM'S ATTITUDE.—The further conversation of Herr von Jagow is equally interesting. He said to the Belgian Minister:

"What after all is it that we are asking of you? Merely to allow us free passage and to let us occupy the fortified places that we need."

"Suppose," the Belgian Minister had no difficulty in replying, "France had addressed the same invitation to us and we had acceded to it. Would not Germany have said we had been guilty of a cowardly betrayal?" It is not surprising to read that Herr von Jagow did not answer this very pertinent question.

The Belgian Minister thereupon resumed:

"At any rate have you anything to reproach us with? Have we not always for three quarters of a century fulfilled all the duties of our neutrality towards Germany, as also towards all the other Great Powers? Have we not given Germany evidences of loyal friendship? What return does Germany propose to make for that? To make Belgium the battlefield of Europe, and we know what devastation and disaster modern war brings in its train?"

Herr von Jagow could only reply: "*Germany has nothing to reproach Belgium with, and the attitude of Belgium has always been perfectly correct.*"

"You must recognise then," replied the Belgian Minister, "that Belgium cannot give you any other reply than that which she has given without losing her honour."

And Herr von Jagow could only reply: "*I recognise it as a private individual, but as Secretary of State I have no view to express.*"

CHAPTER V

GREAT BRITAIN'S DECISION TO FIGHT

WHY THE BRITISH PEOPLE WENT TO WAR

"A SCRAP OF PAPER."—So much for Herr von Jagow. To the British Minister at Berlin the Imperial Chancellor, Herr von Bethmann Hollweg, who was "very agitated," complained on August 4 that the action of the British Government in being ready to go to War in defence of Belgian neutrality was "terrible." It was "just for a word, neutrality, just for a scrap of paper."

The British Minister replied that the honour of Great Britain demanded that, "she should keep her solemn engagement to do her utmost to defend Belgium's neutrality. That solemn compact simply had to be kept or what confidence could anyone have in engagements by Great Britain in future? The fear of consequences could hardly be regarded as an excuse for breaking solemn engagements."

SUCCESSIVE BRITISH WARNINGS TO GERMANY.—It is well perhaps to explain that on the eve of the War Germany had been left in no doubt whatever as to Great Britain's views about the obligations of Europe to preserve Belgian neutrality.

On July 31 Great Britain asked Germany and France for a specific assurance that they would observe the Public Law of Europe and respect the neutrality of Belgium. France gave the assurance at once, but Germany would say nothing.

On August 1 Great Britain warned Germany that if there were a violation of Belgian neutrality "it would be extremely difficult to restrain public feeling in Great Britain."

On August 4 Germany invaded Belgium. Asked again by Great Britain, "in view of the terrible consequences which would ensue," if "it were not possible even at the last moment" that German action should be reconsidered, Germany definitely refused to undertake to proceed no farther with her outrageous attack on Belgium. Only then did Great Britain declare War *most reluctantly*, as all the despatches show.

BRITISH FEELING.—The British Government had told Germany that it would be difficult to restrain British feeling if Belgian neutrality were violated. It had correctly estimated the disposition of the British people. Nothing can be more certain than that, had Germany been content to attack France by crossing the French frontier, as she did in 1870, there would have been a very large and influential body of British public opinion which would have strongly opposed Great Britain declaring war. As a well known French statesman, M. Clemenceau, has written, "Had it not been for the violation of Belgium, none can say when the British would have drawn the sword?" Great Britain was under no obligations to fight alongside France. Great Britain had merely an Entente, not an Alliance with her. As Sir Edward Grey explains in a dispatch of July 31, France was being brought into the War primarily as an Ally of Russia. The dispute about Serbia was "not hers." "Nobody here," Sir Edward wrote, "feels that British Treaties or obligations are involved."

GERMAN ATTEMPTS TO BUY OFF GREAT BRITAIN.—But if Great Britain was under no obligation to stand by France if she were attacked across the French frontier, British obligations to the Public Law of Europe were at once involved when Germany threatened to attack France through Belgium. That Public Law had most clearly declared Belgium to be "perpetually neutral territory." There is no doubt that Germany perfectly understood how British feeling would be affected by her outrage on Treaties. This is shown by her successive offers to Great Britain if she would only stand aside and let her do as she pleased in Belgium during her War with France. Within a week there were no fewer than *four* of these offers:

On July 29 she said she could not promise to respect Belgian neutrality, but she was willing not to annex any part of France in Europe if Great Britain would stand aside. This was the proposal which the British Premier stigmatised as "infamous."

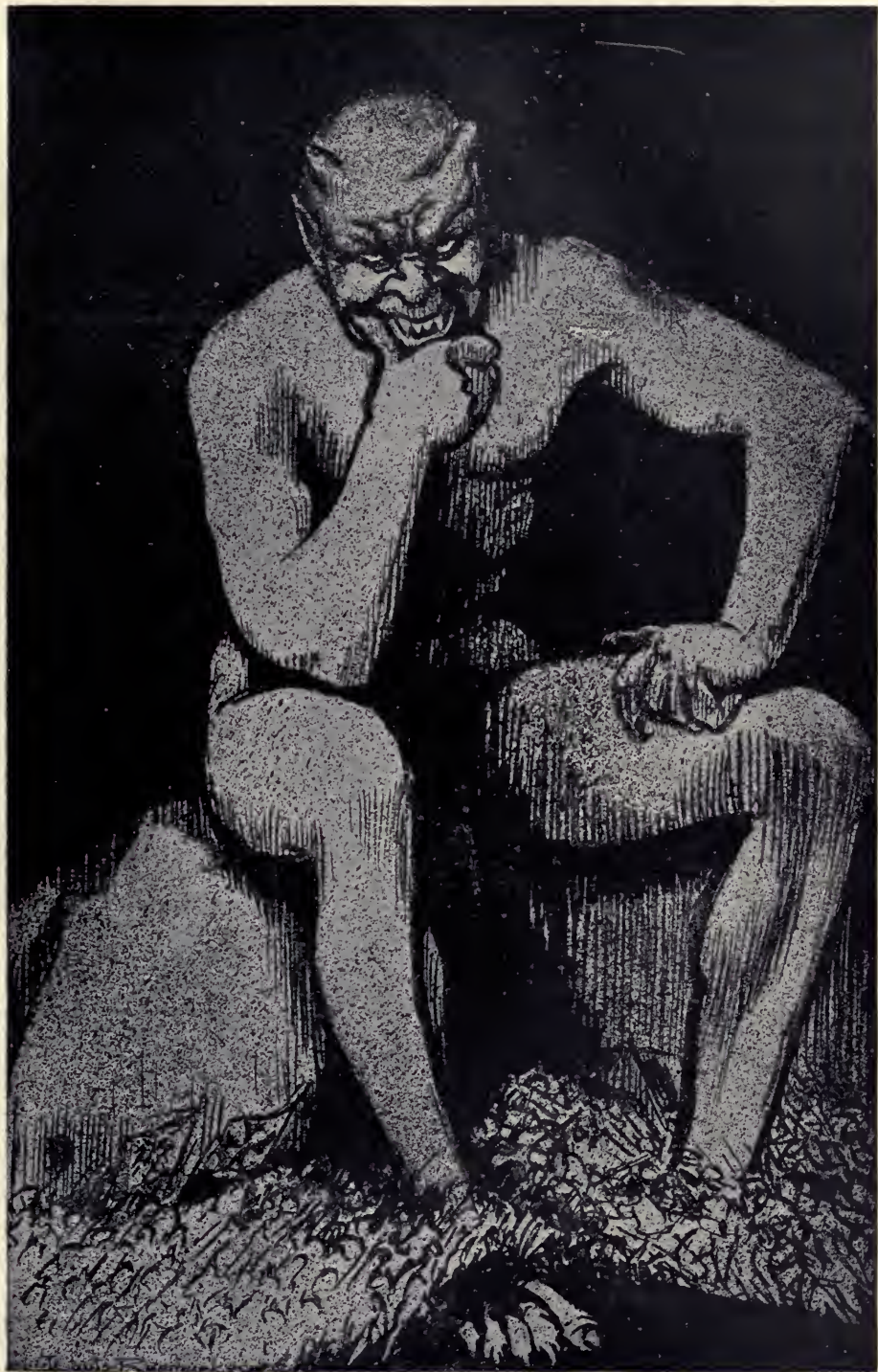
On August 1, the German Minister in London "even suggested," as the price of British neutrality, as Sir Edward Grey records, that "the integrity of France and her Colonies might be guaranteed" by Germany.

On August 3 the German Minister offered (in a communiqué to the London press) that "if Great Britain would remain neutral, Germany would give up all naval operations and would not make use of the Belgian coast as a *point d'appui*."

On August 4 the German Foreign Secretary came forward in his

悪魔の相貌

ベルンハルター曰く「戦争は單に國家の生命に必要な要素なるのみならずクルツール(獨逸文化)に缺くべからざる條件なり」
サタン(惡魔)曰く「余は衷心より此説に賛成するものなり」



THE VIEWS OF THE DEVIL

Bernhardi: "War is not merely a necessary element in the life of nations, but an indispensable factor in Kultur."

Satan: "I cordially endorse that observation."

斯の如きは是れクルツール

北清事變の時獨逸皇帝は其軍隊の出發に際し之に告げて曰く「爾等の手に歸する所のもの毫も假赦する勿れ一千
年以前にハンス族が勇名を馳せたるが如く獨逸の名をハ絃に知らしめよ」(ハンス族とは四世紀より五世紀に亘り
て歐洲を蹂躪したる定位置なき蠻族なり)



KULTUR HAS PASSED THIS WAY

“Let all who fall into your hands be at your mercy. Just as the Huns a thousand years ago gained a reputation so may the name of Germany become known.”—German Emperor to German troops departing for China. [The Huns were the savage nomads who overran Europe in the fourth and fifth centuries.]

turn with "the most positive assurance that, whatever military operations Germany might conduct in Belgium, she "will under no pretence whatever annex Belgian territory."

HOW BRITISH FEELING WAS ROUSED.—It is perfectly plain, then, that if Great Britain had been minded to ignore her duties as one of the guarantors of the neutrality of Belgium and to permit the invasion of that country, she could have protected, *at any rate for a time*, her own interests without War. It was *primarily a public interest* for which she went to War. She was not inflamed by anti-German feeling. Read the dispatch of the French Ambassador to his Government on August 3:

"The reading (in the British House of Commons) of a letter from King Albert asking for the support of Great Britain has deeply stirred the House. The House will this evening vote the (War) credit. Its support is secured."

MR. ASQUITH'S DECLARATION.—"I can only say this," (declared the British Prime Minister to the House of Commons), "if we had dallied or temporised we should have covered ourselves with dishonour."

"We are fighting to fulfil a solemn international obligation, an obligation which, had it been entered into between private persons in the ordinary concerns of life, would have been regarded as an obligation not only of law but of honour which no self-respecting man could have possibly repudiated. At a time when material force sometimes seems to be the dominant influence and factor in the development of mankind, we are fighting to vindicate the principle that small nationalities are not to be crushed in defiance of international good faith by the arbitrary will of a strong and overmastering Power."

"The maintenance of these principles is vital to the civilisation of the world."

THE BRITISH RECORD IN THE PAST.—As in the case of the British House of Commons, so it was with the British public, "Its support" was also "secured" by the pitiful appeal of the struggling Belgians. Every Japanese middle school boy knows that the British people, whatever their faults may be, have been honourably distinguished, among all the nations of the world, by their unselfish devotion to the cause of nations "rightly struggling to be free."

It may or may not be that, as a great writer has said, "The English are a people little susceptible in the region of the imagination." "But," he continues, "they have acquired a splendid tradition of stout combat for good causes." Mr. Balfour has lately pointed out that it was in the two generations when Great Britain was without a rival on the sea that many small States grew to independence, "the unity of Italy was achieved, Greece secured her independence, Belgium became a State, the South American republics were established, and the Monroe Doctrine

came into being." He might have added that it was in the period when Great Britain was without a rival on the sea that the British Government put an end to the slave trade.*

The British were chief movers in setting up the Belgian Kingdom, just as they poured out blood—among other blood, the blood of Byron—to secure the independence of Greece.

No country more warmly espoused, in blood and money, the cause of the Italians in their attempts, ultimately successful, to throw off the yoke of Austria; and the Poles never had warmer friends than they found in London.

When Lincoln was struggling with the secessionist Southern States of America for the establishment of a United States based on freedom from negro slavery, all the best elements of the British population were on his side, and, to their lasting credit, Lancashire cotton mill operatives starved in thousands rather than use slave-produced cotton.

One of the most remarkable Prime Ministers Great Britain ever had was thrown from power because he had not sympathised with Russia in her attempts to punish the Turk for the Bulgarian atrocities.

Just as no conceivable British interest was bound up with the fate of the Bulgarians, so no conceivable British interest was affected by the massacres of the Armenians. Yet for their relief the British public has subscribed, first and last, millions of yen, and the British Government, by its disinterested diplomacy on their behalf, has been scorned by Germany and Austria-Hungary, the relations of which with the world have been uniformly and confessedly based on self interest alone.

THE CASE OF SOUTH AFRICA AND GERMANY.—The intrigues of Germany against the future Union of South Africa were largely responsible for Great Britain being forced into War there. But War was declared amid the vigorous disapproval of some of the best minds in Great Britain, and it was scarcely over before the British amazed the world by conferring full self government on the Boers who had been in arms against them. To-day two of the Boer Generals, at the head of forces of British and Boers, have brought a just retribution on the Germans. They have taken possession of German South West Africa and have almost completed, in German East Africa, the capture of the last overseas possession remaining to the Kaiser.

* See Appendix: "The British Character in World History: A Swiss Writer's Facts from a Hundred Years."

Had Germany been in Great Britain's position in South Africa, had Germany been treated as Germany treated Great Britain, had Germany had a more powerful Navy than Great Britain, we know what Germany would have done. *It was clearly indicated in a Reichstag debate at the time. It is as clearly indicated by Prince von Bülow, German Chancellor at the time, in a book called "Deutsche Politik," re-issued during this War.* Germany would have used her Navy to obtain satisfaction for an utterly inexcusable and entirely selfish interference.

GERMANY AND IRELAND.—But Great Britain did not do as Germany would have done. Regretting as she did the blood already shed in South Africa, she had no wish to precipitate War in Europe. Great Britain's leniency towards Germany at that time* has had its result during the present War. The result is seen in Germany's intrigues in Ireland. A settlement of the Irish question had been attained after a freedom of discussion and a freedom of agitation which would be permitted in no other Empire in the world, and is indeed intelligible only to those who have lived in Ireland. That that difficult settlement has been by German intrigue, inhumanly wrecked for a time, is only one more item in the account for which the British people is bringing Germany to book.

The remaining items in the account shall be fully and candidly stated in later Chapters.

* Prince von Bülow admits in the book just quoted that the general international situation was not unfavourable to Great Britain and that Germany was not ready for War.

CHAPTER VI

THE MURDERER ASSAILS HIS VICTIM'S CHARACTER

GERMAN ALLEGATIONS AGAINST BELGIUM AND HER NEIGHBOURS

"You want the country to believe we Germans are a holy nation of heroic and invincible angels surrounded by murderers, thugs and vipers. You propagate a myth."—Herr Maximilian Harden, in the German review, "Zukunft."

WHY GERMANY BECAME ANGRY WITH BELGIUM.—We have seen that the German Secretary of State admitted to the Belgian Minister on August 3 that "*Germany has nothing with which to reproach Belgium*," and that "*the attitude of Belgium has always been perfectly correct*."

But the anger of Germany was soon inflamed, first, by the unexpected fury with which the Belgians defended their country, and, second, by the way in which the German plan of campaign against France was being hindered and thrown out of joint by the stand the Belgians were making.

Apart from this, Germany began to realise that the sympathy of the world was with the Belgians in their courageous defence against an infinitely more powerful opponent, an opponent who had cynically admitted that the breaking of Treaties and the massacre of an unoffending people were nothing, if by this course of conduct a military advantage could only be secured over France.

From this time forward a succession of the most unscrupulous if puerile enough charges was forthcoming from Germany against the Belgian Government and the Belgian people, and also against France and Great Britain in their relations with Belgium. As some of these utterly baseless allegations would seem to have secured a certain measure of credit in some ill-informed quarters in Japan it is worth disposing of the chief of them.

THE ALLEGED CONVENTION WITH GREAT BRITAIN.—The suggestion of which the Germans seem fondest is that Belgium had compromised her neutrality by her relations with England. This suggestion is

獨兵の夢

獨兵が破壊したる教會堂より墜落せる石像獨兵の夢に入りて渠を詰責す、從來獨兵の如く多數の教會堂を破壊し去りたるものなし



THE DREAM

Stone figures fallen from the destroyed church are supposed to upbraid the German soldier. No troops have ever destroyed more churches than the Germans.

カレーに進む道
獨逸人は其カレーに進軍する日あるを信じて疑はざりきされど遂にイゼル河以外に出づること能はざりしなり



“THE WAY TO CALAIS”

The Germans spoke confidently of making their way to Calais, but they got no farther than the river Yser.

based on what happened in 1906. In that year the attitude of Germany was particularly aggressive towards France over Morocco—*vide* Chapter XVI. At this time, therefore, informal conversations took place between two Belgian and two British military men. As anyone who examines the documents for himself can see in a moment—they have been published over and over again—these conversations were directed exclusively to what should be done, not before, but *after Belgian neutrality was violated by Germany*. The proof that there was nothing even remotely resembling a military Convention with Great Britain is plain:

First, it was not until more than sixty hours after the presentation of the German ultimatum to Belgium that Great Britain on August 5 definitely and finally promised “joint action with a view to resisting Germany.”

In the second place, when War broke out British troops did not arrive for a considerable period.

It might be added that the German case against Belgium in regard to her relations with Great Britain is so weak that in publishing the document concerned the Germans thought it necessary to garble them. For example, they translated the words, “confidential conversation” as “confidential Convention” and the date of the memorandum in the Belgian War Office, “end of September 1906” as “concluded September 1906,” in order to square with the idea of a Convention!

The Germans in their allegations against Great Britain omit one fact which makes nonsense of their suggestions against her. In 1913 Great Britain gave first an oral and then a written guarantee to Belgium that the British Government “would not be the first to violate the neutrality of Belgium.”

THE CHANCELLOR'S FIB.—German statesmen who allege the insincerity of Belgium provoke awkward enquiries as to their own conceptions of sincerity. We know that, before the War, the German Government had on no occasion to remonstrate with Belgium as to her observance of her duties as a neutral state. We also know that, in the German ultimatum to Belgium, Germany spoke of “the friendly relations which unite the two States.” We know, too, that Herr von Bethmann Hollweg acknowledged (August 4, 1914) that the German invasion was justified by no Belgian offence. Germany, he said, was inflicting a “wrong,” was acting against the “just protests” of Belgium. A few months later, however, (December 2, 1914) the German Chancellor protested in the Reichstag that he had only spoken as he had done in August “for

18 THE MURDERER ASSAILS HIS VICTIM'S CHARACTER

military reasons"! There was a prospect of Belgium coming to terms, he said. As a matter of fact, he declared, the German Government at that time "presumed" the Belgian offence: there were indeed "proofs" of it! But this is not all. On April 6, 1916, Herr von Jagow gave away his chief badly. He said that when the Chancellor spoke on August 4, 1914, "he could not know that Belgium had already compromised herself."! Belgian "culpability" had been "demonstrated since." Herr von Bethwann Hollweg and Herr von Jagow have evidently something to learn from the famous statesman who, on a decision having been taken in a certain matter, said to his fellow Ministers: "Well, is this action going to raise or to lower prices? It does not matter at all which we say, but let us all say the same thing"!

AN ARGUMENT FROM KRUPP'S.—If any further argument be needed against the vileness of the suggestion that Germany's treatment of Belgium was excusable because Belgium had been foolish enough to endanger her neutrality by leaguings herself with England and France against Germany it is to be found in this fact. The Belgian armaments which were manufactured abroad were not of the same type as those used by England and France, but were *made in Germany*! Indeed, there were large outstanding Belgian orders with Krupp's and other German firms when War broke out! As a matter of fact, this difference in the War material of Belgium and of the Powers which responded to her call to them to help her to defend her neutrality when War was declared, was a serious disadvantage to Belgium, attacked as she was during the reorganisation of her army.

A DEFENCE SYSTEM AIMED IN THREE DIRECTIONS.—The truth is that, as all the military world knows, *the Belgian defence system was planned equally against England, France and Germany*. The fortress of Antwerp was supposed to be a defence against England, Namur against France and Liège against Germany. The peace manoeuvres of the Belgian Army were directed in turn against possible invasion by England, by France, and by Germany. Indeed, in the mobilisation of the Belgian army before the War—Belgium by the way did not mobilise until after Holland had done so—the First division faced England, the Fourth and Fifth faced France, and the Third faced Germany. (The Second and Sixth were in reserve). It was not until twenty-four hours after the receipt of the German ultimatum that the position of the Belgian divisions was changed. In other words, *there is the clearest evidence that Belgium was fully prepared, as she had frequently intimated in the*

無辜の虐殺

カイゼルは潜航艇や飛行船の爲に殺されたる罪なき小兒の泣き聲に憐まざる傍にある香爐には「詭辯」と記された



THE MASSACRE OF THE INNOCENTS

The Kaiser hears the wailing of the children drowned by submarines or killed by Zeppelins. The censer is marked "Sophisms."

上空よりのクルツール
ツエッペリン飛行船の襲来



22 KULTUR FROM THE SKY

A Zeppelin has passed.

~~~~~



years before the War, *to fight resolutely against any Power which violated her neutrality.\**

There is confirmation of this fact in the statement made by the Belgian Minister of War on September 30, 1914:

"For long past Great Britain knew that the Belgian army would oppose by force a 'preventive' disembarkation of British troops in Belgium. The Belgian Government did not hesitate at the time of the Agadir crises (vide Character XVI) to warn foreign Ambassadors, in terms which could not be misunderstood, of its firm intention to compel respect for the neutrality of Belgium by every means at its disposal, and against attempts upon it from any and every quarter."

GERMAN THREATS AGAINST BELGIUM.—It must be frankly admitted, however, that had Belgium come to the conclusion that Germany was the neighbour most to be feared, it would have been little wonder. There were few military writers on the subject of a future War between Germany and France who did not openly assume that Germany would probably try to take an advantage over her enemy by attempting to reach her through Belgium.† There were not a few facts on which they might reasonably base their opinion.

In 1912, King Charles of Roumania, who from his family connexions with the Kaiser was well informed, said: "The miracle of 1870 will not be repeated: Belgium runs a great danger of seeing her neutrality violated."

Again, a year before the War, when the King of the Belgians was in Germany, the Emperor had a carefully arranged private conversation with him in the presence of Von Moltke, Chief of the General Staff, the effect of which could not be in doubt. The Emperor exhibited such a depth of feeling against France as to make "a deep impression" on the Belgian monarch when he thought of Belgium's limited power of defending her neutrality.

Further, foreign observers had noted "the construction by Germany of numerous strategic railway lines on the Belgian frontier out of proportion to economical necessities."

---

\* The Belgian Under Secretary for Foreign Affairs expressly stated a few months ago that the Belgian Government possessed careful studies of the problem of how to meet an invasion by any one of her neighbours. Early in 1913 the Belgian Foreign Minister specially called the attention of the Ministry of War to the need of considering "the eventuality of a hostile landing at Ostend etc."

† For example, in a work by a Senator and a Lieut. Colonel published in Paris only a few months before the outbreak of War, the authors definitely concluded: "When the Germans invade France they will pass through Belgium."

## 20 THE MURDERER ASSAILS HIS VICTIM'S CHARACTER

As the *Deutsche Kriege Zeitung* admitted (September 2, 1914):

"The plan for the invasion of France was thoroughly thought out a long time ago; it was necessary for its success that it should take place in the North by way of Belgium."

General Bernhardi, among other German writers, had publicly owned that "the neutrality of Belgium would not stop us; neutrality is only a paper bulwark."

Finally, a secret German Army Report, dated March 1913, which came into the possession of the French Government, stated that "in the next War it will be necessary that the small States shall be forced to follow us or be subdued."

BELGIUM AND SWITZERLAND.—The world was then in some degree, perhaps, prepared for Germany using her overmastering strength to crush Belgium in order to gain time in invading France. But what the world could hardly have been prepared for was this. On the very day on which German troops violated the neutrality of Belgium the German Government expressed to another neutral State, Switzerland, the hope that "with the indomitable will of the entire Swiss people," she would "repel every attempt to violate her neutrality"! But then the German Government entertained the hope that the German forces would be able to divide the French army and destroy a large section of it by driving it up against the Swiss border. Germany also counted on the fact that a third of the population of Switzerland is German-speaking.

WERE THE BELGIANS GERMANOPHOBES?—A suggestion in which some Germans have delighted is that the Belgians opposed the German armies not because of their devotion to their neutrality, but because they were Germanophobes! The fact that in addition to the sixty thousand German residents in Belgium, 20,000 German tourists every year visited the watering places on the Belgian sea coast hardly suggests that the Germans found a strong anti-German feeling in Belgium.

Nor, when the late King of the Belgians, shortly before he died, cried, "Give us young men educated like the Germans," was he evidently addressing Germanophobes. In truth, as a recently published book by an American writer has recorded:

"In no foreign city where Germans dwelt and did business were they treated with such marked hospitality and consideration as in Antwerp. They had been given franchises and concessions and privileges of every description. They had been showered with honours and decorations. They were welcome guests on every occasion; city streets had been named after leading German residents; time and time again at public banquets they had asserted their loyalty to the city which was their home."



GERMAN TREACHERY.—Yet the moment opportunity offered, these exceptionally well-treated foreigners did not scruple to betray their hosts:

"In the cellar of the house of one of the most prominent German residents the police found large stores of ammunition and hundreds of rifles and German uniforms. A German company had been given the contract for wiring the forts defending the city, and when the need arose it was found that the wiring was all but worthless. A wealthy German had an estate the garden of which ran down to the moat of one of the forts. He suggested to the military authorities that if they would permit him to obtain the necessary water from the moat he would build a swimming pool in his garden for the use of the soldiers. What appeared to be a generous offer was accepted; but when the day of action came, it was found that the moat had been drained dry. In the grounds of another country place were discovered concrete emplacements for the use of German field guns."

And what happened in and about Antwerp happened elsewhere in Belgium. The Belgian Minister in Tokyo has stated that in Brussels, on the roof of the house of a German of high rank, there was secret wireless apparatus which was taken down during the day and replaced at night. When Belgian towns were invaded and pillaged it was noticed that the troops were led by Germans who had lived there.

THE CONGO STATE.—An extraordinary argument against the neutrality of Belgium is her annexation of the Congo State in Africa. It is enough to say as to this that the Powers who guaranteed the neutrality of Belgium also recognised the annexation of the Congo State.

BELGIUM'S EFFORTS IN HER DEFENCE.—One German writer has not hesitated to suggest that Belgium has lost her neutrality because her defences were not adequate. The truth is that the Belgian law imposed universal service and that the yearly military budget of a country of 7,000,000 inhabitants was 35,000,000 yen, while an extraordinary military vote for another 35,000,000 yen had been imposed not long before the War. Further, although the German invaders appeared in Belgium within twelve hours of the suddenly launched ultimatum, the Belgian army immediately offered what the Germany authorities at the time acknowledged to be an "*heroic resistance*."

CHARGES WITHOUT EVIDENCE.—But it is an insult to the reader's intelligence to go on gravely citing and refuting these insinuations. *No basis of evidence has ever been forthcoming for them.* And it is to be remembered that they are the insinuations of a country which had not scrupled to break its word and had been compelled to admit itself,



## 22 THE MURDERER ASSAILS HIS VICTIM'S CHARACTER

guilty (*vide* Herr Von Bethmann Hollweg and Herr Von Jagow) against the Public Law and against Belgium.

**BELGIUM'S BEHAVIOUR IN THE CRISIS.**—The loyalty of Belgium to her neutrality was demonstrated at no time more remarkably than when she was exposed to the terrible strain of the day or two preceding War. The Germans came over the frontier on August 4. But as early as *August 1* the Belgian Government, in a circular to the provincial Governors, had ordered them to see to it that all communal authorities should immediately issue orders forbidding all meetings and entertainments of whatever character which could have for their object "the manifestation of antipathy towards one country or the other."

As late as August 3, that is after the expiration of the German ultimatum, the King of the Belgians appealed to the King of Great Britain merely for "the diplomatic intervention of your Majesty" to safeguard the integrity of Belgium.

**WHEN THE INVASION BEGAN.**—Only on the next day, when Belgian territory had actually been invaded and her troops were in action, did Belgium appeal for armed help. A well-informed author (Waxweiler) has written: "I know from an authoritative source that at this moment there was the most poignant anxiety in governing circles in Brussels as to what the reply from London would be."

The historian of the future will undoubtedly find that the suffering of Belgium during the present War has been largely due to her steady and honourable determination not to appeal, before her frontiers were actually crossed, for any assistance which could possibly be interpreted as an infringement of the law of her existence.

**BELGIUM'S FAITHFULNESS.**—The whole facts as to the conduct of Belgium, from the time of the establishment of her neutrality in the thirties until the German invasion, bear out every statement in the moving and courageous reply which she made to what her Foreign Minister called "the amazing proposal" of Germany to consent to the violation of her neutrality:

"Belgium has always been faithful to her international obligations. She has carried out her duties in a spirit of loyal impartiality and she has left nothing undone to maintain and enforce respect for her neutrality. The Belgian Government, if they were to accept the proposals submitted to them would sacrifice the honour of the nation and betray their duty towards Europe."

**AN AMERICAN PARALLEL.**—After all that has been said about the offence of Germany in violating the neutrality of Belgium we have still

to remember one fact. Even if there had been no German guarantee of Belgian neutrality, Germany had no right whatever to attack Belgium, let alone to commit acts of barbarism against a people against whom she had no conceivable grievance. As has been pointed out by an American writer, Germany might as well have claimed the right to invade Canada by way of the United States.

Germany can urge only one excuse for invading Belgium. It is the utterly callous and incriminating excuse that the German General Staff preferred to fight France in France rather than in Germany. They thought that by "hacking their way through" Belgium, (Herr von Bethmann Hollweg's words) they could secure a battle ground favourable to Germany.

THE CHARGES DISPOSED OF.—Of every one of the allegations against Belgium which were launched after the invasion it may be believed with the utmost confidence:

First, that not one of them has ever been substantiated, and

Second, that they were most manifestly after-thoughts. Germany found that it was urgently necessary that she should do her best to justify her astounding conduct to the world. Germany also saw that it was necessary for her to prepare betimes a case for that permanent annexation of Belgium which for a year past we have seen urged by German statesmen and publicists as imperative. It is true that of late, as the Allies have secured military and naval successes, the plea for annexation seems to have grown weaker on the part of German statesmen. But the pages of the newspapers of 1914 and 1915 contain the evidence that those views as to the necessity of absorbing Belgium were advanced with confidence when it was thought that the Central Powers were carrying all before them.

IF BELGIUM HAD YIELDED.—As to the slanders on the Belgians which are chronicled in this Chapter the impartial reader will be inclined to ask himself one question. Suppose Belgium had yielded to the proposal that the German troops should be allowed to pass through Belgium, what would have been Germany's attitude to Belgian neutrality? There cannot be much doubt. German statesmen and publicists would very soon have been saying: "Belgium has herself abolished her neutrality by permitting the German troops to occupy Belgian forts. Had she been able to maintain her neutrality she would have been able to oppose the German troops. Therefore it is justifiable to abolish Belgian neutrality and annex the country to Germany."

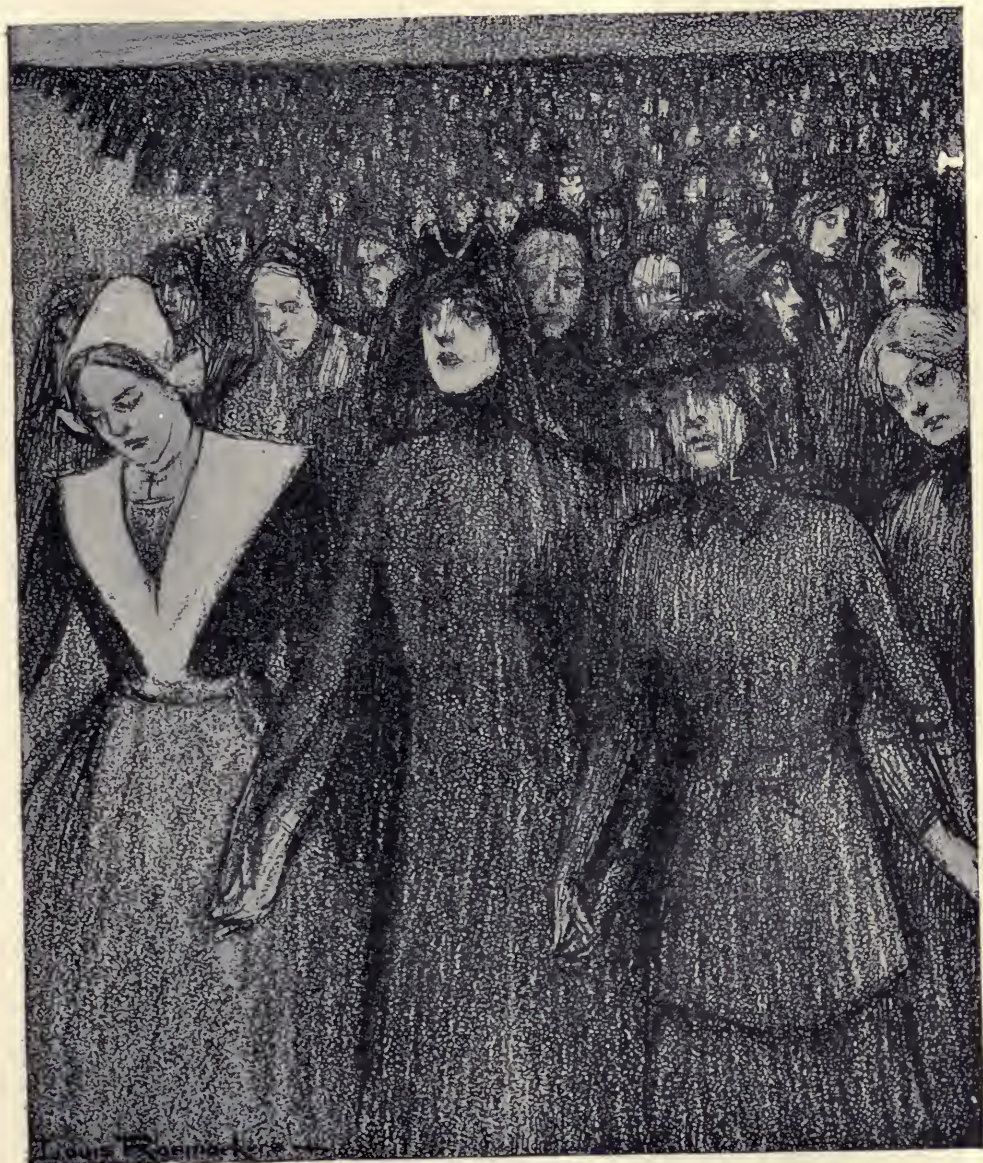
## 24 THE MURDERER ASSAILS HIS VICTIM'S CHARACTER

"The world is now in a position to judge," as a Belgian statesman has written,

"whether, when the supreme test came, the hopes that it had based on Belgium in guaranteeing her neutrality, were realised. The Belgians, in their turn, are able to say whether the gift of neutrality has been, when all is said, a benefit to them."

It must be borne in mind that, as the first King of the Belgians once wrote to Queen Victoria, the Belgians had not in 1831 desired to be a neutral State. Neutrality was imposed on them by the Powers.





THE MOTHERS OF BELGIUM





THE WIDOWS OF BELGIUM

## CHAPTER VII

# MILITARY ACHIEVEMENT OF BELGIUM IN THE WAR

### THE SACRIFICES OF BELGIAN LIFE

BELGIUM REJECTS THE GERMAN PROPOSALS A SECOND TIME.—On the fall of Liège—"to a very superior force after a brave defence" in the words of a German dispatch—Germany again renewed her offensive proposals to Belgium, and Belgium again promptly rejected them.

## AUX HABITANTS DU PAYS DE LIEGE

La grande Allemagne envahit notre territoire après un ultimatum qui constitue un outrage.

La petite Belgique a relevé fièrement le gant.  
L'armée va faire son devoir !

La population du pays de Liège accomplira le sien !  
Aussi ne cessera-t-elle de donner l'exemple du calme et du respect aux lois.

Son ardent patriotisme en répond.

Vive le Roi, commandant en chef de l'armée !

Vive la Belgique !

Le Lieutenant-Général  
Général-Militaire de Liège  
**LEMAN.**

Liège le 4 Août 1914

Lyon - Roubaix LA 10070

AUSTRIA-HUNGARY DECLARES WAR.—On August 29, Austria-Hungary formally declared War on Belgium. It has already been shown that Austria-Hungary had pledged herself equally with Germany to maintain Belgian neutrality. The Belgian Government, in acknowledging the declaration of War, said bravely that Belgium "has been unable to admit that a people, however weak they may be, can fail in their duty and sacrifice their honour by yielding to force."

2.—Patriotic Proclamation of the Belgian General at Liège on the German Invasion

二一獨軍侵入の際リエージュに於ける白耳義國  
將軍の愛國的宣言

what may be called the mentality of the Central Powers, that this declaration of War by another guarantor of the neutrality of Belgium



was not made until a week after *Austro-Hungarian* guns, manned by *Austro-Hungarian* soldiers, as several photographs clearly show, had blown the forts of *Namur* to pieces. Belgium did not of course learn until much later that the heavy artillery opposed to her was *Austro-Hungarian* and was worked by *Austro-Hungarian* troops.

THE STAND MADE BY THE BELGIAN TROOPS.—The heroic defence of *Liège* against *Austro-Hungarian* mortars of a power hitherto unsuspected and against enormous masses of German troops can never be forgotten. The Belgian General was only taken prisoner when four fifths of his men had been buried in the crumbled masonry and he was himself unconscious.

For sixteen days (August 4—August 20) the immensely outnumbered Belgian troops—the whole Belgian army consisted only of 125,000 men\*—held the forces of the enemy sufficiently in check to upset completely his plans for a quick movement on France. French and British troops were given time to arrive. The Belgians, by clever management during this period, saved themselves from being enveloped and destroyed. During the long period between August 20 and October 6 the Belgians harassed the rear of the German armies, threatened their communications, and detached large bodies of German troops from the German advance on Paris. From October 6 onwards the Belgians have held their section of the long line across Flanders and France occupied at other points by the British and the French. One of the many gallant actions of the Belgians took place on the *Yser*. The Allies asked them to hold a position for forty-eight hours. Though it was ten days before help came the Belgians had not yielded a foot of ground. It is believed that during the War the losses of the Belgians have been at least 100,000 men.

PRESENT POSITION OF THE BELGIAN ARMY.—In spite of all the determined efforts of the German Army, some 800 square kilometres of Belgium still remain in possession of the Belgian troops and they are defending a line some 35 kilometres in length. Decimated in 1914, the Belgian Army still presents six divisions to the foe. It possesses at present heavy artillery which it did not have in 1914 and many more machine-guns. It has also now hand-grenades. It has even a new grenade with repeated explosion, invented by a Belgian officer, which

---

\* The year before the War a law had been passed greatly to increase the Belgian Army, but the reorganisation had not been completed before the German invasion.

has wrought terrible havoc in the German ranks. Its flying service and cavalry have been developed as well as its auto-cannon. Aircraft and auto-cannon, entirely managed by Belgian officers and soldiers, have been sent, at the request of the Russian General Staff, to Russia where they are now taking part in the operations. So are 40 squadrons of Belgian armored cars, each mounting 2 or 3 machine-guns and one cannon, more useful in the great plains of Poland and Galicia than on the Yser.



3.—Japanese Sword Presented  
to King Albert

三—アルボルト皇帝に  
送れる日本刀

**BELGIAN RECRUITS FROM BELGIUM.**  
—It is well known that in order to prevent the exodus of Belgians of military age, and also to prevent the flight of their own deserters, the Germans have on the Belgian-Dutch frontier a net-work of electrified barbed wire. Besides, sentinels and patrols survey the frontier closely and have strict orders to fire on anyone trying to cross it. In spite of these measures 20,000 young Belgians have, at the risk of their lives, succeeded in leaving Belgium to join King Albert's troops in France. Among the numerous Belgians living or in refuge abroad many thousands of recruits have also been found. Besides this army of combatants there is another, the army of munition and equipment workers. It is entirely made up of comparatively old men.

**THE NEW GUARANTEE WHICH THE ALLIED POWERS HAVE GIVEN BELGIUM.**—By the hospitality of France the Belgian Government has its administrative offices at Havre. The King of the Belgians was offered by the French Government a fine house there. His Majesty preferred, however, to

occupy a modest villa near his troops. King Albert, I am informed, has never quitted Belgian soil since the outbreak of the War. His Majesty, the Belgian Government and the Belgian Army are encouraged by the guarantee given them by all the Allies, including Japan, that the Allies "*will not end hostilities until Belgium has been restored to*

*her political and economic independence and liberally indemnified for the damage she has sustained."*

**KING ALBERT'S JAPANESE SWORD.**—The King of the Belgians has with him the Japanese sword presented to him by Mr. Sugimura on behalf of the proprietor of the Tokyo "Asahi." This fine weapon, made by Nakagawa Shichiroyemon-no-jo Yukitane in 1577, bears the inscription: "A humble testimony to the profound reverence and pious feelings with which the Japanese have been inspired by your Majesty's untiring perseverance and by the unexampled patriotism of the Belgian people, manifested in defence of humanity and civilisation under the direst calamity that can befall a nation."



## CHAPTER VIII

### WHAT HAPPENED IN BELGIUM

#### APPALLING OUTRAGES AGGRAVATED BY SLANDER

AN UNCIVILISED ENEMY.—At the time when the Belgians bravely decided to resist the German invasion it happened that Count della Faille de Laveghem, the Belgian Minister in Tokyo, was in Brussels. He writes of the feelings of responsible Belgians at the thought of the oncoming of the immense German force which was to invade their country:

“ We knew that the first shock of this fearsome force would be terrific on a little country almost without natural defences (Belgium is mostly a flat country). We knew that we were going to undergo great suffering. But we thought that we had to do with a civilised enemy. Our surprise was great when, from the very beginning of the campaign, we saw that we had to fight a band of brigands who recoiled before no crime. Had we foreseen this we should have put in some safe place the women, girls, children and old people, and things of value, as was subsequently done in the Western part of the country that was invaded later.”

HOW THE FACTS HAVE BEEN ESTABLISHED.—There can be no question whatever as to the way in which the Germans behaved in Belgium. The facts are established beyond all reasonable doubt in no fewer than *twenty-two* Reports of the Investigations made by the Belgian Commission, composed of judges, jurists and other men of balanced judgment and experience of the value of evidence,\* and in the Reports of the similarly constituted French and British Commissions of Inquiry. These Reports have been published in French and English, and can be obtained by anyone.

It may be asked, perhaps, why no one thought of instituting a neutral Inquiry or an Inquiry on which neutrals and Germans were represented. The answer is:

1. That the Belgian Government was ready to have an Inquiry made by a Commission of Belgians, Germans and neutrals. This suggestion was declined by Germany,

---

\* It began work as early as August 7, 1914.

2. That the Belgian Clergy approached the German clergy, the Belgian Socialists approached the German Socialists, and the Belgian members of the world-wide social and philanthropic society of Freemasons approached the German Freemasons with a view to a joint Clerical, a joint Socialist or a joint Masonic investigation. In each case the proposal was rejected.

3. That a proposal of the Dutch Socialists that they should conduct an Inquiry with the German Socialists was also declined.

4. That, in all, as many as *eight* proposals of this sort for inquiry, including two Dutch proposals, were declined.

5. That the Belgian Government has announced that, as soon as it is once more in possession of the territory of Belgium, it will form an International Commission of Inquiry.

Such an International Commission of Inquiry has been demanded in a manifesto of sympathy with the Belgians signed by four hundred Spaniards. This manifesto from Spain has much incensed the Kaiser. According to an "Asahi" cablegram, he "has informed certain Spanish nobles who possess estates in Belgium that unless they withdrew their signatures, *the roughest soldiers of the German army* would be billeted at their mansions, with orders to burn and destroy the furniture."

These facts are not without their significance to the impartial reader.

THE GERMAN EXCUSES.—A book thrice the size of this book might easily be filled with nothing else than the incidents of horror recorded in the Belgian, French and British Reports. It will be the painful duty of my readers to examine *a small selection* of these incidents. But before they do this it is well to set down the excuses which the Germans have seen fit to make by way of attempting to palliate their brutalities.

These excuses are contained in German newspapers and in a German official publication of 300 pages. They are crushingly answered in a Belgian official work of 500 pages full of administrative papers, evidence of all sorts, statistics, hitherto unpublished documents and declarations by the Belgian Ministers of Justice and Foreign Affairs, which was issued a few months ago.

It is not without significance that a special edition of the German publication was prepared for Belgium, which omitted all the 200 depositions appearing in the original! In the same way the version for Belgian use of the German answer to Sir Edward Grey's speech of

March last year omitted the charge of Belgian cruelty to the German wounded which figured so prominently in the full text!

THE CHARGE AGAINST THE CIVIL GUARD.—One German allegation is that the Belgian Government organised the non-military population against the German army. This is absolutely untrue. It is also alleged that the German troops were opposed by companies of *francs tireurs*. No evidence has ever been forthcoming as to the existence of these bodies of "free fighters" or guerillas. It is probable that in some cases the Germans mistook for such unauthorised combatants the

members of a well known Belgian institution—it dates from 1830—called the Civil Guard. The Germans had no excuse, however, for not knowing about these reserves at the disposal of the Belgian Government, for four days after the invasion of Belgium the Belgian Government very correctly announced to the German Government the calling up of the Civil Guard.

THE LAW OF THE CASE.—But there was no necessity for the Belgian Government to restrict itself even to the Civil Guard. The great German work on international law already quoted\* explicitly says: "There exists no ground for denying to the masses of a country the

national right to defend their fatherland; it is only by such measures that the smaller and less powerful States can defend themselves." The same volume contends that it would even be within a State's right to

**Gouvernement Provincial de Namur**

**Avis très important**

Le Gouverneur civil attire la très sérieuse attention des habitants de la province sur le très grave danger qui pourrait résulter pour les civils de se servir d'armes contre l'ennemi. Ils doivent, à cet égard, observer, comme il convient du reste, l'abstention la plus complète. C'est à la force publique seule qu'il appartient de défendre le territoire.

Toute inobservation de cette recommandation serait de nature à provoquer, le cas échéant, des représailles, des incendies, etc.

Namur, le 7 août 1914

**Baron de Montpellier.**

Vu et approuve :

Namur, le 7 août 1914

Le Gouverneur militaire.

**MICHEL.**

Imprimerie de Namur, 1, rue des Minimes, 1110 Namur, Belgique 1914

4.—Proclamation of Civil and Military Governors  
Warning People against taking up Arms

四一住民の暴兵を戒むる民政軍政  
兩長官の宣言書

\* "Handbuch des Völkerrechts."



call up women. Again, Article 3 of the Hague Law says, "The armed forces of the contending parties may be composed of combatants and non-combatants. Both have the right to be treated as prisoners of war."

THE GOVERNMENT'S SECOND CIRCULAR TO THE PROVINCES.—Had the Belgian Government wished to employ any non-combatant force contrary to the rules of War, it would have acted very differently from what it did. I have already quoted the warning circular of August 1.\* As early as August 4, the day on which the Germans first crossed the Belgian frontier, the Belgian Government issued a second circular to the 2,700 Communes of Belgium, the system of communication with which is very speedy. This circular warned the people that

"according to the laws of War, resistance to or attack on the enemy, the use of weapons against isolated soldiers, or direct intervention in combats and skirmishes is never permitted to men not in (1) the Regular Army, (2) the Civil Guard, or (3) bodies of Volunteers observing military law subject to a responsible officer and wearing a distinctive badge. If the population of a region not yet occupied by the enemy takes arms spontaneously at the approach of the invader but has not time to organise itself in military fashion it will be considered belligerent if it openly carries arms and observes the laws of War. But isolated individuals would not be considered belligerents. If captured they might be put to death. Acts forbidden are the use of poison or poisoned weapons, killing or wounding by treachery, military or civil persons, and killing or wounding enemies who have laid down their arms."

HOME OFFICE ACTION.—Further than this, from the same date, every Belgian newspaper published *every day in heavy type, on its front page*, a remarkable notice by the Minister for Home Affairs.

"In the event of the enemy appearing," the Minister urged that "civilians should not fight, should not use insulting or threatening words, should remain within their houses and close the windows so that it will be impossible to allege that there was any provocation, and should evacuate any houses or hamlets which the troops may occupy in order to defend themselves so that it cannot be alleged that civilians had fired."

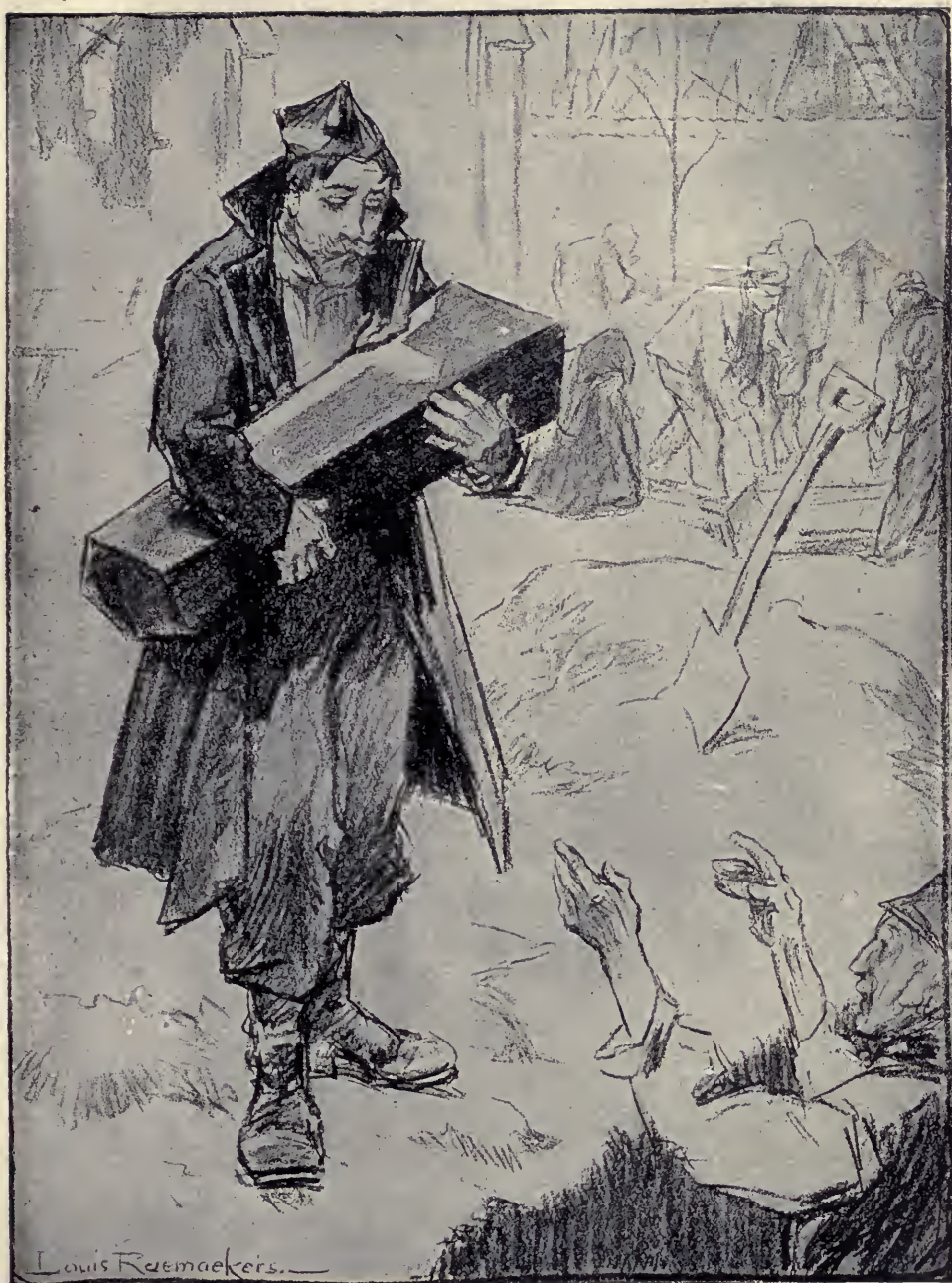
The notice concluded by laying stress on the gravity of the consequences likely to follow from "a criminal act of violence committed by a single civilian."

OFFICIAL WARNINGS ABOUT GUNS.—In addition to these steps, supplementary notices were issued by the local authorities warning the people not to use any guns or revolvers they might happen to possess. They were ordered to deposit them at once at the mayoralties, where they would be kept until the conclusion of the War. With this object

---

\* page 22.

白耳義の負傷兵其死兒を葬る  
「極めて幼稚なる小兒が殺戮せられたる實例少からず」英國調査委員報告書の一節、第七十八頁參照



#### A WOUNDED BELGIAN SOLDIER BURYING HIS CHILD

“We find many well authenticated cases of the killing of quite young children.”—  
*Report of the British Commission of Inquiry. See page 57.*



エイヤシヨット殉難者の死體發掘

殉難者の數百五十五人中七人は婦人なりき、第七十頁參照



# EXHUMATION OF THE MARTYRS OF AERSCHOT

The number was no fewer than 155, of whom 7 were women. See page 51.



these were marked with the owners' names as they were handed in. I have before me specimens of notices issued at Liège (August 5), Namur (August 7) and Fleurus (August 14). I reproduce the Fleurus bill.

A FRANK ADMISSION.—I have no hesitation at all in making a frank admission. Knowing as I do the sturdiness and resolution of the Belgian peasant, it is not at all unlikely that a certain number of ignorant men, appalled by the incredible outrage committed on them by the invasion of the German troops, without an atom of justification, and by the utter ruin which the laying waste of their homes and fields had

brought about, may, in isolated cases, have made attacks on the invaders. No Japanese would expect anything else to happen were Japan invaded. But I must add that I have not yet, after a great deal of reading, come across a single convincing report of such assaults on the Germans.

A DOCTOR'S TESTIMONY.—A valuable because dispassionate piece of writing on the subject of *francs tireurs* is that prepared by a Belgian medical man of eminence who has been staying in England with Lord Halifax. He was in the best position to be well informed because, from August to November 1914, he was working with the German and Belgian wounded and

# AVIS

---

Tous détenteurs d'armes à feu (fusils, carabines, révolvers), particuliers et négociants, sont tenus obligatoirement d'en faire remise à l'Hôtel de Ville, au plus tard Lundi 17 courant, de 10 heures à midi.

Les armes déposées devront porter l'adresse du propriétaire. Il sera délivré récépissé du dépôt.

Le Ministre de l'Intérieur recommande aux civils, si l'ennemi se montre dans leur région:

De ne pas combattre;

De ne proférer ni injures, ni menaces;

De se tenir à l'intérieur et de fermer les fenêtres afin qu'on ne puisse dire qu'il y a eu provocation;

Si les soldats occupent, pour se défendre, une maison ou un hameau isolé, de l'évacuer, afin qu'on ne puisse dire que les civils ont tiré;

L'aide de violence commis par un seul civil serait un véritable crime que la loi punit d'arrestation et condamne, car il pourrait servir de prétexte à une répression sanglante, au pillage et au massacre de la population innocente, des femmes et des enfants.

Fleurus, le 14 Août 1914.

Le Bourgmestre,  
**D. EVERAERTS.**

Fleurus, Imp. Lucien Hacquet-Watieu

5.—Proclamation of a Burgomaster directing those who possess guns to surrender them.

五一銃器所持者之を差出すべしとの  
知事の宣言

was constantly in conversation with them and with the Belgian population. He is positive that respect was paid by the people to the orders of

the Government, the Governors, the communal authorities and the clergy to avoid unauthorised participation in the fighting:

"The bands of francs-tireurs have never existed. It is possible, of course, that, in an isolated case or two, some ardent patriot may have discharged a revolver against the German troops. I have been told of a case in which a young man killed a German soldier because he attempted to offer violence to his sister.

"But, admitting such a possibility, the German newspapers, which I read daily with avidity, down to November, 1914, never offered serious and incontestable proof of a single occurrence of this nature."

THE NERVOUSNESS OF THE GERMAN TROOPS.—One thing is perfectly plain, however, from the German soldiers' letters and other evidence and that is that the Germans anticipated that there might be cases in which a population, as brave and patriotic as the Belgian, might endeavour to resist for themselves an unparalleled aggression. It is quite clear that the Germans had forebodings as to the bitter rage which they were likely to excite among the rural folk. There is reason to believe that the German officers were nervous, and that by their warnings to their men even before they crossed the frontier, they made them nervous also. The troops were in constant expectation of being attacked and their instructions were to take instant reprisals when they considered they had justification.

TWO TYPICAL INCIDENTS.—Here is a typical case, reported in Waxweiler's work, which is to be found in several Tokyo libraries:

"A German train nearing Jurbice, exploded a detonator used for signalling purposes on the line. The soldiers in the train immediately concluded that an attack had been made by franc tireurs. They seized some peasants who were working near and shot them on the spot. When at last they were made to understand the cause of the explosion, they expressed regret and continued on their journey."

Again, the diary of a German officer of the 178th Regiment of the Twelfth Army Corps records that,

"On August 26 the admirable village of Gue d'Hossus was burnt, though it appeared to me to be quite innocent. It is said that a German cyclist fell from his machine and that in his fall his rifle went off. Thereupon the male inhabitants were simply thrown into the flames. Let us hope that such horrors will not occur again."

It will be agreed, I think, before the reader has made himself acquainted with many more facts like these, that if the Germans did not find any *francs tireurs* when they entered Belgium they did their best to call them into existence.

GUERRILLA WARFARE AND ITS MORAL EFFECT.—Sometimes when the Germans were fired upon, the shots came, not from the non-com-



batant inhabitants but from Belgian Cyclist Scouts or small companies of Belgian troops. For this reason. One way in which the Belgian Army tried to make up for its small numbers was to develop a plan of harassing the invaders by the attacks of small companies of troops. It was some time before the Germans discovered this ruse. A few Belgian soldiers, with the spirit and initiative characteristic of their race, often took up their positions in unexpected places and were usually able to fire their shots and then get away unnoticed by the bypaths which are such a feature of the Belgian rural districts.

Later on, the French troops also showed great skill and courage in maintaining this sort of warfare, which was found to be most demoralising to an enemy passing, with an uneasy conscience, through an unknown country. Indeed, before the German troops had been long in Belgium, many of them seem to have been all nerves. The Belgian doctor, before mentioned, may again be quoted ;

"There is no more dangerous being in the world than a frightened man with a rifle and bayonet. A big Rhinelander confided to me with a laugh, that at the time of his departure for Belgium his friends advised him to take a table-knife. "I was blue with fright at having to come into Belgium," he confessed ; "our newspapers had filled us with such horrors about you."

**DRUNKENNESS AND MASSACRE.**—There is ample evidence from neutral war correspondents and others as to the remarkable degree to which the invading army availed itself of its opportunities to drink freely of the wines and other liquors in the captured villages. This evidence is supplemented indeed by the admissions in the letters written to relatives, found on the bodies of dead German soldiers. It is beyond question that very often the isolated shots which the German troops made the excuse for their abominable outrages came, if not from scouting Belgian or French soldiers, from drunken German troops whose rifles had been fired either accidentally or in bravado.

Again and again, as the Belgian Minister in Tokyo says, with personal knowledge of the facts, the local authorities, when reprisals were threatened, asked that the bullet in the body of the German soldier who was supposed to have been killed by a Belgian's shot gun or revolver, should be extracted and verified before the village was condemned to be burnt. "But the officers obstinately refused all justice."

**A REMARKABLE GERMAN CONFESSION.**—There was a case, however, where a German commander acted otherwise : "Last night a volley was fired," writes Major Von Bassewitz in a notice issued at Huy near Liège on August 24, 1914 :



"There is no proof that the population took part in the firing. On the contrary, from all appearances, the soldiers were under the influence of alcohol and opened fire in an incomprehensible fear from attack from the enemy.

"With few exceptions the behaviour of the soldiers during the night made a shameful impression.

"When officers or non-commissioned officers burn houses without permission or without an order from the Commander, or they encourage the troops to plunder it is an extremely regrettable thing.

"I expect instructions to be given about the attitude towards the life and property of the civil population. I forbid anyone to fire in the town without orders from an officers.

"The sad behaviour of the troops has resulted in a non-commissioned officer and a soldier being seriously wounded by German ammunition."

THE APPALLING SCENES AT DINANT.—At Dinant, the Germans manifestly took the work of the French sharpshooters for the attacks of civilians. It is true that three German privates declared several months after that they had seen men firing in their shirt sleeves from windows, as if, in any case, soldiers firing from the interior of houses in mid-August, might not prefer to be in their shirt sleeves. But this, and the evidence of some machine guns and barbed wire which the French troops has left behind, is all the justification which the Germans have been able to adduce for committing one of their most appalling atrocities, the execution of *one-tenth of the population* in cold blood. "Among the victims," says the Belgian Minister, "were more than sixty women, some of whom were more than 75 years old, thirty seven youths less than 16, and ten children under 5; seventeen families were entirely wiped out."

THE EVIDENCE OF NEUTRALS.—The atrocities committed at Louvain, Andenne, Aerschot and other places, the appalling details of which will be summarised later, are justified by the Germans on the flimsy evidence of military men concerned in excusing themselves. Their declarations are, as the Belgian Minister points out, "in flat contradiction with the absolutely exact assertions of hundreds of people, among them many persons of neutral countries, who have given evidence before the Belgian and British Commissions of Inquiry." As to neutrals, by the way, the German Government, anxious to stand well with Spain, paid a heavy indemnity for the five Spaniards shot without reason at Liège along with other inhabitants of that town.

"SOME ONE HAS FIRED."—"All those who sojourned in Belgium during the invasion well know," writes the Belgian doctor who had so

many opportunities of conversing with German wounded, "how German rifles went off of themselves day and night—but chiefly by night."

## Paroisse de Saint-Hadelin (Olne)



Les Membres du Conseil de Fabrique, les Chefs des Confréries de la Sainte-Vierge et de Sainte-Barbe vous prient de bien vouloir assister au **Service solennel** qui sera célébré en l'église de Saint-Hadelin, **Lundi 9 Novembre, à 10 heures et demie**, pour le repos des âmes des membres de Confrérie dont les noms suivent :

P. J. Hougrand, décédé à Micheroux, le 22 Février, membre de la Confrérie de la Sainte-Vierge.

Elisabeth Franquet, décédée à Verviers, le 9 Juillet, membre des deux Confréries

Ainsi que pour les victimes du massacre des 5 et 6 Août en cette paroisse :

Jean Naval, Georges Delrez, veuve Desonay, Joséphine Desonay, Victor Warnier père, Victor Warnier fils, Nelly Warnier, Edgard Warnier, de Saint-Hadelin.

Jean Matz, André Grahay et Paul Bailly de Forêt.

Tous tués le 5 Août sur le Fawn

Jean Willot, Laurent Gillet, Jacques Rahier, Denis Naval, Jean Naval, Jacques Maguel, Henri Maguel, Pierre Dewandre, Julien Dewandre, Henri Dewandre, Joseph Delsaute, Louis Germy, Guillaume Leclercq, Jean Legrand, Noël Grand'ry, Joseph Grand'ry, Léonard Grand'ry, Augustin Sequaris, Pierre Delhier, Paul Delhier, Léonard Lsmarche, Félieten Boeur, Alphonse Boeur, Vicor Hubert, Henri Hubert, Joseph Tixhon, Edouard Daeneu, Gilles Hautvast, Gaspard Hautvast, Jacques Hautvast, Joseph Hautvast, de Saint-Hadelin

Victor Polet, Jean Backer et Fernand Maguel, d'Ayeneux

Joseph Strauven, de Charneux : Joseph Delhalle, de Robermont.

Toussaint Hansez, Victor Hansez, Toussaint Hansez, Laurent François et Jules Saive, de Bouny.

Tous tués à Riessonsart le 6 Août.

Albert Schweiz, Betty Schweiz, Wilhelm Hasenklever, Blaise Graner, Antoine Daelhem de Saint-Hadelin.

Hubert Blum et Mathieu Klein, de Fléron.

Tous tués dans les Heids d'Olne le 6 Août

Dents Naval-Rogister, de Magnée, tué dans les Heids d'Ayeneux le 6 Août, et Mathieu Clossel, de Saint-Hadelin, tué à Bouny le 6 Août.

**Priez Dieu pour le repos de leurs âmes.**

Doux Cœur de Marie, soyez mon refuge.

Notre-Dame de Lourdes, priez pour nous.

Saint Joseph, patron de la Belgique, priez pour nous

Saint Hadelin, patron de la paroisse, priez pour nous

Sainte Barbe, patronne de la bonne mort, priez pour nous

6.—Invitation to attend a Mass near Liège for the Souls of 61 massacred persons, four of whom were women.

パーリエジエ附近に於て虐殺されたる六十一名(内婦人四名)  
の爲めに舉行されたる追悼會の招待狀

"Drunken soldiers—and drunkenness is a trivial offence in the Teuton Army—trembled when a leaf was shaken by the wind, and discovered the shadowy forms of francs-tireurs at every turn of the road.



"Warriors greedy of loot, of whom there were no lack, knowing that a rifle-shot in the night was the signal and the justification for pillage, had no patience to wait until some franc-tireur should give the hoped-for signal, but gave it themselves at the convenient moment. Then the soldiery spread themselves about the streets shouting, "Man hat geschossen" (Someone has fired). A furious fusillade broke out, the town was set on fire, the inhabitants were massacred and their houses plundered.

"In German reports, and especially in those which were verbal, the dominant idea is, that the German losses in Belgium were entirely due to francs-tireurs. Heaven help the neighbourhood in which a German corpse was found by a passing regiment! In the presence of a German soldier killed in a hostile country, the only natural and logical presumption would be that he had been killed by a hostile soldier. But the Germans appear to have accepted the hypothesis of assassination with the utmost readiness. A Saxon soldier told me that a German officer who had been seen to enter an hotel, disappeared and left no trace behind him. Obviously he had been murdered, and the guilty civilians had to be severely punished! That, he added, was why the curé of Arlon and a hundred of the inhabitants had been shot.

STILL NO EVIDENCE.—The Bishop of Namur, the situation of whose diocese enables him to be particularly well informed on the subject, "solemnly challenges the German Army to prove the existence of a single group of *francs tireurs*." This distinguished ecclesiastic declares that not one case of "a civilian having fired on troops has been known." A well known inhabitant of Luxemburg has pointed out that, "although the Germans had, on the pretext of *francs tireurs*, massacred thousands of men, women and children, they have never been able to give the name of a single Belgian civilian taken in the act of firing on German troops."

THE BURST BICYCLE TYRE.—As the Twelfth Report of the Belgian Commission of Inquiry says, it is not necessary to assume that the Germans who organised the so-called reprisals were acting in bad faith.

"The Germans so often repeated that the civil population was intending to rise and assassinate them that they ended by believing it. When away from the fighting line the least noise made them jumpy. The bursting of a bicycle tyre, a fog signal under a train, (as at Jurdise), the explosion of a gas motor (as at Alost), the flaring up of chemicals in a laboratory that had been fired, (as at Louvain), provoked the inevitable cry of 'Man hat geschossen' with its sinister consequences. At Sicaert the equipment of an archery club was confiscated on the pretext that the arrows might be poisoned and be used against the troops! Can it be considered surprising that when the soldiers were in this state of mind suspecting an ambush in every corner, they sometimes fired on each other and even on their own officers, as at Louvain, Aerschot, Visé, Andenne, etc.?

A TERRIBLE CASE.—As to some allegations, as stupid as base, of German soldiers being mutilated, the curious case from the village of



Hallen may be mentioned, At this place bodies of German soldiers were found with some fingers cut off. Some time afterwards, Professor Grondijs, a Dutchman, stated in his book, "The Germans in Belgium" that a German officer of the name of Stein had been obliged to shoot a German soldier in whose knapsack had been found fingers with rings on them! The man confessed that he had cut them from German corpses. In the vicinity a village had been burnt and some of the inhabitants shot because corpses of German soldiers had been found with their fingers cut off!

A GERMAN EXPOSURE OF A SLANDER.—When the War had proceeded eight months a self-respecting German, Professor Rautenberg, was at the trouble to try to trace down a whole series of German newspaper statements making the filthy charge that the eyes of German soldiers had been put out on many occasions by *francs tireurs*. He reported that in no single case did he discover any truth whatever in the stories.

THE MURDER OF PRIESTS AND GERMAN ADMISSIONS.—One of the most disgraceful German actions in connexion with the outrages in Belgium is the repetition in the official White Book of May 1915 of the charges that Belgian priests had incited attacks on German troops. Five months before this date the German Government itself had acknowledged these charges to be untrue. Before this even, an honest writer in the German Review, *Der Fels*, called Müller, had owned that "no instance has been proved" of priests firing or allowing firing from their churches. He calls the stories "false and imaginary without exception." Yet the Germans have demolished churches to an extent unprecedented in any previous warfare and have shot priests in incredible numbers. For example, in the programme of a single service for the souls of priests shot in Belgium, which was held in Rome, a copy of which is before me, the names of more than forty priests are given. Cardinal Mercier reports that thirteen priests of religious orders were shot in his diocese alone. The German treatment of priests was such, indeed, as to move the *Austrian* Archbishop of Vienna to investigate. The report of his Inquiry stated that:

"The German Army killed about 50 priests, although no act contrary to the law of nations has been proved to have been committed by any priest.

"It treated disgracefully many hundred members of religious orders, and it treated some in a truly bestial manner, morally as well as physically."

THE GERMAN AIM.—The Belgian medical man already quoted in

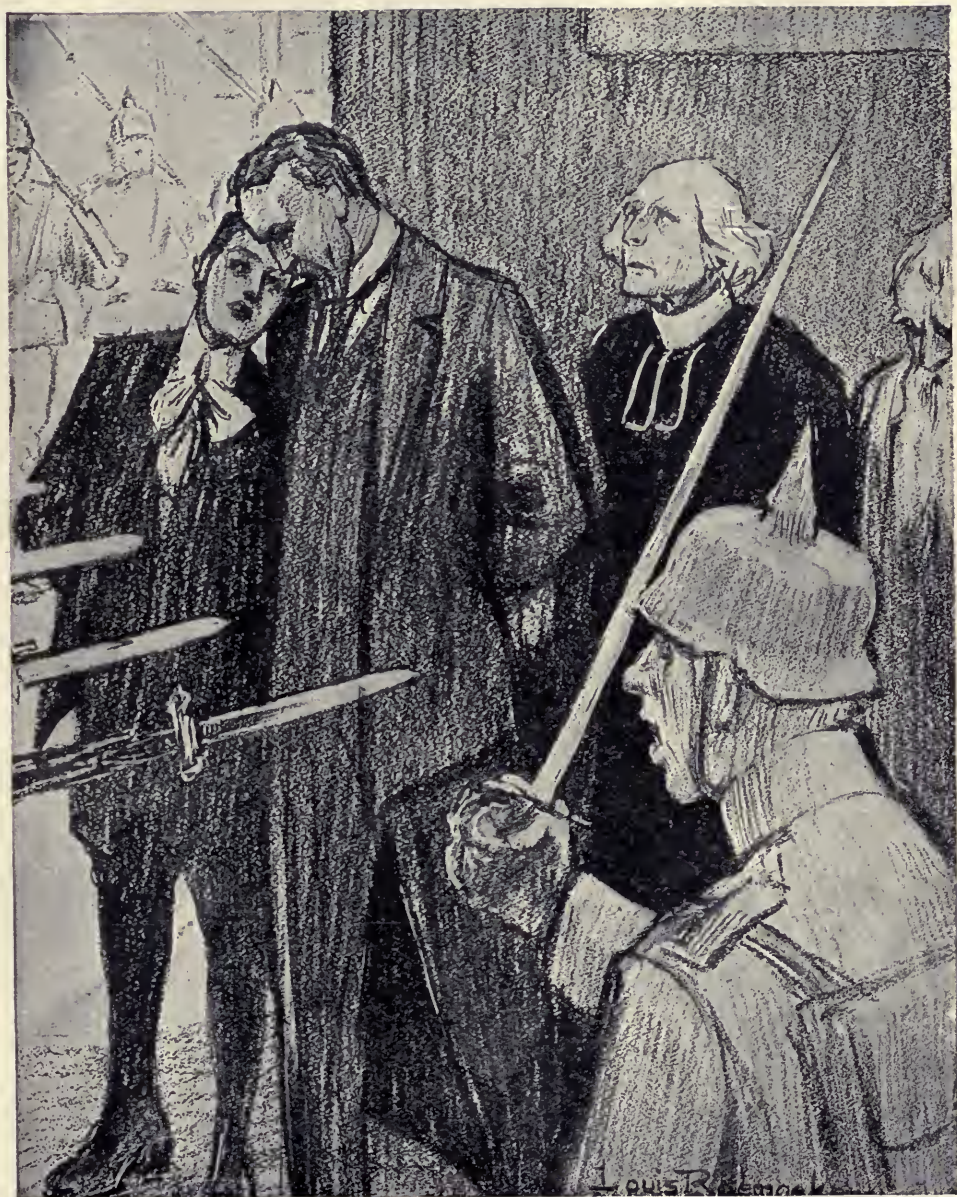
this Chapter concludes his investigations of German stories of *francs tireurs*, wicked priests and so forth with the verdict that they were not founded on fact. But what, he asks, was the aim of those who were responsible for encouraging these stories? The aim, he declares, was to justify a harsh military policy in Belgium. "It was necessary to terrorise the population, to dishearten the Belgian Army, to prevent a possible insurrection, and to hold the conquered territory with a minimum of force."

The impartial reader of the remaining Chapters of this book will be able to form his own conclusion as to whether this terrible statement is well founded.

But even before he has gone any farther the impartial reader who has made his way through all the baseless charges which Germany, in her campaign of calumny has brought against the people she has so greatly wronged, must sympathise warmly with the declaration by the Belgian Ministers of Justice and of Foreign Affairs that "*he is twice guilty who, after having violated others' rights, attempts to justify himself by accusing his victims of crimes they never committed.*"



白耳義に於ける無辜の人質を銃殺す  
毫も自己の過失なき無辜の人質は獨軍の爲に銃殺せられたり、  
第六十三頁、百十頁白耳義調査委員報告書參照



#### SHOOTING OF INNOCENT HOSTAGES IN BELGIUM

"Hostages have been shot without the least personal fault."—*Report of Belgian Commission of Inquiry. See pages 47 and 77.*



妻子の目前に行はれたる日耳義人の處刑  
第五十九、六十、七十二頁參照



EXECUTIONS IN THE PRESENCE OF WIVES AND CHILDREN

See pages 44, 45 and 52.

## CHAPTER IX.

### THE HORRORS OF THE SIX TOWNS

#### 1.—THE “SCIENTIFIC AND DELIBERATE” DESTRUCTION OF LOUVAIN

THE BURNING OF THE UNIVERSITY.—Everyone has heard of how, at Malines and Ypres, the most famous examples of mediæval architecture were ruthlessly shelled and burnt. But the crowning outrage was at Louvain. By the burning of the University of Louvain “five centuries’ accumulation of intellectual, historical and artistic riches are in dust.” There were a quarter of a million volumes in the library. As to the town, says Cardinal Mercier, “1074 dwellings have disappeared, 1823 have have burnt.” But these are merely the outrages against inanimate things. There was also massacre.

“HIGHER MILITARY AUTHORITIES” AND “A CALCULATED POLICY.”—First, let us read the finding of the British Commission of Inquiry :

“The depositions which relate to Louvain are numerous and *we find no ground for thinking that the inhabitants fired on the German Army.* No impartial tribunal could come to any other conclusion.

“The burning of a large part of Louvain, the massacres, the transport of the prisoners to Germany without inquiry as to whether the persons siezed or killed had committed any wrongful act, were due to *a calculated policy*, carried out scientifically and deliberately, not merely with the sanction, but under the direction of higher military authorities and were not due to any provocation or resistance by the civil population.”

TERRIBLE EXPERIENCE OF A NEUTRAL.—“In their night of drunken and murderous orgy,” writes the librarian of the University,

“the German soldiers spared nothing. Old men, women, children, sick people, lunatics from the asylums, priests, nuns, were driven like cattle in different directions by brutal soldiers and forced to kneel and lift their arms every time they met German soldiers and officers.”

But let us take the evidence of a neutral witness, a Paraguayan priest called Gamarra. He was a student at Louvain, and he has sent to South America a dispassionate account of what he himself witnessed. I extract a few sentences :



"The vanguard of the army of Von Kluck occupied Louvain without striking a blow. There was no fighting. The destruction of the town was carried out deliberately by incendiaries. While the town was burning on all sides the Germans shot the people as they fled from their burning houses. In the corridors of the station were lying fifteen or twenty bodies of civilians who had been shot.

"The first group of prisoners from 70 to 80 included some distinguished persons, advocates, medical men, etc. Five of us were foreigners. Soldiers treated us in a brutal manner. I had in my hand my passport proving my foreign nationality. Every time I tried to prove my nationality officers threatened and struck me. When I saw that all was useless I resigned myself and prepared for death. My companions did the same. We were made to run, stop or walk slowly by blows with a sabre, the butt end of a rifle or a lance. We were kicked and spat upon."

Later, Gamarra and the four other foreigners were set at liberty. In the Belgian Grey Book are printed the names, ages and callings of 210 persons who were killed in Louvain and district. Eight of these civilians were under 15; eleven were between 70 and 80.

THE GERMAN EXCUSE AND THE TRUTH.—The Belgian medical man who was quoted in the last Chapter witnessed the sack of Louvain. He says that the German excuse was that some men had been killed and others wounded. The allegation was that revolver shots as well as rifle shots had been distinguished. From this they concluded that civilians had fired. "Their evidence may be quite true," he says. "I am inclined to accept it in its entirety. But I repudiate the conclusion drawn from it. For several reasons:

"1. German soldiers who occupied the infantry barracks in the Rue de Tirlémont have told me positively that for several moments they were exposed to the fire of their comrades, and that it was only after much crying out and shouting that they made the others understand that they also were Germans.

"2. Two German soldiers entered the house of a professor of the University and fired their rifles out of the window at a moment when there was no civilian in the street.

"3. As the German officers are armed with revolvers, the mere fact that reports different from those of the German rifle were heard is no proof that civilians had fired."

He says in conclusion:

"A large number of civilians were interrogated, but in not one single instance was culpability brought home to a citizen of the town."

A Swiss engineer in Louvain has also testified that the sack of the town was absolutely without justification. Again, Mr. P. B. Mets, a Dutchman, writes, "I have written what I have seen; the Germans behaved like barbarians in Louvain." This is not the only Dutch testimony. Mr. Mokveld, author of "*De overweldiging van België*,"

[illegible]

7.—A List Published at Tamines of the Names of 336 persons killed (including 2 priests and 9 women) and of 59 persons wounded.

七—タミーンに於て發表されたる死者三百三十六名(内二名は僧侶九名は婦人)及び負傷者五十九名の名



published in Rotterdam, was also present at the sack of Louvain, and equally ridicules the German plea of "Man hat geschossen!" ("Some one has fired!").

## 2.—THE 650 VICTIMS AT TAMINES

**MASSACRE BY MACHINE GUN.**—Now for the case of the town of Taminés. The Belgian Commission of Inquiry states that it devoted special attention to ascertaining whether the inhabitants had fired on the German troops. "All the witnesses unanimously declared the contrary. They explained the massacre of the villagers by the fact that the Germans had attributed to the inhabitants the shots that had been fired by the French skirmishers." One of the witnesses gave the following evidence:

"A group of between 400 and 450 men was collected in front of the church near the bank of the river. A German detachment opened fire on them, but as the shooting was a slow business the officers ordered up a machine gun which soon swept off the unhappy peasants still left standing. Many were only wounded and got on their feet again. They were immediately shot down. Many wounded lay still among the corpses. Groans and pains and cries for help were heard in the bleeding heap. On several occasions soldiers walked up and stopped groans with a bayonet thrust. At night some succeeded in crawling away. Others put an end to their pain by rolling themselves into the river. About 100 bodies were found in the river."

The Germans burnt in all 264 houses. Many women and children were burnt or suffocated in their homes. Many were shot in the fields. The total number of victims was over 650.

## 3.—THE 800 MURDERED AT DINANT

"SEPARATED THE WOMEN FROM THE MEN AND SHOT 50."—Here is the dreadful story of Dinant:

"On Friday about 9 o'clock in the evening," the Commission reports, "the German troops entered the town. They began firing into the windows of the houses, and killed a workman, wounded another inhabitant and forced him to cry, 'Long live the Kaiser!' They bayoneted a third person in the stomach. They entered the cafés, siezed the liquor, got drunk and set fire to several houses, and broke the doors and windows of others."

The real devilry came later:

"On Sunday, at 6.30 in the morning, soldiers of the 108th Regiment invaded the church, drove out the congregation, separated the women from the men and shot 50 of the

latter. Between 7 and 9, the soldiers gave themselves up to pillage and arson, going from house to house and driving the inhabitants into the street. All who tried to escape were shot."

"NO INQUIRY OR PRETENCE OF A TRIAL."—About 9, the soldiers, "driving men, women and children before them by blows from the butt ends of rifles, pushed them all into the parade square where they were kept prisoner till the evening." "The guard took pleasure in repeating to them that they would soon be shot."

"About six in the evening a Captain separated the men from the women and children. The women were placed in front of a row of soldiers; the men were ranged along a wall. The front rank was then told to kneel; a platoon of soldiers drew up in face of these unhappy men. It was in vain that the women cried out for mercy for their husbands, sons and brothers. The officer ordered his men to fire.

"There had been no inquiry or any pretence of a trial. About 20 of the inhabitants were only wounded. The soldiers to make sure fired a new volley into the heap of them. Several citizens escaped this double discharge. They shammed dead for more than two hours, remaining motionless among the corpses and when night fell succeeded in saving themselves in the hills.

"Eighty-four corpses were left on the square."

MORE MACHINE GUN MASSACRE.—But "the day was made bloody by several more massacres." "Soldiers discovered some inhabitants in the cellars of a brewery and shot them."

"Again, since the previous evening a crowd of workmen belonging to the factory of M. Himmer had hidden themselves with their wives and children in the cellars of the building. They had been joined there by many neighbours and by members of the family of their employer. About 6 o'clock in the evening, these people came out with a white flag in front. Every man was shot on the spot.

"Almost all the men of de Leffe, a suburb, were executed.

"In another part of the town twelve were killed in a cellar. A paralytic was shot in an armchair. The soldiers killed a boy of fourteen. An old woman and all her children were killed in their cellar. A man of 65, his wife, his son and his daughter were shot against a wall. Other inhabitants were taken in a barge and shot, among them a woman of 83 and her husband.

"A certain number of men and women had been locked up in the court of the prison. A machine gun placed on the hill above opened fire on them, and an old woman and three other persons were brought down."

THE MARTYRDOM OF EDMOND BOURDON.—No incident of the Dinant horror was sadder than that of the martyrdom of the Recorder of the place on behalf of his fellow townspeople. The Recorder was told that the inhabitants must be punished because *francs tireurs* were firing at the troops. He protested that the supposed *francs tireurs* were



really the French army, and offered at his own risk to cross the river and obtain a written attestation from the French officer in charge. The result is told in a narrative given me by the Belgian Minister in Tokyo :

"Edmond Bourdon took an old boat, anchored in his garden, and crossed the river. The French immediately gave him the attestation he came for. But warning the aged Recorder of the dangers he would meet by returning to the German lines, and probably without any benefit to his fellow townsmen, they advised him to remain with them. Their entreaties were in vain. Bourdon, although anticipating his fate, embarked hoping to save his friends.

## VILLE DE DINANT

**Il est rappelé aux intéressés détenteurs des listes d'exhumés (Série A) que celles-ci doivent rentrer SANS AUCUN DÉLAI à l'Hôtel de Ville.**

**Des mesures rigoureuses pourraient être prises contre ceux qui n'obtempéreraient pas à cet ordre formel de l'AUTORITÉ ALLEMANDE.**

A Dinant le 20 Octobre 1914.

Le Bourgmestre ff., Fr. BRIBOSIA

Imprimerie administrative E. JANUS Dinant.

"The Germans shot at him while he was crossing the river, and when he landed, his two sons had to help him out of the boat, as his legs were pierced by bullets. When he delivered to the Germans the French attestation, they tore it to pieces, without reading it!"

The subsequent massacre has already been described. Not only the brave Recorder but his wife and a son and daughter were among the eighty persons set against a wall and cut down by a machine gun. Some hours after, Recorder Bourdon's youngest son, a youth of 15, was found in the heap of bodies, soaked with blood but still alive.

### 8.—German Proclamation ordering the Surrender of Lists of the Dead.

八一死者の名簿の保存を防ぐ爲め之を差出  
せよとの獨軍の宣言

to have been killed, and lists of the names of as many as 612 are in existence. When the German authorities found out about these lists they became anxious and issued orders for *the immediate collection of them under pain of severe measures.*

THE GERMANS AND  
THE LISTS OF THE DEAD.  
—More than 800 of the  
inhabitants were believed

There were 1400 houses in Dinant and of these only 200 remained when the Germans had finished their work of destruction.

THE ADMISSION OF GUILT.—Nothing is more remarkable, than the way in which the German authorities in their defence of their conduct threw off the mask. Read what a General wrote :

"In judging the attitude which the troops took, our starting point must be that the tactical object was to cross the Meuse with speed, and to drive the enemy from the left bank of the Meuse ; speedily to overcome the opposition of the inhabitants who were working in direct opposition to *this was to be striven for in every way*. . . Hostages were shot at various places and this procedure is amply justified."

THE STORY OF THE HAUNTED SOLDIER.—"Amply justified!" Most of the German soldiers who committed the outrages of 1914 in Belgium must by now have been killed or have died of their wounds on the Western or Eastern fronts. One wonders whether at their death they all thought their deeds in Belgium "amply justified."\* The question is suggested by a story in a book by an English doctor which includes recollections of German soldiers on their deathbeds. Here is the tale of the old woman a man stabbed at Dinant as she was running away from one of these soldiers.. She was a very old woman, "Eine sehr alte Frau," said he.

"He stabbed her as she was entering a house ; she fell on the threshold. As he bent over her face to see if she was dead she opened her eyes and looked at him with the same eyes as his grandmother had looked at him the day he started for the war and bade her farewell in their village church—the same sad, humble eyes. The old woman was holding her prayer-book and her spectacle case in her hand, just as his grandmother was holding her prayer-book and her spectacle case in her old hands. She was quite dead, but she kept on looking at him."

The eyes of the old woman haunted her murderer. "Do you think I am going to Hell?" he asked with his last breath.

"WITH ORDER AND PRECISION."—Before he died the same soldier had given this general account of the massacre of the civilians at Dinant :

"It was all carried out with order and precision. The officers were there to see that the work was properly done, and that it all went off without a hitch. The men were rather more drunk than was good for them. One soldier was shot dead by an

---

\* One German soldier said the troops had been told, "The more terrible you are the sooner you will achieve victory." Another dying man moaned, "We have behaved badly, but we did not do a quarter of what we were told to do,"



officer as he threw down his rifle when orders were given to fire on the defenceless crowd."

#### 4.—EXECUTION BY AXE AT ANDENNE

**THE SOLDIERS GET DRUNK.**—One of the horrors of Andenne was the brutal maltreatment of the Burgomaster, a man of more than 70 years of age, who, several days before, had taken "the most minute precautions" to prevent the population from engaging in hostilities. ("He had posted up everywhere placards ordering non-resistance; all firearms had been collected at the mayoralty; and the local authorities had personally visited certain of the inhabitants to explain their duty to them.") We have a convincing account of how some soldiers got drunk. There we read that on the evening of the next day:

"A rifle shot was heard in the street, followed immediately by a startling explosion. The troops fell into disorder and fired haphazard. A machine gun commenced to fire against the houses. A cannon dropped shells into the town. A number of people were killed in their houses or by soldiers who burst in. Immediately afterwards commenced the pillage of the principal streets. Furniture was smashed and thrown out. The soldiers ran down into the cellars, got drunk there, breaking the bottles of wine they could not carry away. Finally houses were set on fire."

**MURDER OF THE BURGOMASTER.**—The following day at four in the morning the soldiers "drove all the population into the street forcing men, women and children to march before them with their hands in the air."

"Those who did not obey with sufficient promptitude, or did not understand German, were knocked down. Those who tried to run away were shot.

"The Burgomaster was wounded by a rifle shot and finished off with an axe. His body was dragged along by the feet for some distance.

"A watchmaker was coming out of his house by the order of the soldiers, supporting on his arm his father-in-law of 80. Naturally therefore he could not hold up both his hands. A soldier stepped up to him and struck him with an axe. He fell mortally wounded before his own door."

**"ALL DIED BRAVELY."**—Meanwhile the whole population was being driven towards the Place des Tilleuls:

"Old men, the sick and the paralysed were all brought there. Some on wheel chairs, some on hand carts, others carried by their relations. The men were separated from the women. Then all were searched but no arms were found. One man had in his pocket some empty cartridge cases, German and Belgian. He was immediately set aside. So was a cobbler who had a wounded hand. The wound was a month old,

或る白耳義の家庭  
夫は殺され妻は辱められたり、  
第八十二頁参照



A BELGIAN HOME

Husband killed and Wife outraged. See page 59.



クルツール  
獨軍將校が其兵士に奪掠を命じ且之を稱揚したるの事實は今や證據擧れり、第九十四、百五百英國調査委員報告書參照



### KULTUR

"It is proved that the German officers have ordered and approved of looting."—  
*Report of British Commission of Inquiry. See pages 67 and 74.*

An engineer was also set aside because he had in his pocket a spanner which was considered a weapon. Another man seems to have been arrested because his face showed contempt for what was going on. These people were shot in the presence of the crowd and all died bravely.

"Subsequently, on the order of their officers, the soldiers picked out of the mass some forty or fifty men who were led off and all shot.

"Other soldiers continued their work of sack, pillage and arson. Eight men belonging to the same household were led into a meadow some 50 yards from their dwelling. Some of them were shot. The rest were cut down with blows of an axe. One tall red-haired soldier with a scar on his face distinguished himself by the ferocity with which he used an axe. A young boy and a woman were shot.

"About 10 in the morning the officers told the women to gather together the bodies and wash away the blood which defiled the streets and the houses."

"FEROCITY AND CRUELTY."—The British Report says that almost every house in Andenne was sacked and that the pillage went on for eight days. "No other Belgian town was the scene of such ferocity and cruelty."

"The numerous inhabitants we have cross-examined are unanimous in asserting that the German troops were not fired upon. They told us that no German was killed at Andenne or in its neighbourhood. Some think that Andenne was sacrificed to establish a reign of terror. Others think that the destruction of the bridge—a regiment of Belgian infantry had blown it up—the obstruction of a neighbouring tunnel, and the resistance of the Belgian troops were the causes of the massacre. All protest that nothing happened in the place to excuse the conduct of the Germans."

HOW THEY DIED.—A "first list of bodies exhumed and identified" contains 103 names. Several of the dead were youths. Of *one girl aged 14*, it is recorded that *she was killed, "after having been outraged by 20 soldiers."*

Another characteristic example of callous brutality towards one of the executed youths is recorded in the words:

"Valere Gulitte, medical student, forced by the Germans to fetch from a cellar the bodies of his father and uncle."

Joseph Walgraffe had his head cut off and it was "thrown into his burning house."

One gets a picture of the bravery with which the doomed faced their end from such an entry in the list as this:

"Ferdinand Froidebise, of independent means, aged 86, killed while singing the 'Marseillaise.'"

MENTALITY OF THE GERMAN COMMANDERS.—We have some indication of the character of General von Bülow who acknowledged by



proclamation that it was with his consent that Andenne had been burnt and "about 100 inhabitants" shot. A few days afterwards this man issued a proclamation at Namur saying:

"The streets will be held by German guards who will hold ten hostages for each street. These hostages will be shot if there is any trouble in that street. A crime against the German Army will compromise the existence of the whole town of Namur—of *everyone in it.*"

But this proclamation was not after all so unusual. Did not Lieut. General von Nieber write to the burgomaster of Wavre, on August 27, demanding an advance of two million francs in gold "at once," saying: "*If these payments are not made the town will be destroyed and burnt, the innocent suffering with the guilty*"? Did not Field Marshal von der Goltz issue a proclamation in Brussels, on October 5th, stating that, if any one disturbed the telegraphic or railway communications, all the inhabitants would be "*punished without pity, the innocent suffering with the guilty*"?

SALUTES FOR GERMAN SOLDIERS.—But the Germans got so used to shooting civilians that the death penalty was ordered to be inflicted for all sorts of things. For example, at Grivegnee, on Sept. 8, 1914, Commandant Major Bieckman issued a proclamation threatening death to all persons who did not reveal the presence of petroleum or who did not keep their houses lighted up, and to all hostages who at the end of their 24 hours of service as hostages, had not their places taken by the persons appointed to serve as hostages during the next 24 hours. The full text of the proclamation is before me. It would be a pity not to quote the eighth paragraph:

"I insist that all civilians show their respect to German officers by taking off their hats or lifting their hands to their heads. In case of doubt every German soldier must be saluted. Anyone who disregards this must expect the military to make themselves respected by every means."

## 5.—THE EXHUMATIONS AT AERSCHOT

"CONDUCTED TO A TRENCH AND SHOT."—As to the massacre of Aerschot, a Dutchman, Professor L. H. Grondijs, made inquiries on the spot. From his evidence it is established that the German Commander

---

\* At Wavre fifty houses were burnt. The German excuse was that civilians had fired. A medical inquiry proved that the soldier who was wounded had been hit by a German bullet!

in occupation of the place was on the balcony of the house of the burgomaster enjoying his hospitality. The market place was full of German soldiers. We may surmise what was the condition of some of them from the fact that in a letter taken later from the body of a German soldier (a reproduction of which is before me) there is in a reference to Aerschot, "All my life I shall never drink more wine than I drank here." Suddenly rifles were discharged without any reason. Immediately the troops lost their heads and began firing at the houses. A chance shot struck the German Commander on the balcony and killed him. Immediately the burgomaster, his wife, brother and son, who were hiding in the cellar from the fusillade, were arrested. A priest was also seized. A company of

"thirty persons who could not be charged with a shadow of a crime were conducted to a trench and shot with the exception of a certain Mommens who was compelled to assist in the burial of the bodies. As soon as the work was finished this man was told to go to Louvain and tell there the story of what he had seen. It was no doubt desired that his narrative should terrorise the city."

But this was only a beginning. Of the further horrors, however, it is perhaps enough to record, after all the terrible things which I have already transcribed, that at a later date *155 civilian corpses were exhumed at Aerschot and that 7 of them were women.*

## 6.—THE MASSACRE OF 2,000 IN NAMUR

THE ALLEGATION AND THE ANSWER.—Namur fell into the possession of the Germans after a bombardment. The fires which the troops set alight on the second day of the occupation destroyed the town hall with its collection of pictures. The chief of the fire brigade, when he attempted to cope with the flames, was arrested. The excuse made by the Germans was that their soldiers had been fired on. As to this the Belgian Government merely says:

"Fifteen days before the people had given up to the authorities all the firearms they possessed. They had been informed by official notices what the laws of War were, and they had been ordered by the civil and military authority, by the clergy and the newspapers or take no part in the fighting. The Belgian troops had evacuated the town thirty-six hours before the incendiarism began. The people, even if they had possessed weapons, would have been insane to assail the masses of German troops that crowded the town and occupied all its approaches. And how account for the fact that, at all the five points at which the alleged attacks were supposed to have been made, the Germans were in possession of the incendiary substances required for the prompt burning of the place? The incidents at Namur form part of the general system of terrorism which was habitually practised by the German army."



For several days houses were plundered. One citizen saw his furniture being taken in a German cart to Germany. There were many outrages on women and girls, and 75 persons were shot or perished in the burning houses. After all its suffering, Namur and the 17 surrounding communes were fined 32,000,000 francs.

"OFFICERS OF WHOM SOME WERE INTOXICATED."—In the whole province of Namur it is believed that nearly 2,000 men, women and children were massacred. On the German troops entering one village of the province called Hastieres a surgeon of the Red Cross was arrested and shot. After this, the soldiers

"crossing the street went to the house of a butcher, drove out him, his wife and children, and shot him and his elder son. Next they went to the farm of Jules Rifon, took him out of his cellar where he had hidden with his daughters and shot him. They also killed the farmer Bodson and his two sons with ten other inhabitants. The place was then sacked, and the greater part of the houses burnt. The parish priest and his brother-in-law, a professor of the university, the wife and daughters of the professor, the school master with his wife and family and other inhabitants had taken refuge in the crypt of the church. The Germans fired at them through the windows, and then forced them to come out. They were brought before officers of whom some were intoxicated. The women were dragged apart from the men, and the priest the professor, the schoolmaster and other men were shot. Their bodies were left lying on the road."

"SHOOT ME TOO."—Now for what happened at another village of the province, Surice:

"Several most inoffensive people were fired at. Charles Colot, aged 88, was shot as he came out of his door. The soldiers rolled his body in a blanket and set fire to it. A man named Pierrot as he was coming out of his burning house, carrying his step mother was shot at short range. The clerk Burniaux, (his son had recently been ordained a priest) and another of his sons were shot before the eyes of Madame Burniaux. In a garden there was a dead woman with two small children crying over her. Between fifty and sixty persons of both sexes were led away.

"An officer said, 'You all deserve to be shot; a young girl of fifteen has just fired, but the court martial has decided that only the men shall be executed.' There were eighteen men and two boys of sixteen and seventeen in a row. A young German soldier was so horrorstruck that tears were falling on his tunic. The women were crying, 'Shoot me too; shoot me with my husband.' The young Henri Jacques was leaning on one of the priests as if to seek help and courage from him. (There were four priests and a doctor in the company). He was sobbing, 'I am too young; I can't face death bravely', The soldiers fired and the men fell in a heap. Several were finished off by having their skulls beaten in with rifle butts. Among these was the priest of Surice. When the massacre was over the Germans plundered the corpses. They took from them watches, rings, purses and pocket books."

The village was "thoroughly sacked." Of 131 houses, only *eight* escaped destruction.

## CHAPTER X

# THE TERRIBLE FINDINGS OF THE BRITISH COMMISSION OF INQUIRY

### SEVEN VIOLATIONS OF THE RULES OF WAR OF WHICH THERE ARE "ABSOLUTELY AUTHENTIC PROOFS."

THE ALLEGED CRIMES AND THE ACTUAL PUNISHMENTS.—But let us accept for a moment, not by way of admission but of supposition, the German hypothesis of a legitimate repression of *francs tireurs*.

"It will be made clear," as the Bishop of Namur wrote last year, "by the examination of each particular instance of the destruction of a town or village and the extermination of the civilians, that the punishment is so greatly out of proportion to the alleged crime that it could not be justified by any kind of argument."

We have seen what happened in six towns—Louvain, Tamines, Dinant, Andenne, Aerschot and Namur. But this is the story of *only a part of the horrors of the German invasion of Belgium*.

THE FINDINGS OF A SINGLE COMMISSION.—It is not possible for this book, or any other book, to reproduce all the horrors recorded in the *twenty-two* Reports of the Belgian Commission of Inquiry, and of the British and French Commissions of Inquiry, and in the mass of letters and articles of neutral observers. What can be done, however, is this. We can record the seven findings of the British Commission, presided over by one of the most judicial minds in Great Britain, Viscount Bryce, not only ex-Ambassador at Washington and an ex-member of the British Cabinet, but a distinguished historian. We can then append to each finding *a few cases* which are *a fair sample* of those on which the finding was based. Here are the findings:

"There are *absolutely authentic proofs* that

"*There was murder, lust and pillage over many parts of Belgium on a scale unparalleled in any War between civilised nations during the last three centuries.*

Particularly,



1.—“ *It is proved that in many parts of Belgium the Germans have deliberately and systematically organised the massacre of the civilian population and have moreover committed many murders and other isolated outrages; and that, in the general conduct of the War, they have killed a large number of innocent civilians, both men and women.* ”

2.—“ *It is proved that they have violated women.* ”

3.—“ *It is proved that the Germans have often violated the rules and usages of War, particularly by forcing civilians including women and children, to march before their troops in order to serve as shields.* ”

4.—“ *It is proved that the Germans have massacred wounded and prisoners, and that they have frequently and grossly disregarded the flags and badges of the Red Cross and have also abused the use of the white flag.* ”

5.—“ *It is proved that the officers of the German Army have ordered and approved of looting, and that this has frequently taken place not because of any military necessity but as a part of a system of intimidation.* ”

6.—“ *It is proved that the officers of the German Army have ordered and approved of incendiarism and the destruction of private property, that the German military authorities had made provision before the beginning of the War for the work of incendiarism, and that the destruction which took place so frequently was not due to any military necessity but was part of a system of intimidation.* ”

In the next Chapter each of these six findings will be printed with sample cases below it.

## CHAPTER XI

### SOME OF THE EVIDENCE ON WHICH THE FINDINGS WERE BASED

#### 1.—“DELIBERATELY AND SYSTEMATICALLY ORGANISED” MASSACRE, MURDER AND OUTRAGE

*“It is proved that in many parts of Belgium the Germans have deliberately and systematically organised the massacre of the civilian population and have moreover committed many murders and other isolated outrages; and that in the general conduct of the War they have killed a large number of innocent civilians, both men and women.”*—First Finding of the British Commission of Inquiry.

FROM GERMAN SOLDIERS' LETTERS.—Sufficient evidence has already been given of “deliberately and systematically organised massacre” in the cases of Louvain, Tamines, Dinant, Andennes, Aerschot and Namur. There need be added now only cases of isolated murders and other outrages. Here are some extracts from German soldiers' letters—found on corpses or taken from prisoners:

“Terrible slaughter. The village is burnt to the ground. The French are thrown into the burning houses.” (Hassemar, 8th Corps, September 3rd 1914.)

“300 of the inhabitants of the town shot. Those who survived the shots were obliged to dig the graves. (Schlauter, reservist of the 3rd battery of the 4th regiment of Field Artillery, August 25th 1914.)

“The inhabitants fled through the village. It was horrible. Among the dead, many old women, old men, and a pregnant woman and three children who were pressed close to each other. (Paul Spielmann, 1st Infantry Brigade Guards.)

OUTRAGES ON PRIESTS.—A number of cases of the murders of priests have been recorded in an earlier Chapter. Here are some more outrages on the authority of the South American priest already quoted:

“At Corbeck-Loo the old vicar, together with some other priests and laymen, were shut up naked in a pigstye while the Germans cried “Pigs to the Pigs.”

“The priest of Bueken had his nose and ears were cut off. He was afterwards shot.

“The vicar of Schaffer was thrice tied to and cut down from a tree.

“German soldiers climbed the steeple at Boven-Loo and shot at the people. When



9.—Invitation to a Mass in Rome  
for the Souls of 48 Priests  
Shot in Belgium.

九一白耳義に於て殺害され  
たる四十八名の僧侶の  
爲め羅馬に於る追  
悼會の招待狀



*Le Collège des Préviseurs de Saint-Julien-des-Belges a l'honneur de vous inviter au service religieux qu'il fera célébrer le Vendredi 22 Janvier, à 11 heures, pour le repos de l'âme des Prêtres et Religieux, mis à mort par les troupes allemandes au cours de l'invasion de la Belgique*

*Vous en trouverez ci-centre une première liste.*

*A cause de l'exiguïté de l'Église Nationale, le service religieux aura lieu dans l'ÉGLISE DES STIGMATES, à l'angle de la Via dei Cestan et du Corso Vittorio Emanuele*

LE PRÉSIDENT  
BARON D'ERP, Ministre de Belgique près le Saint-Siège

LE SECRÉTAIRE  
C. DE T'SERCLAES, Président du Collège Belge

M. VAES, Recteur de Saint-Julien-des-Belges  
OSCAR BOLLE,  
G. KURTH, Directeur de l'Institut historique Belge  
A. POTTIER, Chanoine de Sainte-Marie-Majeure

DIOCÈSE DE LIÈGE.

L'abbé O. CHABOT, curé de Forêt  
L'abbé I. DOSSOGNE, curé de Hockay  
L'abbé F. JANSSEN, curé de Heure-le-Rome  
L'abbé R. LAREVE, curé de Blegny  
L'abbé B. REMONNET, vicaire d'Oline.  
L'abbé E. TIELEN, curé de Haccourt.

DIOCÈSE DE MALINES.

L'abbé R. CARPTE, professeur au Collège Saint-Pierre à Louvain  
L'abbé H. DE CLEIN, curé de Burken, près de Louvain  
L'abbé P. DESCENT, curé de Celrode.  
L'abbé J. CORIS, curé de Aurgarden  
L'abbé E. LOMBAERTS, curé de Bovenloo, près de Louvain  
L'abbé VAN BLADEL, curé de Herent, près de Louvain  
Le R. P. DUPESREUX, Jésuite de Louvain  
Le R. P. VINCENT SOMERBOEK, conventuel de Louvain  
Le R. P. VAN HOLMEN, capucin, de Louvain  
Le R. Chanoine-Prémootre J. WOUTERS, curé de Pont-Brule  
Le Frère ALLARD (dans le monde F. Forger), religieux jésuite de Louvain.  
Le Frère SÉBASTIEN (dans le monde; Mr. Stratzman), religieux jésuite de Louvain  
Le Frère CANDIDE (dans le monde; Mr. Pivet), des Frères de la Miséricorde au Joupout, près de Louvain

DIOCÈSE DE TONRAI.

L'abbé E. DUBUT, curé d'Acois  
L'abbé J. POLLART, curé de Roschies.

DIOCÈSE DE NAMUR.

L'abbé J. ALEXANDRE, curé de Musoy-la-Ville  
L'abbé A. AMBROISE, curé d'Onhaye  
L'abbé BILAUDI, aumônier des sourds-muets à Bouge  
L'abbé BURNIAUX, professeur au Collège Saint-Louis à Namur  
L'abbé DOCO, professeur au Collège de Virton.  
L'abbé C. GASPAR, professeur au Collège de Belle-Vue à Dismet  
L'abbé J. GEDGES, curé de Tintigny  
L'abbé P. GILLE, docteur en Théologie de l'Université Grégorienne vicaire de Courvin  
L'abbé CLOUDEM, curé de Latour  
L'abbé HOTTLET, curé de Les Alloux  
L'abbé J. LAISSE, curé de Spontin  
L'abbé MARÉCHAL, séminariste de Malissen  
L'abbé PATRON, vicaire de Deury  
L'abbé PISSET, vicaire d'Elaile  
L'abbé PIERARD, curé de Châtillon  
L'abbé PIET, curé d'Anthe  
L'abbé POSKIN, curé de Surice  
L'abbé E. SCHLOGL, curé de Hastieres  
L'abbé ZENDER, curé retraité  
Le R. P. GILLET, bénédictin de l'abbaye de Marciatous  
Le Chanoine NIKOLAS, de l'abbaye des Prémontrés de Leffe

Le Collège des Préviseurs recommande également à vos charitables prières l'âme de Monsieur N. PONTILIER et de Monsieur V. LENEUTE, professeurs à l'Université Catholique de Louvain, fusillés par les troupes allemandes.

體力完全なる白耳義人皆獨逸に送くらる  
第百五、百二十三頁参照



ABLE-BODIED BELGIANS DEPORTED TO GERMANY

*See pages 74 and 87*



再び白耳義の良友  
親に分れ衣食の途もなき白耳義は良友を軽々しく信するわけに行かない



THE FRIEND OF BELGIUM AGAIN

Orphaned and destitute Belgium finds some difficulty in believing in him.

they came down they wanted the priest to declare that it was he who had shot. As he refused he was shot.”

**INCREDIBLE BRUTALITY.**—In the British Commission Report it is state that at Aerschot

“ A priest was placed against the wall with his arms raised above his head ; when he let them fall through weariness, the German soldiers brought the butt ends of their rifles down upon his feet. He was kept there for hours, and as German soldiers passed *they used him as a lavatory and a latrine until he was covered with filth.* Eventually they shot him.”

The same report is given by Gamarra.

A Belgian professor also gives the same account as Gamarra of the death of a Jesuit priest. He was shot without a shadow of a trial because an opinion, “ relatively moderate,” on the burning of the Louvain University library was found in his notebook.

**A DOCTOR'S RECITAL OF HORRORS.**—The Belgian medical man already quoted gives the following cases of general outrage by way of what he calls illustrative cases :

“ German soldiers tortured old men in cold blood, wounding and mangling them with their bayonets.

“ I had occasion to attend to an old man who had been fired at and wounded in three places because he would not give up his cows.

“ A boy whom I tended myself had been abominably treated.

“ A poor woman told me, between her sobs, how her baby had been killed in her arms.

**THE BELGIANS WHO WERE BURNT.**—The following cases are chronicled by the Belgian Commission :

“ Near Molenstede the Germans tied to a tree an old man of ninety who was struggling to protect his daughter, and then burnt him alive with piles of straw.

“ At Pin, two boys were watching some Uhlans pass along the road. The Uhlans rode at them, tied them to their horses, and galloped until both were dead.

“ At Sempst they seized a boy, cut off his arms and then his head, and threw the remains into a blazing house.

“ In Hofstade, on the 25th of August, the Belgian troops found the body of an old woman who had been killed by bayonet wounds. Her needle and thread were still in her hands. Near her a woman and her son of 16 were found dead from bayonet wounds, and the corpse of a man who had been hanged.

“ In Sempst there was a man whose legs had been cut off at the knees and another whose arms and legs were cut off ; both bodies were half burnt. Another workman had been drenched in petrol by the German soldiers and thrown into the flames.

“ Not far from Malines on August 26 the body of an old man was found tied by the arms to the beam in the ceiling of his farm. The body was charred to a cinder.



Further on, a boy of 15, with his hands tied behind him, had been killed by murder of bayonet thrust."

**AN OFFICER'S GRUESOME CONDUCT.**—These cases are recorded by Dr. Pacquin, physician to the King of the Belgians, of his own knowledge:

"A heap of dead bodies, in a terrible state, was piled up, and on top of it the German officer placed a little child—alive, mind you—with its little legs wedged in by the corpses. Then they photographed the gruesome exhibit.

"A mother fled to the street with her child in her arms. Her baby was killed before her eyes, and she was made to bury it for the amusement of the soldiers who surrounded her.

"At Bertrix they shot a young man and a young girl in the presence of their parents; afterwards they stripped the corpses completely, tied them together, wrapped them in straw, and set fire to the whole.

"At Quarregnon and at Burges artillerymen tied civilians to their big siege guns that are discharged from a distance by means of an electric contact. The terrific detonation burst the ear drums of the unfortunate men, who had to suffer atrocious pains.

"A priest was tied naked to a gun in the presence of the women of his parish, and left there while the big piece was being discharged."

**ANOTHER MURDERED BURGOMASTER.**—I may give here a typical instance of the kind of treatment the Belgians have endured told me by a relative of the persons who lost their lives. In a village in which the Germans had ordered that no one should be abroad after 7 p. m. a requisition was made for an enormous supply of food. The burgomaster, M. Pirmez, undertook to do his best and busied himself all day visiting the inhabitants. Returning home from his arduous day's work shortly after seven, he was shot dead before his own door. When his young son of fourteen or fifteen came out to help him he was also shot, but did not die at once. When the boy's mother (née Countess de Looz Corswarem) tried to succour him she was brutally forced indoors, and, until the morning, when the boy died, she had to hear his groans and cries for help.

**MORE SOLDIERS' CONFESSIONS.**—Two more extracts may be given from German soldiers' letters:

"Outside the village there were a few civilians. A lieutenant and I fired a few shots at them, after which we drank several bottles of champagne." (Gustav Schopper, 8th Reserve Hussars.)

"We got into the house of a well-to-do inhabitant, through a maze of rooms. There was the body of the owner on the floor. Inside our men destroyed everything, like Vandals. Outside in the country, the sight of the villagers who had been shot defies all description. (A Saxon officer, 178th regiment, August 23, 1914.)

THE BEHAVIOUR OF OFFICERS.—As to outrages other than the taking of life, here are specimen cases at Aerschot on the authority of Dr. Tacquin :

“The houses which were not burnt were sacked and usually defiled in a peculiarly brutal and ignoble fashion. Furniture that could not be carried off was broken. One house had been used by German officers as their head quarters. The hall, staircase, and garden were full of empty wine-bottles. The mattresses had been slit open, the bed linen soiled and cut to pieces, the dining-room fender filled with broken wine glasses, the piano kicked to pieces. Everyone of the best houses in the town was treated by German officers in the same horrible way ; everywhere they left traces of disgusting debauchery and uncleanness.”

“LIKE MASTER, LIKE MAN.”—I am reluctant to give the following story, but it is reproduced on the authority of a neutral eyewitness :

“At Landen railway station on October 9, 1914,” writes Mr. Mokveld, the Dutch author of a book on his experiences in Belgium over a period of four months, “two or three hundred German soldiers stood round three severely wounded British soldiers lying in a cattle truck. They had been without food for some time. One after the other the German soldiers passed their bowls of smoking soup under the noses of their victims amid cries of, “You wish to eat, pigs? We will give you something. Death to the British! Kill them!” Then some struck the poor men with their guns. Others spat on their clothes and faces.”

The following letter was found on the body of a private of the 12th Infantry Reserve (1 Corps Reserves):

“Unfortunately, I am obliged to mention something which ought never to have happened ; but there are even in our army ruffians who are no longer men, swine to whom nothing is sacred. One of them entered a sacristy that was locked, in which was the blessed sacrament. He polluted the place with his excrements. How can there be such beings! Last night, a man of the Landwehr, a man of thirty-five, and a married man, tried to rape the daughter of a man in whose house he had been quartered. She was a child. As the father tried to interpose he kept the point of his bayonet on the man’s breast.” [See facsimile letter.]

Article 46 of the Hague Convention says, “*Family honour and rights, the lives of individuals and private property, must be respected.*”

## 2.—OUTRAGES ON WOMEN

“*It is proved that the Germans violated women.*”—Second Finding of the British Commission of Inquiry.

“NO LONGER MEN, BUT WILD BEASTS.”—An unsigned notebook of a German soldier (reproduced among the facsimile letters) says on its first page :



"Langeviller.\* August 22. Village destroyed by the 11th Battalion of Pioneers. Three women hanged on trees." [See facsimile letters.]

On the last, the tenth page, there is the following equally terrible story :

"In this way we destroyed 8 houses with their inmates. In one of them two men with their wives and a girl of eighteen were bayoneted. The little one almost unnerved me so innocent was her expression. But it was impossible to check the crowd, so excited were they, for in such moments you are no longer men, but wild beasts."

A German officer of the 178th Saxon Regiment reports that near Lisonges :

"A scout Marburg, having placed three women behind the other, brought them all down with one shot."

The following cases are from the records of the Belgian Commission :

"On Aug. 30, a patrol of Hussars amused themselves by firing at Catherine van Kerchove, seventy-four years of age, with the object of hitting her as often as possible without killing her.

"On Aug. 26 the 48th Regiment of German Infantry of the Reserve took Elleweyt. Nearly all the young girls were violated before their parents' eyes.

"At Beyghem Lieut. Kumer was in command when his men took a young woman to the vicarage in order to outrage her in the presence of the curé and his sister, under peculiarly horrible circumstances.

"In one of the first frontier villages at which the French troops arrived, in the first days of the War, they found the bodies of fifty naked women tied to the long wall of a barn. They had been slowly shot to death from the feet upwards.

"In the abbey of Leffe, a large number of women were held prisoners. On the third day they begged to know what must be paid for their release. 'Thirty thousand francs.' They got together fifteen thousand, imploring that this might be accepted. The Germans took it and then announced that all the women would be shot. At last they were released, after most of them had suffered the most abominable treatment."

At Corbeck Loo, the South American priest, Gamarra says, "the soldiers stripped women and men and placed them facing one another and made them run, and shot them while they ran."

OFFICERS AS BAD AS THE MEN.—Dr. Arthur Tacquin writes :

"Cases of outrage have been so common that no single village or town has escaped. In many cases the frantic woman or girl has been held down by the soldiers for the pleasure of their officers. Often the members of the victim's family, the husbands, the

---

\* It is doubtful if the German soldier has spelt the name of this place properly. It may be Longeville.

mothers, or the children, were tied hand and foot and made to witness the outrages inflicted upon their loved ones.

“In Brussels the Burgomaster Max himself had to interfere to put an end to the revolting orgies of German officers in the restaurants. At Charleroi similar scenes took place, and the officers did not even trouble to close the curtains.

“Even women who were enceinte were not spared; and the added torture of the presence of their husbands and children was by no means rare. A father was compelled to look on at Op-den-Berg, near Raemsdonck, while ten German soldiers worked their hideous will on his daughters.

“In a country house near Antwerp the owner had done all he could to serve his hosts with what they wanted. At dinner he was tied to a chair while his two daughters were stripped and made to serve the dinner naked. When the officers had done with them the wretched girls were thrown to the troops. One committed suicide and the other went mad.”

**SOME TERRIBLE CASES.**—The following eight cases are copied almost at random from the Report of the British Commission of Inquiry:

“Two women met me on the road to Hayne. I know them both. One told me that the German had raped her in her house and the other told me the same. The women were both together when they were raped. They were raped by a great many Germans. The house was quite full of them. Their husbands had been shot together after they had been raped.”

“On my way home I met Mrs. D., a neighbour. She told me that some German soldiers had driven her daughter up into the loft to rape her. She was 8½ months gone in pregnancy. Two of them raped her. The child was born the following day. The woman tried to go up after her daughter, but the Germans stopped her with their bayonets. The same day a girl of 16 named W. told me that two Germans had raped her. We were passing the flying ground outside Liège at Ans when I saw a woman perhaps 28 to 30 years old, stark naked, tied to a tree. At her feet were two little children about three or four years old. All three were dead. The woman’s whole bosom was covered with blood and her body with black marks. Both children had been killed by what appeared to be bayonet wounds. The woman’s clothes were thrown all about the place.”

“At midnight the four soldiers returned, and after two of them had searched the stable to see if any men were there, the four soldiers violated my mother-in-law and my sister-in-law. They held a revolver at the two women before violating them. My sister in law had with her a baby four months old.”

“We heard groaning and saw some Germans running off. We entered a wood where we heard the groaning and found a young girl naked on the ground and covered with scratches. She had fainted. Her clothes were under her. We carried her to a half-destroyed house and partly washed her to revive her. She told us she had been taken from a burnt-out village about 800 yards from the wood, and violated by six or seven Germans. The lower part of her body was covered with marks and scratches.

“The inhabitants were put in the church there. Among others I saw M. She was in a wild and demented state. While we were in the church some German soldiers came in. As soon as M. saw the German soldiers she began cursing them in a very loud voice,



She made it clear that she had been dragged into a wood by five German soldiers, and had been violated by these men. The German soldiers in the church were furious with M. and they tied her hands and feet together so that she could not move. After the Germans left, M. was put into an asylum in Louvain."

"Near Tremeloo I saw a woman seized by four German soldiers. They threw her on the ground in little copse, tore off her clothes and raped her—all four of them in turn. Having no weapon I was compelled to allow them to commit this act. The woman was struggling and screaming. Finally the soldiers went away and I went up to the woman and found her in a dreadful state. She was crying and groaning and lamenting. She told me that she had dug her nails pretty deep into one of the soldiers, and she had in fact a quantity of blood and bits of skin in her nails. I left the woman in the copse after consoling her as well as I could. I knew that she was in her own country.

"On the 17th September I met an Antwerp lady on the road between Brussels and Ghent. Her name was de S. I asked the lady to take a letter from me to my mother at Antwerp. She did so, and my mother told me that she had told her (my mother) the same story of rape which she told me."

"One of my chums, a man in the Corps, speaks French. At Wytshaete I went with him into a house in the village while we were there in order to cook. The woman was about 35. She said her husband and a son had been killed in action. She said the Uhlans had been to her house, and had taken most of her possessions, including money, and had knocked her furniture about. She was also outraged. Two other women from the same block of houses came round while we were in the house. They said that *practically every woman in the village had been raped.*"

**MORE GUILTY OFFICERS.**—Here are some cases in which officers were among the offenders:

"Immediately after the men had been killed, I saw the Germans going into the houses in the Place de l'Université and bringing out the women and girls. About 20 were brought out. Each of them was held by the arms. They tried to get away. *They were made to lie on tables which had been brought into the square.* About 15 of them were then violated. Each of them was violated by about 12 soldiers. While this was going on about 70 Germans were standing round the women including five officers (young). The officers started it. The ravishing went on for about 1½ hours. Many of the women fainted and showed no sign of life. The Red Cross took them away to the hospital."

"As I looked into the kitchen (from a loft) I saw three German soldiers, one officer and two privates. We saw the officer say something to the farmer's wife and saw her push him away. After five or six minutes the two soldiers seized the woman and put her on the ground. She resisted them and they then pulled all her clothes off her until she was quite naked. The officer then violated her while one soldier held her by the shoulders and the other by the arms. After the officer each soldier in turn violated her, the other soldier and the officer holding her down. After the woman had been violated by the three the officer cut off the woman's breasts."

"The officer told me to bring champagne. They had 10 bottles. After that they called for more bottles and invited another five or six officers and three or four private soldiers

to come in. They knocked the tops off the bottles and drank the wine. By this time they were all very drunk and were not able to drink any more, but were breaking the bottles which they made me continue to bring. Immediately my mistress came in one of the officers who was sitting on the floor got up and putting the revolver to my mistress's temple he shot her dead. The officer was obviously drunk. He wore a yellow cord across his breast and another one hanging over his arm. The other officers continued to drink and sing and did not pay great attention to the killing of my mistress. The officer who had shot my mistress then told my master to dig a grave and bury my mistress. My master and the officer then went into the garden, the officer threatening my master with his pistol. My master was then forced to dig the grave and to bury the body of my mistress in it. Before my mistress was shot the soldiers had been firing off their revolvers at the mirrors and the window panes. I cannot say for what reason they killed my mistress. The officer who did it was singing all the time."

RESULT OF AN AMERICAN LADY DOCTOR'S INQUIRIES.—Dr. Elizabeth J. van Slyke, of the New York Women's Hospital, writes that when she went to Europe with the American Red Cross, she did not believe the reports of the atrocities. But she decided to investigate. Her report is:

"I saw a number of women who had been terribly maltreated by the German soldiers. One woman about 40 years old, was in an indescribable condition, and both her little girls had been killed. I want the American women to know the truth. *Very few French and Belgian women in territories invaded by the Germans escaped attack.* The stories about the atrocities are true. I investigated them, and I know. I cannot speak too strongly on the subject."

The words underlined are so appalling that at first sight it may seem difficult to credit them. It will be seen, however, that they merely confirm Dr. Tacquin's statement.

Article 46 of the Hague Convention, let us repeat, says, "*Family honour must be respected.*"

### 3.—HUMAN SHIELDS FOR SOLDIERS

"*It is proved that the Germans have often violated the Rules and Usages of War, particularly by forcing civilians, including women and children, to march before them in order to act as shields.*"—Third Finding of the British Commission of Inquiry.

APPALLING STORIES.—At Eppegheem nearly the whole male population was made to march into action in front of the German lines. Here are some other cases:



"On Aug. 25, at the bridge of Lives, the Germans put the women in front of their columns.

"On Aug. 29, at He'reut, nearly 500 women and children, with two priests, were driven in the forefront of the German army to protect it from attack.

"The German troops before Termonde had fifteen civilians, five of whom were women, in front of their lines.

"At Hofstad they stripped a woman naked and compelled her at the bayonet's point to walk before them towards the Belgian lines.

"On Aug. 16 they stripped a girl and made her walk naked beside her father in front of them when they moved to the attack."

Article 23 of the Hague Convention says: "*It is particularly forbidden to kill or wound treacherously individuals belonging to the hostile nation.*"

#### 4.—THE KILLING OF WOUNDED AND PRISONERS

"*It is proved that the Germans have massacred wounded and prisoners and have frequently and grossly abused the flags and badges of the Red Cross, and have also abused the use of the white flag.*"—Third Finding of the British Commission of Inquiry.

AN HEROIC INCIDENT.—Among the facsimiles is a page from a German paper published at Jauer in Silesia. It contains on its front page a letter from a non-commissioned officer in the First Company of the 154th Regiment telling how French soldiers who ambushed the Germans from trees, a well known and perfectly justifiable military proceeding, were killed off as they fell wounded.

"They no longer need doctors," he says. "We give them no quarter. We bayonet the wounded. . . . A Frenchman asked for quarter. But he was nailed to the ground. I heard odd cracking sounds. They were blows from a gun on the bald head of a Frenchman, which a private was dealing vigorously. He was wisely using a French gun so as not to break his own. . . . They lay groaning and crying for quarter. But whether wounded slightly or severely, the brave fusiliers spare their country the cost of caring for many enemies."

"When evening came" these German heroes, "after a prayer of thanksgiving, fell asleep." The letter is endorsed at the end:

"Certified to be exact.

"De Niem, Leutnant und Kompagnie Fuhrer."

ASTOUNDING CONFESSIONS OF GUILT.—The following extracts from German soldiers' letters speak for themselves:

"Mutilations of the wounded were the order of the day. (Paul Ghôte, 9th battalion of Pioneers, 9th corps). [See facsimile letter.]

米國救助委員事務所前の餓へたる白耳義人の群れ  
原畫の説明には獨軍が白耳義人民に對し戰時稅一億九千萬圓と課せることを記せり、第百十七頁參照



HUNGRY BELGIANS OUTSIDE THE AMERICAN RELIEF  
COMMITTEE'S OFFICE

The drawing is entitled in the original: "A War tax of 190,000,000 yen has just been levied on Belgium." See page 83.



嚴冬に家なし

獨軍は白耳義に於て何等軍事上の必要なくて家屋二萬を燒棄せりと測算せらる。 第百五頁  
参照



THE HOMELESS IN WINTER

It is estimated that 20,000 houses have been burnt in Belgium without military necessity. See page 74.

"We took with us all the prisoners who could walk. Those who were seriously wounded in the head, lungs, etc. and could not stand received one more bullet to end their lives.—(Fahlenstein, 34th Fusillier, 11th Corps, August 28, 1914.)

"Sunday, 8th September, order to kill all the French except the wounded even if they are ready to surrender. (Heinrich Froehlich, non-commissioned officer of the 117th infantry regiment 18th Corps.)

"No quarter for the Turcos." (Vice-corporal Buchmann, 144th infantry regiment, 16th Corps.)

"The captain called us round him and said: 'Probably there are English in the fort we have to take. I should like, however, to see no English prisoners in our company.'" (Goettsche, non-commissioned officer, 85th infantry regiment, 9th Corps.)

"When we approached them certain of them raised their hands and cried out: 'Pardon, camarade.' What were we to do? We had been forbidden to make any prisoners." (Letter from a German soldier in the "Konstanzer Zeitung," 5th October, 1914.

"October 2nd. The Bavarians no longer make prisoners." (K. Barthel, sergeant in the 2nd company of the Foot Guards.)

"August 24th. Village of Ermeton. At least 500 prisoners were killed. The village was burned. We found bread, wine, butter, and preserved fruits. We washed ourselves clean of blood and cleaned our bayonets." (A soldier of the 1st Regiment of the Guard.)

In the report by the eminent Belgian medical man already mentioned he says:

"Among the wounded who came under my care was a Saxon law student very well educated. He told me that the company to which he belonged had killed to the last man a number of English soldiers who had surrendered, and that the German officers had enjoined them to make no English prisoners."

A GENERAL'S ORDERS.—But the crowning German military evidence is furnished by the following order issued on August 26, 1914, by General Stenger:

"From to-day onwards we take no more prisoners. All prisoners taken are to be killed. The wounded, whether they have arms or not, are to be killed. (Verwundete ob mit Waffen oder wehrlos niedergemacht.) Even prisoners already made up into convoys for transportation are to be killed. Not a living enemy must be left behind us.

"(Signed)

"The Lieutenant Commanding Company: Stoy.

"The Colonel Commanding Regiment: Neubauer.

"The General Commanding 58th Brigade: Stenger."

Article 23 of the Hague Convention says, "*It is particularly forbidden to declare that no quarter will be given.*" Yet there seems no doubt as to the authenticity of this order. Some thirty prisoners of Stenger's Brigade (112 and 142nd Regiment of the Baden Infantry) confirmed on



oath the statement that this order of the day was given them on the 26th August, in one unit by Major Mosebach, in another by Lieutenant Curtius, etc. The majority did not know whether the order was carried out, but three of them said they saw it carried out in the forest of Thiaville, where ten or twelve wounded French soldiers who had already been spared by a battalion were despatched. Two others saw the order carried out on the Thiaville road, where some wounded found in a ditch by a company were finished off.

**BELGIAN TROOPS' GHASTLY DISCOVERIES.**—The following evidence is taken from the Reports of the Belgian Commission :

“ A cyclist-rifleman was found at Orsmael hanged in a hedge.

“ On August 23rd, at Namur, German soldiers moved their own wounded from the private hospital of Dr. Bribosia, but killed two Belgian and two French wounded. They then set the hospital on fire.

“ Twenty-two Belgian soldiers were found dead in a wood near Baarbeck. Eighteen had been killed by bayonet thrusts in the face ; they had bullet wounds, but these were not dangerous, only sufficient to prevent them from escaping. But the four remaining Belgians, who had fatal bullet wounds, bore no traces of the bayonet.

“ On August 25th, the soldier Lootens, of the 24th of the Line found two Belgian soldiers bound to a tree still wearing their full equipment. Their coats were torn open, and it was clear that they had been bayoneted in the stomach. Their entrails were protruding from the wounds.”

**SUFFERINGS OF OTHER BELGIAN PRISONERS.**—Such stories can be multiplied freely :

“ Burm, soldier in the 25th Regiment of the Line, had his hands held in boiling water to make him give information. Another soldier near him had his head slowly twisted round until his neck was broken.

“ Lieut. Poncin, of the 18th Regiment of the Line, was tied up with wire and shot.

“ At Louvain on Aug. 24 a soldier was hanged on a street lamp.

“ On Sept. 6 Baekelandt, of the cavalry, was tied up and eviscerated with a bayonet. The same thing was done to two carabineers.

“ At Tamines an officer was tied to a tree, and a horse was harnessed to each leg. He was then pulled in sunder.”

Article 4 of the Hague Convention says, “ *Prisoners of war must be treated with humanity.*” Article 23 adds, “ *It is particularly forbidden to kill or wound an enemy who has surrendered.*”

As to attacks on hospitals, ambulances, and abuses of the Red Cross and the white flag, it is perhaps enough to say, after all the preceding horrors, that the mere summary of the evidence—not the evidence itself—in the British Report alone occupies two and half pages.

## 5.—LOOTING AND WANTON DESTRUCTION

*"It is proved that the officers of the German Army have ordered and approved of looting, and that this has frequently taken place, not because of any military necessity, but as part of a system of intimidation."*—Fourth Finding of the British Commission of Inquiry.

AMAZING CONFESSIONS.—We may begin with some extracts from German soldiers' letters :

"The village is plundered and sacked from top to bottom. There is after all some truth in what is said about German barbarity." (A soldier of the 78th Regiment, 10th Corps.)

"Everything is given over to plunder." (Spielman, 1st Infantry Brigade of Guards.)

"That day we threw incendiary bombs into the houses and in the evening we sang, 'Now thank we all our God' (Moritz Grosse, 177th Infantry Regiment).

"One village after the other in flames." (Reishaupt, soldier in the 3rd Bavarian infantry regiment).

"Plundered and burnt nearly all the houses." (Hermann Levith, non-commissioned officer of the 10th infantry regiment, 8th army corps 23 August, 1914).

"October 11th, 1914. We drink five or six bottles of champagne a day, and for underclothing we have nothing but silk. When one is in need of underclothing one has simply to go inside a house and change. When there are any people there they say, 'Monsieur, there is nothing left,' but for us the word 'nothing' does not exist. These poor people inspire pity. But war is war." (Fritz Hollmann, Cavalryman).

"At Mellier the great part of the time nothing was paid for. Beer was brought in cases for which a requisition receipt (which was without any value) was given. One has an opportunity of seeing the "bête humain" aroused in many soldiers. There was seen good cause to ask if the 'kultur' was not an external varnish. Bands composed of ruffians (Spitzbubenelemente) were stealing all they could lay hold of. They were frequently encouraged by non-commissioned officers. They ransacked the house like savages. All rules of right are abolished and we are greatly injuring our reputation.' (Erich, non-commissioned Reserve Officer).

"They do not behave like soldiers, but like common thieves, highwaymen and robbers, and are a disgrace to our regiment and Army." (Soldier of 65th Infantry of the Landwehr.)

"No discipline. The Pioneers are not worth much: the artillerymen are a gang of robbers." (A lieutenant of the 77th Infantry Reserve.)

"FORMAL ORDERS."—Here is a picture from Louvain :

"Groups of soldiers carried off their loot in wheel-barrows, while, for five days and five nights, pioneers systematically burned, house by house, the widest and richest streets. Very soon the town was an immense furnace. The corpses which bestrewed the streets poisoned the air. The artistic treasures which the centuries had bequeathed to us, the wealth accumulated by honest industry—all was destroyed by a savage soldiery acting



under formal orders. Amid this scene of ruin soldiers drunk with wine and 'glory' shouted and brawled."

The following from letters found on prisoners and dead need no comment:

"We went at it as if we were at drill under the orders and guidance of our officers and non-commissioned officers."

"17th August. A chateau belonging to one of the secretaries of the King. Our men had conducted themselves as veritable vandals. They had ransacked, and scattered all over the place. Everything was upside down, magnificent tapestries silk and china vases. This is what happens when men are authorised to requisition for themselves. They have carried off useless objects simply for the pleasure of pillaging." (An Officer of the 178th Saxon Regiment).

"The battalion of the Landsturm of Halle arrived, dragging with it all kinds of things, especially wine. Among them were many who were drunk. The battalion was drawn up in close array with the intention of breaking into the first houses to carry off anything under the name of 'requisition.' Officers went on in front to give a good example. There were numbers of drunken men. That day inspired me with a contempt which it is beyond me to describe." (Gaston Klein, 1st company of Landsturm, 29th August, 1914).

I have before me photographs of bank safes broken open by dynamite, etc. Here is an incident of this sort from Dinant told in the 11th Report of the Belgian Commission:

"Soldiers pillaged and sacked the houses of the town and broke open all safes, sometimes blasting them with dynamite. They entered the Banque Centrale, siezed the Director, Monsieur Wasseige, and demanded that he should open the safes. On his refusal they attempted to break them open. As they did not succeed they led M. Wasseige and his two sons to the Place D'Arme and shot them. Monsieur Wasseige's three younger children were held by soldiers and forced to witness the murder of their father and brothers."

THE STOLEN GOODS SENT BY OFFICERS TO GERMANY.—"Instead of the clocks so beloved by the Germans in the War against France in 1870," says an English writer, "the modern German soldier steals pianos. Observe the advance of Culture. He sent waggonloads of Belgian pianos to the Fatherland. Some were despatched to private addresses for officers. Others were sold at public auction in Cologne to swell the revenues of the State." There is plenty of evidence of this.

"From the chateau of Villers-Notre Dame the Duke of Gronau personally superintended the 'removal' of 146 plates, 236 enamelled spoons, three gold watches, 1500 bottles of wine, sixty-two chickens, thirty-two ducks, and a quantity of linen and children's clothes."

Even two of the Kaiser's sons are alleged to have sent private property to Germany. One of the medical men already quoted says:

"The looting of the houses takes place systematically. Motor-vans, furniture vans, and vehicles of all descriptions go from door to door, like moving day. Everything of value, furniture, pianos, works of art, paintings, and goods of all descriptions, are taken away and dispatched to Germany on the military railways.

"A striking illustration of this is given in a letter found on the body of a dead German officer. His wife says in this letter, 'I have safely received the beautiful furniture you sent me, but I still want a grand piano for my drawing-room.'"

CHAMBERS OF COMMERCE AND THE SPOIL.—But it is idle to hold individuals responsible. The arch-looter was the German Government, as witness the following naive statement in the "Frankfurter Zeitung":

"The goods of different sorts seized in the enemies' territories are in such large quantities that the difficulty of knowing where to put them increases day by day. At the request of the Minister of War all Chambers of Commerce have been asked to give all possible information with regard to storehouses, sheds, etc. which could be used temporarily to warehouse the spoil."

It is only necessary to add that Article 28 of the Hague Convention says that "*it is forbidden to loot a town or place even after it has been taken by storm,*" and that Article 53 runs: "*The army occupying a territory shall seize only the money, funds and valuables belonging exclusively to the State.*"

## 6.—SYSTEMATIC INCENDIARISM

"It is proved that the officers of the German Army have ordered and approved of incendiarism and the destruction of private property; that the German military authorities had made provision before the beginning of the War for the work of incendiarism, and that the destruction which took place so frequently was not due to any military necessity but was part of a system of intimidation."—Fifth Finding of the British Commission of Inquiry.

The Belgian Minister in Tokyo has pointed out that the German Army was probably the only Army in the world which was provided with a special incendiary corps. Mention has frequently been made of the incendiary tablets found on German soldiers. Here is a statement made by the Belgian military authorities, not about the tablets—concerning which there is plenty of information—but about other provision for the destruction of that private property which according to the Rules of War should be protected:

"At Termonde a company of soldiers had central reservoirs where each man carrying a pneumatic belt went to replenish with an incendiary liquid with which to sprinkle



the wood on the outside of the houses. Another man wearing a glove specially provided with a preparation of phosphorus passed in front of the houses which had been sprinkled and rubbed his glove on the wood. This set fire to the houses and permitted a whole street to be burnt in a quarter of an hour."

Another report shows the German soldiers pushing pieces of celluloid through holes in doors.

Article 22 of the Hague Convention says: "*It is particularly forbidden to destroy the property of the enemy except in cases when that destruction is imperiously required by the necessities of War.*"

## CHAPTER XII

### SOME FACTS AND A GERMAN COMMENTARY

#### GERMANY SELF CONVICTED

THE GERMAN WAR OFFICE AND THE SOLDIERS' DIARIES.—The conclusive character of the foregoing evidence is established by the fact that it is printed on the authority of (1) regularly constituted and highly responsible Commissions of Inquiry, (2) of neutral observers, (3) of the diaries of German soldiers. As to these diaries it should be explained that Article 75 of the German rules of field service recommends soldiers to keep such records. A book entitled, "German Crimes from German Evidence," has been compiled from the confessions of these German soldiers' diaries exclusively. It is noteworthy that when extracts from such diaries began to be published in that book and in the foreign press, the German military authorities, rendered uneasy as to the effect produced by the revelations, suspended Article 75.

THE MASS OF TESTIMONY.—The reader must clearly understand that the horrors I have reproduced on the preceding pages are but *a small part of what might have been printed*. The Report of the British Commission on German Outrages contains between *seven and eight hundred depositions on oath*. In the new Belgian Grey Book the words of the depositions on oath in regard to what happened at Dinant, Louvain and Andenne alone, extend to about *a hundred and twelve thousand words*. I frankly own that I have not read through the whole of either the Report of the British Commission or the Grey Book. There comes a point at which nausea supervenes. There comes a stage at which one feels that one must escape at all hazards from such a bath of filth. When I began writing this book I knew that the outrages had been numerous and vile. I have some first hand knowledge of them. I was in Holland during the first few weeks of the German invasion of Belgium, when the refugees were throwing themselves on Dutch hospitality. Later on, just before coming to Japan, I went to France, on behalf of the British Farmers' Committee which was sending stock, seeds and implements to the ruined farmers of the districts from which the Germans had been driven, and I spoke with these sufferers. But though



I knew the outrages had been numerous and vile, I had no notion that they had been so numerous and so vile. Japanese readers who remember the outrages committed by the German troops in Shantung in 1901 under von Falkenhayn, *until a few weeks ago, Chief of the Staff of the German Army, and now commanding on the Eastern front*, may have been better prepared.

ABNORMAL CRIME.—Those of my readers who consult the various works I have spoken of for themselves will be absolutely appalled. Take the outrages on women only. Outrages on women are, unhappily, the terrible concomitants of most Wars. But outrages so habitual and so awful in their character as have disgraced the German arms are something the modern world has scarcely known. It is not merely a case of immorality. The viciousness has been unnatural, bestial. At several places in my manuscript I have struck out well authenticated cases of outrage simply because, to those who had not read through many of the terrible narratives in the official works from which I have quoted, they would seem incredible. What is one to say of this continual cutting off of women's breasts, this repeated fouling with excrement and urinating on furniture, musical instruments, beds and dishes, of which I have given *merely sample cases*?\* There is only one thing to be said. It is that, if Civilisation is to be preserved, such villainess must be sternly punished.

THE BRITISH TROOPS' MORAL CODE.—The special iniquity of the German outrages is not only that they were so often cruel and filthy. It is that they were so habitual, that officers were so often concerned, and that, as yet, no case seems to have come to light in which an endeavour was made to hold the men in check. Contrast the fact that when the very first British troops embarked for France Lord Kitchener wrote a special personal letter to the soldiers pointing out as a supreme duty to have no relations with women and to avoid indulgence in drink. There have been continual reports from France as to the high respect in which the French country people hold the British troops because of their decent behaviour. There was, alas, only too conclusive evidence from Germany before the War that the standard maintained by a large

---

\* It is not only the Reports of the Commissions but all the books on the invasion of Belgium by private authors which are full of this sort of thing. Within two pages of Gustave Somville's "*Road to Liège*" there are two well authenticated cases of such depravity, and other equally indisputable cases occur throughout the book.

獨逸戰時財政の不思議、獨逸人怪んで曰く「百馬克の公債に應じて百馬の受領書を手に入れた、所が此受領書を  
持出して第二回の公債に應じ別の第二の受領書を貰つた第三回公債には此第二の受領書で應ずることが出來だ、  
はてな、夫れで僕は前後三回乃ち三百馬克の出資をしたことになるのか知らん、夫れで政府も三百馬克得たこと  
になるのか知らん、夫れも兩方とも何も得て居ないのか知らん」



# THE MYSTERIES OF GERMAN WAR FINANCE

Germany: "I got a receipt for 100 marks. I gave this for a second 100 marks, and I received a second receipt. For the third loan I gave the second receipt. Have I invested 300 marks, and has the Government got 300 marks, or have both of us got nothing?"



千九百十五年の秋に於ける塞耳比  
塞耳比は獨、奥、洪、勃、土の聯合軍の爲に蹂躪せられ白耳義に對して加へられたるものに譲らざる蠻行を加へられ  
たり



#### SERBIA, AUTUMN, 1915

Serbia was overthrown by the united forces of Germany, Austria-Hungary, Bulgaria and Turkey amid brutalities rivalling those inflicted on Belgium.

proportion of the German population as to relations with women was very low indeed. I may say that I have spoken with more than one Japanese professor who has remarked on the high percentage of syphilis among students at some German universities. Nothing has more deeply stirred thousands of British volunteers than the thought that they are fighting not only an evil militarism but a low moral code, which at all costs must be overthrown if Civilisation is to advance.

A COMMANDER TO HIS MEN.—Read, for instance, the following moving message which one British commander wrote to his men. He is a member of Parliament, a famous athlete and a German scholar :

“In matters of money, in our dealings with men and women, in the daily economy of life, let us see that we exercise honour and discretion, courtesy and self-restraint.”

Contrast also the spirit of this further passage, by the same commander, with the spirit of German military proclamations which have been quoted in this book :

“In our conduct towards the enemy it would ill-become to us to treat the War as some personal difference between Britons and Germans.

“It is something far finer than that. It is a battle of beliefs. We fight that liberty may live, that love may never perish from the earth.

“The leaders of most enterprises promise their followers good times. I promise you difficulties, discomforts, wounds, yes, and even death. I ask your loyal service for a sacred cause.”

SUBMARINE METHODS, BRITISH AND GERMAN.—And as it has been with the British soldiers, so it has been with the sailors. There is no space here for the scores of illustrative stories that could be told ; but the case of a young British submarine commander may be mentioned. Discovering that the crew of the Turkish steamer carrying munitions which he was about to sink did not perfectly understand the working of the apparatus for the lowering of their boats, he sprang aboard the vessel and himself helped them to get their boats down into the water!\* Not in that spirit of chivalry did the German submarine commander sink the “Lusitania” with 1,198 non-combatant men, women and children aboard, although she was not carrying either mounted or unmounted guns. Not in that spirit have the Germans struck medals to celebrate a deed which, as the Cologne “*Volkszeitung*” wrote, they “contemplate with joyful pride.”

---

\* The deed is the more noteworthy because the vessel was near the land, and shells might at any time have been thrown by the Turkish batteries ashore.



THE TERRIBLE SUMMARY.—To sum up, it is estimated that, in all Not far short of 5,000 Belgian non-combatants, of whom several hundreds were women, children priests and old men, were put to death.

That 20,000 houses were burnt without military necessity, and that from 13,000 to 14,000 civilians were deported to Germany.

Of the numerous assaults on women (not a few of them nuns) and all the other outrages and acts of violence, of the appalling destruction of property and the disgraceful robberies, it is impossible to furnish comprehensive statistics. But it is established that fires, looting and spoliation, occurred in at least 500 places and that in the province of Brabant alone not fewer than 16,000 houses were pillaged.

After a protracted examination of the various Belgian, French and British Reports, and other evidence already mentioned, together with a mass of Dutch, American and other neutral writing, I cannot but quote the words of the latest Belgian official publication:

*“Strong in its sense of the justice of its case, the Government of the King of the Belgians awaits with confidence the verdict of the conscience of mankind.”*

A GERMAN PRINCE'S ADMISSION.—And I add another phrase. It is not written by a Belgian or by an inhabitant of any of the countries of the Allies. It is written by a German, by Prince Max of Saxony, brother of the King of Saxony. Prince Max is a priest, and writing to a fellow German priest, the Roman prelate at Zurich, Switzerland, Baron von Mathies, he says:

*“Wie man das Belgischeland behandelt hat, schreit zum Himmel”*  
*“The treatment meted out to Belgium cries to Heaven for vengeance.”*

THE HEAVY CHARGE AGAINST GERMANY.—I have said at the beginning of this book that it is my desire to write with studious justice. I know, as everybody knows, that War cannot be made gently. As a great General of the American Civil War said, “War is Hell”! But many nations, including the Japanese, have been scrupulous, in waging War, to mitigate its inevitable horrors by strictly observing the Rules and Usages of War.

The damning charge against Germany is not merely that she began the present War by committing, in the Imperial Chancellor's words, “a wrong” against Belgium, and “a breach of International Law,” which was an offence against Civilisation.

The damning charge against Germany is that after having, as

recently as 1907, put her signature to the Hague Convention, which set out in the clearest and most unmistakable terms all the Rules and Usages of War, she defied these Rules and Usages *in every case in which she imagined that a military advantage was to be gained by doing so.*

Nor was this flouting of what *forty four nations* had solemnly agreed to regard as the Rules and Usages of War, in any way accidental, local or occasional. *It was persistent and consistent action, based on deliberate policy.*

**MORE GERMAN CONFESSIONS.**—The plain truth is that Germany believed that when she plunged into a European War she would be quickly and overwhelmingly victorious, and she was determined to make War, not as the conscience of the world had prescribed, but *as she liked.*

"A War energetically carried on," says the "*Kriegesgebrauch im Landkriege*," a manual published by the German General Staff,

"cannot be entirely confined to acts against the enemy under arms and against his means of defence. It should cause the destruction of his material and moral resources. No consideration can be given to the dictates of humanity, such as consideration for persons or for property. Ruthlessly to employ intimidation is a duty for every commander."

One thinks of that Von Clausewitz, the greatest German military author (1780-1831), who wrote :

"Whoever uses force remorselessly and without sparing blood has sooner or later the advantage if the enemy does not proceed in the same way. It is a vain and erroneous tendency to wish to neglect the element of brutality in War."

And there was General von Hartmann, an officer of the General Staff, (1817-1878), who in "*Militarische Nothwenbigkeit und Humanitat*" ("*Military Necessary and Humanity*") wrote :

"War will have to be conducted more recklessly, less scrupulously, more violently, more ruthlessly than in the past.

"Military effort requires that the combatant shall be entirely freed from the shackles of a constraining legality. Violence and passion are the levers of all warlike greatness.

"Every means without which the object of the War cannot be obtained is permissible. It follows from these universally valid principles that wide limits are set to the freedom and arbitrary judgment of the commanding officer.

"The deep misery of War must not be spared to the enemy State. Terrorism becomes a principle which is necessary from a military standpoint."

**BISMARCK'S PLEAS FOR KILLING PRISONERS.**—But there are plenty of people who have never heard of von Clausewitz and von Hartmann. They know, however, what the claims of Bismarck are to be regarded as a representative German. Let me transcribe, then, three passages from the sayings of Bismarck in the volumes of his adoring henchman, Busch :



"November 17—A rumour is mentioned to the effect that Garibaldi and 13,000 of his volunteers have been made prisoners. The Chancellor observed: 'That is really disheartening—to make prisoners of 13,000 francs tireurs who are not even Frenchmen! Why have they not been shot?'"

"December 1—Lieutenant von Soldern is describing a German victory: 'We made over 1,600 prisoners and the total loss of the French is estimated at four to five thousand.' 'I should have been better pleased,' said the Chief, 'if they had all been corpses. It is simply a disadvantage to us now to make prisoners.'"

Again, six weeks later:

"'If we cannot supply garrisons,' says Bismarck, 'we should from time to time send a flying column and shoot, hang, and burn.'"

VON HINDENBURG ON PITILESSNESS.—It may be said, perhaps, that these are people of yesterday. But the Chief of the Staff of the German Army, Field Marshal von Hindenburg himself, is reported in a Press interview as saying:

"Lodz is stricken with famine. That is deplorable, but it is good. The more pitilessly War is carried on the sooner it will be finished."

General von Disfurth, again, appears to have written to a Hamburg newspaper:—

"Every act of whatever nature committed by our troops for the purpose of discouraging, defeating, and destroying our enemies is a brave act and a good deed. . . . It is of no consequence whatever if all the monuments ever created, all the pictures ever painted, all the buildings ever erected, be destroyed, if by their destruction we promote Germany's victory. . . . War is war, and must be waged with severity. . . . They call us barbarians—what of it? We scorn them and their abuse. Let them stop talking of the cathedral of Rheims, and of all the churches in France that have shared its fate. These things do not interest us. Our troops must achieve victory. What else matters?"

"Das Internationale Landsgriegsrecht" declares that "*the whole town is guilty of the acts of every one of its inhabitants.*" Things may be done which are "*deliberate violations of the Rules of War.*"

But they are justifiable, says the "*Koelnische Zeitung*":

"If the guilty cannot be discovered the innocent must pay the penalty, not because they have committed a crime, but to prevent the commission of crimes. The devastation and the rivers of blood which flowed during the first day of the War in Belgium saved the great Belgian towns from the temptation to attack the weak armies of occupation that we had to leave there. Is there anybody in the world who would imagine that the capital of Belgium would have tolerated us?"

In respect of all the awful massacres, murders, outrages, cruelties, burnings and lootings, Germany is condemned, then, not merely by the various Commissions of Inquiry and the evidence of neutrals. *She is*

*condemned out of her own mouth. She has deliberately defied the most elementary of all the rules of the Hague Convention, Article 22, "The rights of combatants concerning ways of injuring the enemy are not without limits."*

"But the originality of the German crimes in this War," as an ex-French Minister of Justice says, "resides not in their motive, not in their barbarity, but in the doctrinal effort which their authors are making to attach these crimes to a scientific conception of War."

MORE REVELATIONS OF THE GERMAN WAR BOOK.—The French statesman's words are borne out only too completely by such passages in the German "*Kriegsbrauch im Landkriege*" as these:

Page 20. "It would be folly not to take advantage of the fact that the presence of *women, children, old people, wounded and sick* in a bombarded town must hasten its surrender."

Page 48. "The population is to be *forced* to tell what it knows about the enemy forces, resources and secrets. *Most writers of all nations condemn this. We shall do it nevertheless.*"

Page 50. "To ensure protection against attacks from the enemy population, *employ without compunction, any means of intimidation necessary.*"

Page 51. "A civilian *who has been forced to serve as guide* and proves untrustworthy is a criminal. *He owes obedience to the Power which occupies his country. Such a criminal must to punished by death.*

Page 54. "All destruction demanded by War, *however great it may be, is permissible.*"



## CHAPTER XIII

### THE ILL USAGE OF THE BELGIANS CONTINUED DURING THE OCCUPATION

#### 1.—HOW THEY HAVE BEEN ROBBED BY THEFTS, FINES AND TAXES

THE CLAIMS OF BELGIUM TO GERMAN CONSIDERATION.—We have seen that Germany has continually and of set purpose defied the Rules and Usages of War. But her crowning shame is that she was particularly ruthless in her treatment of *Belgium*.

Germany knew very well that she had declared War on Belgium without Belgium having committed any offence whatever against her. "Germany has nothing to reproach Belgium with," Herr von Jagow had said; "the attitude of Belgium has always been perfectly correct" Germany knew very well that, in modern times, nothing so disgraceful as a bloody invasion of an absolutely inoffending country had ever taken place. Germany knew very well that she had not only defied International Law but had committed an outrage on Humanity.

It might have been thought that every instinct of Civilisation and of right feeling remaining to her would have influenced her to observe most rigidly the Rules of War in Belgium and to make every effort to limit the suffering she was bringing on the country. But the contrary, as we have seen, was the case. Germany conducted the War in Belgium *with the utmost brutality*. It was, as she unblushingly told the Belgians it would be, "of a cruel character," "einem grausamen Charakter."

AFTER THE OCCUPATION.—It is again a damning fact that *even when Belgium was occupied, German ruthlessness continued*. "He who travels in Belgium to-day," a strongly pro-German Swedish author may well write, "must harden his heart."

The Hague Rules of War, which Germany signed, say that, "neither requisitions in kind nor services can be demanded except for the necessities of the Army of occupation."

The Thirteenth Report of the Belgian Commission of Inquiry finds, on the other hand that,

"cattle, raw materials, manufacturing equipment and machine tools have been carried off to Germany without any right.

The Report of the American Rockefeller Foundation is explicit:

"The invaders have requisitioned grain, provisions, cattle, horses, cotton, wool, raw as well as manufactured products, copper fixtures, the installation of factories, cars, benzine, and all kinds of implements useful in the manufacture of arms and munitions. In the smallest villages through which the Army passed, no less than in some of the great towns, all the houses left standing had been pillaged. In several of these houses the furniture which it was impossible to carry away was broken in pieces. As to requisitions or impositions of fines or destruction of property, the total must be enormous."

THE SENDING OF STOLEN FURNITURE TO GERMANY.—As to the sending of stolen furniture to Germany, a score of newspaper articles have recorded its shabby incidents and the participation of officers of the highest rank in the thefts. Here is a reproduction from a German newspaper of a transport agent's advertisement offering to transport furniture from Belgium to Germany.

THE HORSE THEFTS.—Public opinion all over the world has always held the horse thief in particular obloquy. Germany's record

as a horse thief is particularly disgraceful. The big wagon horses of Belgium are famous throughout the world. They were a source of wealth to Belgium. Germany alone used to buy these horses to the value of 24,000,000 francs every year. As soon as Germany got possession of Belgium, these horses, particularly stallions, breeding

**Kölnische Zeitung**  
 Dritte Morgen-Ausgabe

**Ueber Möbeltransporte**  
 aus den Hauptorten  
**Belgiens nach Deutschland**  
 und Oesterreich Ungarn erlittet Auskünfte u. Kostenanschläge  
**Spedition & Lagerhaus Akt. Ges. Aachen.**

10.—Advertisement in the "Cologne Gazette" of a Furniture Remover offering to take goods from Belgium to Germany.

メコロンガセット紙上白耳義より獨逸迄品物を  
 運搬すべしとの運送屋の廣告

mares and foals, were taken across the frontier wholesale. I have before me an advertisement in the "Deutsche Tages Zeitung" of February 2, 1915, of a sale in Germany of "a war booty of 260 horses and 54 mares."

THE SEIZURES OF MACHINERY AND GOODS.—As to the industrial ruin wrought in Belgium by the German administration, the Belgian



Government has officially stated that, even by January 1915, the value of machinery seized exceeded 6,000,000 yen. The worth of the cotton, hemp, rubber, wool, nickel, copper and leather seized, was stated at 10,000,000 francs. A list of seizures prepared by the President of the Antwerp Chamber of Commerce amounted to 140,000 francs. Even toys have been seized. In a certain number of cases vouchers were given to the owners of the goods requisitioned. How little these vouchers were worth may be judged from the following notice served on wood merchants:

"Whatever is in your possession, either on your own account or on the account of others, in the way of pine joists of 5 to 9 centimetres, as broad as possible and at least 4 metres long, or pine planks also as broad as possible are seized or requisitioned by the German Army Department and will shortly be exported to Germany. You are responsible for the preservation, warranty or insurance of the goods. The price will be fixed hereafter by the War Office at Berlin."

"TO ASSIST GERMAN TRADE."—"Everywhere," says a Report of the Belgian Commission of Inquiry, "raw materials have been carried away or are held up with a view to being used to assist German trade." Thus a firm of tanners were informed that the German authorities would remove the skins they had in stock and would compel them to cure 300 skins per month for export to Berlin. In addition to the goods seized, a neutral writer states that

"large supplies which have not been sent out of the country have been blockaded, that is to say, it is officially ordered that they shall not be sold but remain under the supervision of the Germans. It goes without saying that this export of goods which is in direct contradiction with the Hague Convention must paralyse all business and hasten complete impoverishment of the country, for no indemnity has been paid for a great part of these requisitions. In other words, after the War, Belgium, which was one of the richest countries in the world, will be one of the poorest, and every branch of industry and commerce in which she was in competition with German industry and commerce will be overthrown."

**FINES.**—It is not only by seizures of goods and of live and dead stock that Belgium is being impoverished. The fines and War taxes be must taken account of. First as to fines.

Malines was fined because the Burgomaster of the town forgot to inform the German authorities of the absence of the Archbishop. Brussels was fined because a policeman was not polite enough to an agent of the German Civil Administration.

**WAR TAXES.**—Now for ordinary War taxes. Mr. G. H. von Koch,



GERMANY AND DEATH



大砲の食物  
大砲の食物 (Kanonen futter) なる名詞を發明せるは獨逸なり、  
束にして運搬する所なり、圖は獨軍が其戦死者の衣服を剥ぎ死屍を四個宛一



### CANNON FOOD

It was Germany who invented the phrase "Cannon food" ("kanonen futter"). The drawing refers to a German military practice of stripping the clothes from their dead soldiers and tying the corpses up in fours for transportation.

a well known Swedish author, writing in the best known Stockholm daily paper, says,

"These taxes were £2,000,000 at Brussels, £2,500,000 at Antwerp, £500,000 at Courtrai, £2,000,000 at Tournai, and £3,500,000 in Liege.

"But all these taxes are relatively insignificant in comparison with War Tax which the Governor General imposed on December 10, 1914. This tax, contrary to the Hague Convention, reached the enormous sum of £1,600,000 a month, or £19,200,000 for the year 1915.

"It should be noted that this tax was not applied to the expenses of the Belgian State (for which a special tax had been imposed).

"The hope that this huge tax would be an end to the War taxes encouraged the Belgians to make superhuman efforts to pay the monthly sum punctually. But this hope was not realised. On November 15, 1915, the ruined country was gratified by a proclamation imposing a new monthly contribution of 2,000,000 marks until such time as new decisions could be taken, and this time payment had to be made in German money."

I reproduce part of the Official journal in Brussels imposing the contribution

# Gesetz- und Verordnungsblatt

für die okkupierten Gebiete Belgiens.

Wet- en Verordnungsblad voor de bezette streken van België.

Bulletin officiel des Lois et Arrêtés pour le territoire belge occupé.

BRÜSSEL

N° 27.

4. JANUAR 1915.

## BEFEHL.

Der belgischen Bevölkerung wird hierdurch eine Kriegskontribution in Höhe von monatlich 40 Millionen Franks für die Dauer eines Jahres auferlegt.

Die Verpflichtung zur Zahlung liegt den neun Provinzen ob, die für die geschuldeten Beträge als Gesamtschuldner haften.

Die Zahlung der ersten beiden Raten hat spätestens bis 15. Januar 1915, die der folgenden jeweils spätestens bis 10. eines jeden Monats an die Feldkriegskasse des kaiserlichen Generalgouvernements in Brüssel zu erfolgen.

Werden zur Beschaffung von Zahlungsmitteln seitens der Provinzen Schuldurkunden ausgestellt, so bestimmt deren Form und Inhalt der kaiserliche Generalkommissar für die Banken in Belgien.

Brüssel, den 10. Dezember 1914.

Der Generalgouverneur in Belgien,  
Friedrich von Bismarck.

11.—Order in German Government Gazette imposing the war  
Contribution of 40,000,000 francs

獨逸公報に發表されたる四千萬法の戰時稅納附命令

An announcement in the same official journal of fifteen days later, imposed a ten-fold contribution on Belgians absent from Belgium.



As this page goes to press, a telegram from Holland announces that the Germans have eclipsed their previous exactions by seizing a sum of about 300,000,000 yen in the Belgian National Bank.

Now let us see what the Hague Convention says:

*"Article 50.—No collective penalty, either as a fine or otherwise, can be required from the population on account of individual acts, for which they could not be considered responsible as a whole.*

*"Article 52.—Neither requisitions in kind nor services can be demanded except for the necessities of the Army of occupation.*

*"Article 53.—The army occupying a territory shall be allowed to seize only the money, funds, and valuables belonging exclusively to the State, the magazines of arms, means of transport, provisions, and generally all personal property of the State, which can be used for the operations of War."*

## 2.—HOW THEY HAVE BEEN STARVED

**EXTENT OF THE DEVASTATION.**—It has been estimated that "about a third of Belgium" was devastated by the German invasion. An American clergyman, writing in the *New York Outlook* in December of the year of the invasion, gives this picture:

"Belgian industry has stopped, even in those regions which have not been devastated. There are no trains for the public; the telegraph and telephone are reserved for the military authorities. The post does not work. All Belgians are forbidden to pass the Dutch frontier. A piece of silver is hardly ever seen. The currency consists of paper and nickel money."

**FED BY CHARITY.**—In February of the year after the invasion a German paper ("Vorwaerts") stated that a quarter of the people of Belgium were being fed by charity. In Brussels alone the number was nearly a quarter of a million. Nor is mere poverty the only source of Belgian suffering.

"Thoroughly to understand the Belgian problem," the Report of the American Rockefeller Foundation says, "it is necessary to insist on the sudden inactivity imposed on an active and healthy population. It is this that makes the situation of Belgium without precedent in history."

**REFUGEES ABROAD.**—As is well known, more than half a million of the Belgian population, mainly elderly men, women and children, are still refugees abroad, principally in Holland and Great Britain.

When I left England most of one's friends seemed to have Belgians in their houses. Recently several thousand refugees in England have had wooden houses built for them. After the War these will be taken down and shipped to Belgium. Last year there were at least 100,000 Belgians receiving British hospitality. These refugees have prepared a book called, "The Book of Belgium's Gratitude." In addition to the food, service, clothing and pocket money privately provided in Great Britain and in Holland, large sums have been raised, particularly in America, for the relief of the Belgians. A single British organisation, the National Committee for Relief in Belgium, has raised about 20,000,000 yen. Some 300,000 yen a week is subscribed from British sources to alleviate the distress in Belgium. The people of New Zealand have contributed at the rate of 2.50 yen per head. One American weekly newspaper has sent 20,000 barrels of flour. Not far short of 100,000 yen has been raised in Japan.

A NEUTRAL'S REPORT IN 1916.—It is well to hear the report of a neutral writer, Mr. von Koch, already quoted of how things stand in Belgium. Writing early this year, (1916) he calls attention to the amazing declaration of General von Bissing that "we (the Germans) have saved the country from great economic misery."

"If the whole situation were not so tragic," says Mr. von Koch, "it would be impossible to help smiling at such nonsense. We must remember that, *according to the Hague Convention, the Germans are obliged to support the Belgian civilian population.* Renouncing their obligation in this respect, the Belgian Relief Committee imports about 100,000 tons of wheat and flour each month and thus Belgium and the North of France are saved from famine. The only part played by Germany in this affair of capital importance to the country is that she allows others to fulfil the duty which the law of nations imposes on the invader."

THE PENNILESS MILLION AND A HALF.—Mr. von Koch says the "absolutely penniless alone constitute at least 20 per cent. of the population of the country, that is about 1,400,000 persons."

"Beyond the food given, there are gifts of clothes. Without the help of the Americans a large part of the Belgian population would be wearing only rags or be naked. It is by direct gifts of clothing or cloth to the value of £550,000 that lack of clothing has been avoided. The Commission's last appeal says, 'This winter 3,000,000 persons must be provided with clothes by private gifts.'"

FORCED LABOUR.—Mr. von Koch says German attempts to get the people to resume work were a complete fiasco.



"It is true that, *in direct opposition to the Hague Convention*, the Germans did not fear to use force in order to induce the Belgian workmen to help in ammunition work, but the attempt was in vain. After all kinds of pressure and all threats had failed many hundreds of workmen, as a punishment for their refusal, were taken to Germany to be employed on forced labor. That is what took place, for instance, in Luttre.

"At a railway establishment at Malines the workmen, in spite of the fact that they had been shut up in the workshop for several days, persisted in defending their country by folding their arms. The whole town was closed to provisions and to all communication with the rest of the country."

**INCRIMINATING PROCLAMATIONS.**—Mr. von Koch says he has read several proclamations by the Governor General of coercive measures which he was obliged to withdraw because the workmen and the rest of the population refused to obey. In a proclamation, posted up on June 10th, 1915, and signed by Lieutenant General von Westarp, one may read among other things:

"Under pretense of patriotism and *relying on the Hague Convention*, some factories refused work for the German Army, which proves that the population wishes to make difficulties for the German military administration. Consequently I declare that I shall repress all attempts of this kind by all the means in my power."

The workmen had refused to make barbed wire for the German trenches.

**STRIKE OF BELGIAN WOMEN.**—The women took the same stand as the men about this.

"Thus a general strike broke out in the textile manufactories in the district of Ghent when the women learn that their work was used to make sand-bags for the trenches."

Neither has German rule succeeded in making the railway men go back to work, in spite of the bait of high wages, in some cases as much as £2 a day.

**CONFISCATION OF FOOD.**—To this story some deplorable facts recently published by the British Foreign Office may be added. As many as eleven steamships of the American Commission for Relief in Belgium have been sunk by mines planted in the North Sea by the Germans in an area where mine laying could only injure Dutch trade and Belgian relief vessels. This has seriously hampered the work of relief. The British Foreign Office states that if the Germans would keep the promise given a short time ago not to confiscate Belgian food products, which they have been doing until recently, there would be no lack of supplies for the suffering Belgians. Relief officials declare that there are many reports of attempts on the part of the Germans to in-

terfere with the work of the local relief committees with a view to forcing the inhabitants to work for the invaders.

“TWO THIRDS OF THE ORDINARY DIET.”—The American Relief Commission states that the response has been wonderful the world over to the call for money with which to feed the Belgians. But even with this generous help, in addition to the financial support from the Allied Governments, the Commission is only able to put the Belgians on approximately “two-thirds of the ordinary diet.”

3,000,000 DESTITUTE.—“There would be wholesale starvation within three or four weeks if the importation of food into Belgium were stopped” is the carefully considered opinion of Mr. F. C. Walcott, a well-known American who went to Belgium at the request of the Rockefeller Foundation to investigate the work of the Commission:

“Of the seven millions in Belgium three millions are practically destitute, and they have to stand in line from one to three hours a day for a pittance of food. I have seen thousands of people lined up in the snow, or rainsoaked and chilly.

“Almost one-half of the population of Belgium has been reduced to this existence of daily waiting in line for a starvation ration. There is another stratum of society, the middle class, just above the poorer working people, which is only partially destitute; but even these must swallow their pride and stand in the long lines every day for a supplementary ration of food.”

DOG'S FLESH AT 50 SEN A POUND.—A Dutch journalist who has succeeded in making a comprehensive tour of Belgium says that “everywhere” he found signs of “great suffering.”

“Economically the situation of the population is deplorable. Some of the most necessary articles of food, such as beans and rice, are entirely lacking. In some places potatoes have been unprocurable for three months. In the suburbs of Antwerp even dog meat costs a shilling a pound.”

FURTHER ROBBERY.—And still the Germans continue their disastrous policy of squeezing money. New requisitions are constantly being made.

“The city of Brussels is now compelled to pay £2,400 per month for the lodging expenses of German officers billeted in private houses and for improving the furnishing of their apartments.

“In addition to this the Germans do not hesitate to rob the Belgians in the most barefaced manner. For instance, when bills for gas and electricity supplied to the German official departments were rendered, they notified the city authorities of their intention to pay only 20 per cent. of the fixed tariffs.



**WHERE THE CROPS GO.**—It appears from another report that the Military Governor of Belgium ordered the registration, confiscation, and storage of the whole of the 1915 crop. The cash prices paid for horses are below their value, sometimes by as much as one-third. The slaughter houses at Brussels alone provide from 18 to 20 tons of fats weekly for the Army, while so large a proportion of the population is starving. All oleaginous grain in the country is requisitioned, and in some districts the cultivation of sunflowers is compulsory.

**FURTHER REQUISITIONS.**—In September 1915 there was a general confiscation of metals and all copper and nickel money was withdrawn, zinc coinage being substituted. Textile products are requisitioned throughout the occupied territory. Trade in cotton is suspended and all stocks have to be declared, as well as those of wool and linen. All the walnut trees which can be made use of for the manufacture of rifles have been cut down and other trees are being depleted at an alarming rate.\* All the stocks of cement which existed before the War were requisitioned. The Germans are making use of foundries, chemical factories, coal mines, sawmills, cement factories, electrical works, motorcar factories, railway shops, and shipbuilding yards.

**FURTHER INTERFERENCE WITH THE WORK OF RELIEF.**—As I complete this account, the British Government has had once more to intimate that the facilities it gives to the American Relief Commission for the importation of food may have to cease because of General von Bissing's interference with the work of relief. In a protest addressed to the American, Spanish and Dutch Ministers in Brussels, the British Government says:

"The German authorities have promised solemnly to abstain from all interference in the work of relief. Yet openly, by decrees issued, they seek to secure that Belgians shall be enabled, by the maintenance thus afforded them, to work for their enemy and so postpone, by their own labor, the restoration of the freedom of their country."

**THE BAYONET FOR BELGIAN WORKMEN.**—A decree complained of has a provision under which workers can be forcibly taken to places of employment.

"Many workers were forcibly taken from their houses at the point of the bayonet, while, in the absence of the workers, members of their family were taken as hostages.

---

\* Article 55 of the Hague Convention says, "*The occupying State shall regard itself only as administrator and usufructuary of the forests.*"

Some recalcitrant workers were deported to Germany, where they were compelled to clear forests and dig trenches\* under condition inimical to health and under the penalty of cruel punishment."

It was quite lately admitted by the Prussian Ministry of War that "great quantities of provisions have been transferred from occupied territory to the interior of Germany."

### 3.—HOW CIVIL JUSTICE HAS BEEN DENIED

"It is particularly forbidden to declare extinct, suspended or void in law the rights or right of action of enemy citizens."—Article 23, Hague Convention.

An illustration of the fact that the brutality and injustice which characterised the German invasion of Belgium continued during the occupation of the country is to be found in the spirited declaration which the head of the Brussels bar, M. Theodor, presented to the German authorities on February 17, 1915. After stating that "everything about the judicial organisation in Belgium is contrary to the principles of law," he says that "Belgian civilians are punished for violations of laws which have never been proclaimed and of which therefore they knew nothing." He complains that there is "no free defence for the accused" and that evidence is constantly brought before the courts by "secret service men." He speaks of preventive arrests and long detentions in prison. He declares indignantly that the Brussels court house, contrary to the Hague Convention, has been turned into a barracks.

"Will it be said that we are living under martial law? But our armies are far away; we are no longer in the zone of military operations. Nothing here menaces your troops, the inhabitants are calm."

As this protest had no effect, M. Theodor presented himself before the authorities, accompanied by representatives of the bar of all Belgium, and once more denounced the injustice to which a people which had not been included in the German Empire was being treated.

"We are not annexed. We are not even vanquished. Our army is fighting. Our colours float alongside those of France, England and Russia. The country subsists. She is simply unfortunate."

Not long after this second protest, says an American writer, "M. Theodor was arrested, deported to Germany and

---

\* Article 44 of the Hague Convention says, "*Army compulsion on the population of occupied territory to take part in military operations is forbidden.*"



"if now living, is suffering imprisonment for the offence of defending the oppressed civilian population from a system of espionage, courts-martial and secret executions, which in their malignity should excite the professional jealousy of Danton, Marat and Robespierre."

Such was the condition of affairs in Belgium when Edith Cavell was arrested on August 5th, 1915.

#### 4.—A TYPICAL INSTANCE: THE MURDER OF MISS CAVELL

"Edith Cavell has taught the bravest man among us a supreme lesson of courage."—British Prime Minister, Nov. 2nd 1915.

HOW MISS CAVELL WENT TO BRUSSELS.—Edith Cavell was one of the many girls of a generation inspired by the lifework of Florence Nightingale, the founder of military nursing. She became Director of the School of Nurses at Brussels in 1906, being attracted to Belgium by the fact that she had spent some of her school life in Brussels.

At the outbreak of the War Miss Cavell was living with her mother in England. Constrained by an imperious sense of duty, she exchanged the security of her native country for her post of danger in Brussels. "My duty is there," she said.

HER FIRST ENCOUNTERS WITH GERMAN GENERALS.—In order that there may be no doubt as to the impartiality of my account of the circumstances of her death, I shall confine myself to the data furnished in a statement of the facts by a distinguished American jurist in the "New York Times":

"When the German army entered Brussels, she called upon Governor von Luttwitz and placed her nurses at the services of the wounded under whatever flag they had fought. The services which she and her staff rendered many a wounded and dying German should have earned for her generous consideration.

"But early in these ministrations of mercy she was obliged by the noblest of humanitarian motives to antagonize the invaders. Governor von Luttwitz demanded of her that all nurses should give formal undertakings, when treating wounded French or Belgian soldiers, to act as jailers to their patients, but Miss Cavell answered this unreasonable demand by simply saying: 'We are prepared to do all that we can to help wounded soldiers to recover, but to be their jailers—never.'

"On another occasion, when appealing to a German Brigadier-General on behalf of some homeless women and children, the Prussian martinet answered her with a quotation from Nietzsche, 'Pity is a waste of feeling, a moral parasite injurious to the health.' She early felt the cruel iron will of the invader, but, nothing daunted, supervised the work of the three hospitals and gave six lectures on nursing a week."

## REMARKABLE INCIDENTS OF THE CAVELL CASE 89

THE EFFORTS TO KEEP THE CASE SECRET.—It is a noteworthy fact that special pains were taken to keep the proceedings against Miss Cavell secret. It was *only after she had been a month in prison* and the *second inquiry* had taken place that the American Legation, which had charge of the interests of British citizens in Belgium, heard of her arrest. During all this time the German authorities by their secrecy had succeeded in staving off inquiry.

When the matter at length came to the knowledge of the American Minister he wrote to the German Governor to inquire if the report were true. The conspiracy of silence continued. *The Minister received no reply for a fortnight.*

When he did have a reply it stated that his application to be allowed to provide counsel for Miss Cavell was refused.

Even *the counsel who acted under the instructions* of the German authorities—he was a naturalised German—*did not see Miss Cavell before her trial.*

It is significant that this counsel also failed to keep his promise to advise the Legation as to the charges that would be brought against Miss Cavell.

It is equally significant that he objected to the Legation sending a member of its staff to the trial on the ground that such an act "*would cause great prejudice to the prisoner because the judges would resent it*"!

It is again significant that his conception of his duty was such that the American Legation never heard that the trial has taken place until the day after, and then only from an outsider. In fact, the Legation has had no communication of any sort from this tool of the German court until this day!

MISS CAVELL'S OFFENCE.—The offence with which Miss Cavell was charged—she frankly admitted what she had done—was that she had enabled some of the French and Belgian wounded soldiers whom she had nursed to escape to Holland instead of permitting them to be taken as prisoners of war to Germany. But paragraph 90 of the German Military Code specifies that the offence for which death may be inflicted is, "*guiding soldiers to the enemy*" ("*dem Feinde Mannschaften zuführt.*") For example, if an enemy's soldier shelters in a farmhouse, and the farmer, knowing the roads, guides him back to the enemy force, that would be an offence for which the farmer might be shot. But it is obvious that only by a strained interpretation of this law could Miss Cavell be considered to have "*guided*" the refugees



she helped on their way to Holland. Moreover in view of her humanitarian services to German wounded, her public services of a lifetime, her personal disinterestedness, not to speak of her sex, there was every argument for taking a lenient rather than a strained view of her conduct.

When she was asked by her judges as to her reasons for sheltering fugitives she replied that she thought that if she had not done so they would have been shot by the Germans. In so thinking she had every justification. A few months before (on August 25, at Namur) had not German von Bulow issued a proclamation saying?—

“Before 4 o'clock all British and French soldiers are to be delivered up as prisoners of war. At 4 o'clock a rigorous inspection of all houses will be made. Every soldier found will be shot.

THE COURT MARTIAL INDEFENSIBLE.—It should be borne in mind that Miss Cavell's offence was, in any case, not committed in and she was not tried in the zone of actual warfare. Brussels was miles away from the fighting. It is obvious then that there was no excuse under International Law for a court martial. In the American Civil War a similar military commission once sought to hold a trial in Indianapolis of civilians accused of treason, but the United States Supreme Court sternly repudiated this form of military tyranny.

THE ATTEMPT TO KEEP THE SENTENCE SECRET.—On October 11, when the American Minister first heard of the conclusion of the trial, he wrote to appeal to the “generosity and humanity” of the Governor General, (Baron von der Lancken) and of the military governor, Baron von Bissing. The director of the political department of the military government, who was also communicated with, told the American Minister that, though the trial was concluded, “no sentence had been pronounced and there would probably be a delay of a day or two.” A “positive assurance” was given that the Legation would be “fully informed as to the development of the case.” The same evening at 6.30 it was repeated that “sentence had not yet been pronounced.” This was only however a part of the continued plan of secrecy. As the Minister learned later in the evening from unofficial sources, sentence had been pronounced at 5, and *the execution was to take place that night.*

THE APPEALS FOR MERCY.—Immediately the Secretary of the American Legation went to Baron von der Lancken and asked as a favour that mercy might be shown. He took with him the following moving letter from the American Minister:

"I am too ill to put my request before you, in person, but once more I appeal to the generosity of your heart. Stand by and save from death this unfortunate. Have pity on her."

This note was accompanied by an official appeal on behalf of Miss Cavell, based on a lifetime of humanitarian service and the "commendable straightforwordness" which she had shown at the trial in furnishing the very information by which she was condemned. Baron von der Lancken replied that it was Baron von Bissing who "had discretionary power to accept all appeals for clemency." To Baron von Bissing, to whom similar appeals had been sent by the American Minister from his sick bed, the Secretary of the Legation went.

THE SLIGHT ON THE AMERICAN LEGATION.—It was represented to the German authorities, though this should hardly have been necessary, that the plea of the American Legation for Miss Cavell might well be accepted in view of the services of that Legation to the Germans in Belgium at the beginning of the War. Thousands of Germans had returned in haste to take their places in the German Army. The American Legation provided more than 10,000 women and children with food and money and saw them safely transported to Germany. The Legation said that its appeal for the life of Miss Cavell was the "only request" it had made to the German authorities for any favour in acknowledgment of its services to the German refugees. But these services were not all the advantages that Germans had received at American hands. By the immense American subscriptions for feeding the destitute Belgians, a great burden had been taken off German shoulders. In view of the American Minister's illness, the Spanish Minister joined personally as well as officially in the appeal for mercy. Baron von Bissing's reply is beyond comment: "He must decline to accept your plea *or any representation* in regard to the matter."

THE EXECUTION.—Miss Cavell was summarily executed *at 2 in the morning* of the day following her trial, that is, contrary to the civilised usage in the case of the vilest criminals, *within nine hours of her condemnation*.

As if no possible circumstance of brutality should be omitted, a final request of the American Legation that permission should be given for the dead body of the victim to be taken away from the prison for private burial was ruthlessly refused.

The testimony of the clergyman who was admitted to see Miss



Cavell just before her execution is that she "died like a heroine with no fear or shrinking, and with no bitterness towards anyone."

THE KIND OF MAN VON BISSING IS.—If the reader asks for an explanation of the severity of General von Bissing in the case of Miss Cavell, it would seem to be found in the fact that the Military Governor of Belgium thought that his action would strengthen the German occupation. News of the recent successes of the Allies in Flanders and in France had reached Belgium and had caused a perceptible ferment. It seemed desirable therefore to show severity, and the execution of a well known Englishwoman promised, according to his reasoning, to be regarded as a lesson. We have to remember what sort of man General von Bissing is. He is the man who on August 29, 1914, issued a proclamation, for the benefit of the 7th Army Corps, in which the following passage occurs :

"It is no doubt to be regretted that in repressing these infamous acts it should be impossible to spare human lives, and that isolated houses as well as flourishing villages, and even entire towns, should be annihilated, but this should not provoke misplaced sentimentality. All that we may destroy is, in our eyes, less in value than the life of a single one of our brave soldiers. That is self evident, and indeed, properly speaking, it is not necessary to mention it.

"Whoever speaks here of barbarity commits a crime. Rigorously to carry out a duty is to obey a mandate of a high Kultur, and in that matter the population of the enemy's country has only to take a lesson from our army."

GERMAN CONDUCT AND "ANTI-GERMAN CONDUCT."—Six months later as Commander of a prisoners' encampment in Germany, he issued another proclamation saying :

"In an order of the day, I recently appealed to the public not to display false and misplaced sentiments of sympathy towards the prisoners of war. You should show more of a German conscience.

"Must I again repeat this remonstrance? It would seem so. According to the reports which have been submitted to me, all kinds of dainties, and in particular chocolates, have again been offered to the prisoners. If these warnings should remain without result, recourse will be had to exemplary punishment in order to put a stop to this anti-German conduct."

When we are thus enabled to grasp what "anti-German conduct" is, we begin to have some inkling of what true German conduct—according to the von Bissings—may be.

## CHAPTER XIV

### THE LIE AS TO THE MOTIVE FOR THE INVASION OF BELGIUM

#### GERMANY'S REAL AIMS DISCLOSED

THE ALLEGED IMPREGNABLE FRENCH FORTS.—Another damning fact against Germany has still to be recorded. It is that not only did she commit an outrage on Treaties and humanity by invading Belgium, *she lied as to her motive in attacking France through Belgium.* As we have seen in Chapter IV, Germany said that she attacked France through Belgium because she wished to gain a military advantage over France. But there was another reason.

The Belgian Minister in Tokyo has pointed out very forcefully that the big mortars that destroyed the Belgian forts of Liège and Namur, could just as well have destroyed the French forts on the Franco-German frontier. Everybody remembers that, when the Germans at last entered France through Belgium, and brought the Austrian mortars against the French forts of Maubeuge, they crumbled as quickly as the Belgian forts had done. Indeed, no French fort has been able to stand against them. Verdun has maintained its 200 days' defence not by reason of its forts but by reason of its new earthworks.

WHY WAS GERMANY WILLING TO RISK WAR WITH GREAT BRITAIN?—There is another point. Germany knew very well that if she invaded Belgium there was every probability of Great Britain entering the War. Why was Germany willing to take the grave risk of adding Great Britain to her enemies? *The only possible explanation is that Germany was determined to secure possession of Belgium and that she thought that if it was once in her possession it would be difficult for Great Britain to take it from her.* It is always to be remembered that when Germany began the War she was firmly convinced that by means of her surprise attack, the celerity of her movements, her overwhelming strength and her superior equipment and munitionment, she would be through Belgium in a day or two and in Paris in a few weeks. A secret Army Memorandum of March 19, 1913, which came into the possession of the



French Government, expressed the German conviction that they would annihilate their enemies "at one swoop."

NEW LIGHT ON THE CHARGES AGAINST BELGIUM.—As we have seen, Germany made baseless allegations against Belgium that she had not scrupulously maintained her neutrality. It was anticipated that these charges would make a great impression on public opinion. But they failed to make any considerable impression. As a matter of fact, *no impartial person who closely examines the published diplomatic documents of 1914, can believe for a moment that German statesmen and German publicists themselves attached much weight to the charges against Belgium.* It was soon realised, indeed, that it was impossible to make out before the world a case for the absorption of Belgium in Germany on the ground that she had infringed her neutrality. So a new line was taken.

GERMANY'S CONCEPTION OF BELGIUM'S DUTY.—The Germans began to say, as they had said so often in past years, that *it was Belgium's duty to join herself to Germany*, and—they now added—that it was Germany's noble duty to see that Belgium did as she ought to do!

"Even if Belgium had intended to maintain an honestly neutral attitude," writes a well known member of the Reichstag, Dr. Naumann, "one might have asked how far that little country has the right to remain outside a reorganisation which will mark an epoch in the history of the world!"

How often have we not read in German speeches and writings such arguments as are to be found in, for example, this extract from a well known German review?—

"The noble Germanism must conquer new provinces. Antwerp, not against, but with Hamburg and Bremen; Liège with the arms manufactories of Hesse, of Berlin, of Souabe; Cockerill linked with Krupp; Belgian and German iron, coal and tissues under one rule. From Calais to Antwerp, Flanders, Limburg and Brabant, just beyond the line of fortresses of the Meuse, all Prussian."

ADMISSIONS IN HIGH PLACES.—No less a personage than the Regent of Bavaria also let slip the truth about German policy in a speech in which he declared that Belgium and Holland must be united to Germany because it was necessary for Germany to be master of all the mouths of the Rhine.

Even the German Minister for Foreign Affairs, Herr von Jagow, had gone the length before the War of trying to sound France about the future of Belgium, by declaring that the small States were destined to "disappear or gravitate into the orbit of the Great Powers." Only

when he saw the impression made by his declaration did he hasten to say that he had merely expressed his personal opinion.

REVELATIONS OF A SECRET DOCUMENT.—As to the immediate means of getting possession of Belgium, read the Memorandum on “The Aim and Obligations of our National Policy” in connexion with the strengthening of the German Army, dated March 19, 1913, which came into the possession of the French Government:

“In the next European War it will be necessary that the small States shall be forced to follow us or be subdued. In certain conditions their armies and fortified places can be rapidly conquered or neutralised. This would probably be the case with Belgium and Holland. The situation with regard to the small States will be vital a question for us.

“Our aim must be to take the offensive with a large superiority from the first days. For this purpose it will be necessary to concentrate a large army, followed up by strong Landwehr formations, which will induce the small States to follow us or at least to remain inactive, and would crush them in the event of resistance. *An ultimatum with a short time limit to be followed immediately by invasion would allow a sufficient justification.*”

Which is precisely what Germany did in the case of Belgium.

THE “CONSECRATED” INVADER.—In a despatch from Berlin of May 6, 1913, General von Moltke is quoted as saying:

“We must put on one side all commonplaces as to the responsibility of the aggressor. When War has become necessary it is essential to carry it on in such a way as to place all the chances in one’s own favour.”

As to the spirit in which the Germans entered Belgium, what did Major Bister von Strang say in a proclamation?—

“And now you, presumptuous little people, you pretend to stop us—you to whom we had promised peace and protection provided you did not stop us in our great work. And now you make common cause with our enemies. It is as if you attacked a priest carrying the Holy of Holies. We are consecrated by the grandeur of our destinies!”

He was only echoing his Kaiser. No German smiled when in 1905 the Kaiser said:

“We are the salt of the earth. God has called upon us to civilize the world.”

The matter was put perfectly by Professor Schönerer: “We are not only men; we are more than men because we are Germans.”

GERMAN NOTIONS AS TO THE FUTURE OF BELGIUM.—Some people may have got the notion that it was only the Emperor, the soldiers and the fire-eating professors who thought in this way. The contrary is the case. Last year two petitions or manifestoes were presented to the German Chancellor. The first was from six large socie-



ties which have an immense membership—the Farmers' League, the German Peasants' Union, the Christian Peasants' Union, the Central Association of German Manufacturers, the Union of German Manufacturers, and the Imperial German Middleclass Association. The other document received 13,000 signatures and purports to emanate from "leaders of German thought." Let us begin with the "leaders of German thought." They say:

"Of Belgium we must keep firm hold politically, militarily and economically. Belgium means a prodigious increase of power to us. We lay special stress on the inhabitants being allowed no political influence."

THE NEW GENGHIS KHAN.—The agricultural, industrial and middle-class manifesto is equally certain that "Belgium must be annexed." It calls attention to the fact that Belgium and the North of France between them produce more than 40,000,000 tons of iron ore. "All the sources of economic power, including properties great and small must pass into German hands." A German journal develops the programme:

"In a time of the mass movements of armies we must not shrink from mass movements of population. The Kaiser must carry out on a great scale a policy of transplanting adopted by the Assyrian and Babylonian kings. Why not drive out the Walloons of Belgium to France, Algeria, Morocco, Brazil, and occupy the country with Germans?"

It may be said that, with Allied successes, the German Chancellor has lately repudiated some schemes of annexation. It may also be said that a number of leading men in Germany have protested against "annexation lunacy." But even these other "leaders of thought" are insistent on "the extension of the Eastern frontier and substantial guarantees on the West."

AN HISTORICAL PARALLEL.—It is no new thing in the world's history for a militarily powerful race to have a conception of its relations to small States such as fills the German mind. The whole attitude and action of Germany towards Belgium is strangely paralleled, as some one has pointed out, in that attitude and action of ancient Greece towards Melos which brought Greece to her doom. Here is the story as told in Thucydides' brief and severe narrative:

"In cool and measured language the Athenian envoys explain to the Melian Senate that it suits their purpose that Melos should become subject to their empire. They will not pretend—being sensible men—that the Melians have done them any wrong, or that they have any lawful claim to Melos, but they do not wish any islands to remain independent. It is a bad example to the others. The power of Athens

獨逸の媾和提議  
英國、佛蘭西、露西亞に其手を取られたる獨逸、僕が現在手に入れて居る物丈けを呉れるならば僕は君等を赦して  
やらふ」



#### GERMANY'S PEACE PROPOSALS

Germany (in the hands of Great Britain, France and Russia): "If you will let me keep what I have I will let *you* go."



軍國主義に捉はれたる文明  
獨逸軍國主義著述家中最も有名なるベルンハルダー曰く「武力は最高の權利なり、戦争の審判に依りて決せらるゝ處は皆正當なり」



#### CIVILISATION IN THE GRIP OF MILITARISM

The most popular of German military authors, Bernhardi, wrote: "Might is the supreme right. What is right is decided by the arbitrament of War."

is practically irresistible. Melos is free to submit or to be destroyed. The Melians answer as best they can. 'Is it quite safe for Athens to break all laws of right? Empires are mortal; and the vengeance of mankind upon such a tyranny as this—?' 'We take the risk of that,' answer the Athenians; 'the immediate question is whether you prefer to live or die.' The Melians plead to remain neutral. The plea is, of course, refused. At any rate they will not submit. They know Athens is vastly stronger in men and ships and military skill; still, the gods may help the innocent; ('That risk causes us no uneasiness,' say the envoys; 'we are quite as pious as you'); the Lacedaemonians are bound by every tie of honour and kinship to intervene ('We shall of course see that they do not'); in any case they will fight and hope rather than accept slavery. "A very regrettable misjudgment," say the Athenians; and the War proceeds to its hideous end. They put to death all the Melians whom they found of man's estate, and made slaves of the women and children. And they sent later 500 colonists and took the land for their own. And the same winter the Athenians sought to sail with a greater fleet than ever before and conquer Sicily. This was the great Sicilian expedition that brought Athens to her doom."

Was it over the crime of Athens, it has been asked, that Euripides was brooding when, in the spring following Melos, he produced his "Trojan Women" with its splendid denunciation,

How are ye blind,  
Ye treaders down of cities; ye that cast  
Temples to desolation and lay waste  
Tombs, the untrodden sanctuaries where lie  
The ancient dead, yourselves so soon to die!

Or we might quote Aeschylus: "Greatness is no defence from utter destruction when it insolently despises justice."



## CHAPTER XV

# GREAT BRITAIN'S EFFORTS TO LIVE ON GOOD TERMS WITH GERMANY AND HOW THEY WERE STEADILY THWARTED

## THE STRANGE STORY OF THE NAVAL NEGOCIATIONS

A POSSIBLE EXCUSE FOR GERMANY.—I am very anxious not to conclude this book without taking full account of any argument that can possibly be urged on Germany's behalf. Obviously, the only possible argument is this: "It is true that Germany has behaved deplorably in breaking the solemn pledges of her Treaties and her diplomatists not to infringe the neutrality of Belgium. Further, it is proved beyond any shadow of doubt that Germany has behaved vilely in Belgium. But there are perhaps some palliating circumstances if Germany can by any means show that the War against France, Russia and Great Britain was forced upon her."

Alas, we have now come to the most damning point of all against Germany. *Germany made the War.*

HOW GREAT BRITAIN CEDED HELIGOLAND.—The European diplomatic history of the past generation, like the diplomatic history of the weeks immediately preceeding the War, is one long story of concessions to Germany by Great Britain, France and Russia.

About the time the twentieth century opened, Great Britain, for the sake of living on good terms with Germany, had made her, in an adjustment of frontier questions in Africa, the valuable gift of the island of Heligoland. The cession was sharply criticised in the British press, and Heligoland is now of enormous value to Germany at the head of the minefields behind which the German fleet seeks safety.

But this was only one of a long series of British attempts to secure a sound basis for Anglo-German good will.

A NAVAL CHALLENGE TO GREAT BRITAIN.—It is unnecessary to say that the feature in modern German policy which before the present War caused such apprehension as might exist in the minds of English people in regard to Germany, was caused neither by the growth of

Germany's commerce nor by her desire for a great position in the world—what was called, a place in the sun. What was a source of such anxiety as existed was *the continual development of the German Navy*.

Why this was so is easily understood. When the first big increase in the German Navy was made by the German Navy Law of 1900, the world naturally asked, Against whom could this new fleet be used if not against England? The question was asked even in the Reichstag. The official explanation was that Germany must be strong enough at sea for even "the strongest naval Power" to be unable to challenge her with confidence. Nothing is more certain than that Great Britain had no desire whatever to challenge Germany.

AND WHY?—One of the sanest of British writers\* has pointed out, however, that the great and continuous increases in the German Navy were regarded by public opinion as a challenge to Great Britain :

"The frontiers of Germany are, in the main, land frontiers. Those of England are on the sea. The British Empire is, in Seeley's phrase, 'A world-wide Venice with the sea for streets.' In the matter of food-supply Germany is in large measure self-supporting, or fed overland. Great Britain might speedily starve if she lost command of the seas.

"There is thus no comparison, as Sir Edward Grey said in Parliament in (1909) 'between the importance of the German Navy to Germany, and the importance of our Navy to us. Our Navy is to us what their Army is to them. To have a strong Navy is not the matter of life and death to them that it is to us.'

"Germany was already by far the strongest military Power in the world. To appreciate the legitimate apprehension which her naval ambitions caused, it is only necessary to reverse the case, and to ask what would have been felt and thought in Europe, if Great Britain, already the first Naval Power, had set to work to build up a vast standing Army-comparable with that of Germany herself."

There is another point. Much was made in the Reichstag and the German press about the need of a strong German Navy to protect German shipping; but the proportion of German shipping to British shipping was only as 5 is to 21.

GREAT BRITAIN'S FIRST OFFER TO GERMANY.—In 1899 Great Britain offered to diminish her programme of shipbuilding if the other great Powers would do the same. An International Conference, called by the Tsar with the object of reducing armaments, endorsed the plan. Germany's reply was to adopt in the following year a new Navy Law embodying a programme which would almost double the German Navy! In 1906 Germany added six large cruisers to this programme.

---

\* Sir Edward Cook, ex-editor of the "Pall Mall Gazette" and "Daily News," and author of a life of Ruskin in many volumes, and other biographies.



**SECOND BRITISH OFFER.**—In spite of this, as the Tsar was calling a second International Conference, Great Britain determined the same year to set a good example. She accordingly reduced her programme of shipbuilding (which had been laid before Parliament the previous year) by 25 per cent in battleships, 33 per cent in submarines and 60 per cent in destroyers. The Kaiser's reply was to tell the British Ambassador in Berlin that he would not be represented at the Conference if disarmament was proposed. King Edward and then Lord Haldane went to Germany and tried to do what they could to influence the Emperor in joining with Great Britain in limiting armaments, but without result.

**THIRD AND FOURTH BRITISH OFFERS.**—The next year the British Premier announced, still in view of the Tsar's Conference, that the British Government would still further reduce its naval estimates if a similar disposition were shown by other Governments. But nothing could be done in Germany and the Tsar's second Conference came to nothing. Note, however, that at that Conference the British Government went the length of offering to exchange naval estimates in advance with any Power, in the hope that such action might perhaps ultimately lead to a reduction in international naval expenditure.

In 1907 the Emperor had to pay his return visit to King Edward. He expressed friendly feelings and was well received, but public opinion could not but be surprised when the next German naval programme was modified in order to hasten the building of four ships of the largest type.

**FIFTH BRITISH OFFER.**—In 1908 King Edward again visited Germany and negotiations were renewed. But the Kaiser haughtily declared that no discussion about naval armaments with a foreign Government would be tolerated. He said he would go to War first. In self defence, Great Britain, which, as has been seen, had substantially diminished her ship building, had to raise her naval estimates for 1910. But in announcing these estimates the Government proposed, in order to prevent misunderstandings and to allay suspicions between Germany and Great Britain, that the naval attachés in Berlin and London should be allowed from time to time to see the actual stage of construction of the big ships. This proposal was refused by Germany.

So much, for the moment, for the way in which the sincere attempts of Great Britain to diminish by a mutual limitation of shipbuilding the risk of a collision between the two countries was rebuffed by Germany.

## CHAPTER XVI

### HOW GREAT BRITAIN TWICE PREVENTED WAR

#### GERMANY MAKES HER PURPOSE PLAIN

GERMAN AGGRESSION IN MOROCCO.—Now for the diplomatic attitudes of Germany and Great Britain during this period. Great Britain's gift of Heligoland to Germany has been noted. For the greater peace of Europe, Great Britain had also a, few years after 1904, determinedly settled all outstanding difference with France. Among other adjustments, Great Britain, which had had interests in Morocco for 300 years, gave France, as far as she was concerned, a free hand there. Two other Mediterranean Powers, Spain and Italy, did the same. Prince von Bülow expressed Germany's lack of interest in Morocco, where indeed the business of German traders was very small in comparison with British and French commerce.

Soon, however, the fall of Port Arthur and the battle of Mukden showed the weakness of France's Ally, Russia. Germany saw her chance. She suddenly discovered much greater interest in Morocco. The Emperor made two warlike speeches and then went himself to Morocco and actually proclaimed himself there the champion of Moroccan integrity!

GREAT BRITAIN PREVENTS WAR.—This was eclipsed by a demand for the resignation of the French Foreign Minister for having maintained a Colonial policy inimical to Germany! France was unprepared for War and the sea fight of Tsushima had finally destroyed all hope of Russia being able to help her Ally. France had to accept the inevitable. The Foreign Minister resigned and Germany received equal commercial rights in Morocco. Had Great Britain, in her desire to maintain the peace of Europe, not felt it her duty to intimate that, "in the event of an unprovoked attack upon France, popular feeling in England would not suffer her to be left unsupported," the Kaiser would probably at this time have declared War.

WAR AGAIN PROVOKED BY GERMANY.—Later on, Germany tried, twice over, to get a foothold in Morocco, melodramatically sending a gunboat to the desirable port of Agadir where she had not even a single



trader ! In the end, after War had again threatened, Germany was bought off with a valuable concession of part of the French Congo, rich in rubber and particularly valuable to Germany in relation to her other African possessions.

A FURTHER GERMAN THREAT.—In 1907, Great Britain following up her settlements with Germany and France, arranged all her outstanding differences with Russia. The next year Germany distinguished herself by threatening Russia with War if she took any action against Austria Hungary's disturbance of the political situation in the Balkans by her annexation of Bosnia and Herzegovina in violation of the Treaty of Berlin.

GERMANY'S ATTEMPT TO DETACH GREAT BRITAIN FROM THE ENTENTE.—The year after, 1909, Herr von Bethmann Hollweg, who had succeeded Prince von Bulow as German Chancellor, initiated negotiations with Great Britain which are *extremely significant in view of what happened in 1914*. He intimated to Great Britain that Germany was ready to make proposals for a naval arrangement, but that discussion on that subject could be profitably undertaken only as part of a general understanding based on the conviction that neither country had hostile or aggressive designs against the other. Great Britain met the overtures cordially, but with an honest proviso. It was that a general Anglo-German understanding should not be to the hurt of any other Power with whom Great Britain was on good terms. (Great Britain had not of course a Treaty with any Power except Japan—merely good understandings). "One does not make new friendships worth having," said Edward Grey, "by deserting old ones." There was no reason, he said, why Great Britain's good understanding with France and Russia should prevent a similar good understanding with Germany.

But it soon became perfectly plain that what Germany wanted was an understanding which *did* involve the breaking off of Great Britain's friendship with France and Russia. The Chancellor's naval proposal proved to be vague, meagre, even shadowy. The total number of ships to be built by 1918 was not to be reduced. All that was to happen was that the number of battleships would be diminished at the beginning of the period between 1909 and 1918, and be raised equivalently later !

PROBABLE RESULT OF GREAT BRITAIN ASSENTING.—But there was no doubt whatever of Germany's requirements in return. There

was to be a declaration (1) that neither Great Britain nor Germany had any idea of aggression, and (2) that in the event of an attack made on either Power, the Power not attacked should remain neutral. To the first condition, Great Britain had, of course, no objection. But the second condition was plainly dangerous. Germany was firmly allied with Austria-Hungary. If, desiring War with Russia, Germany incited her close Ally, Austria-Hungary to attack Russia, and then on the plea that she must come to the assistance of her Ally, also attacked Russia, France as the Ally of Russia, would have to side with Russia. Thus, when the extraordinarily developed military strength of Germany and Austria-Hungary had overcome Russia, it would be turned against France. France would be crushed, and French (as well as Russian) goodwill for neutral Great Britain would be destroyed. Finally, there would be nothing to prevent the victorious Central Powers attacking Great Britain. Furthermore, and *this is well worth noting in view of what afterwards happened in 1914*, such an understanding as Germany proposed to Great Britain would hold back Great Britain from resisting Germany if she advanced on France through Belgium.

GERMANY RENEWS HER EFFORTS.—Great Britain had no other course open to her than to decline a German proposal which offered so little and asked so much. But Great Britain gave in 1909 several notable indications of her desire for easier relations with Germany, and particularly expressed her willingness to negotiate on subjects of common interest such as the Bagdad railway, to which Germany attached great importance.

The following year, 1910, the German Government reopened negotiations with a naval proposal of the vaguest character and renewed proposals for a political understanding of a perfectly clear character. What is highly significant in the course of the somewhat protracted conversations which followed is this. On the one hand, the German Government carefully avoided coming to any definite naval arrangement, and in the end summarily declared, by the mouth of the Imperial Chancellor in the Reichstag, that "any control" is "absolutely impracticable." On the other hand, the German Government kept pressing for a political understanding which would leave Germany free as far as Great Britain was concerned to make an unprovoked attack on France or Russia.

GREAT BRITAIN'S UNGRUDGING ATTITUDE.—What Germany



was capable of in this connexion had been seen in the Agadir incident already mentioned. War on France by Germany had been only avoided by the declaration of the British Government (for the second time in connexion with Germany's high handed behaviour towards France in regard to Morocco) that she would not be indifferent in a quarrel foisted on France.

When France and Germany reached an agreement, however, Sir Edward Grey once more expressed a strong desire for improved relations between Great Britain and Germany, and said there would be no grudging attitude on the part of Great Britain.

**HOW A PEACE MESSENGER WAS RECEIVED.**—In 1912 Lord Haldane, a man peculiarly acceptable to Germany, was sent a second time as an unofficial plenipotentiary to the Emperor. This messenger of friendship was welcomed by an announcement in the Reichstag of great increases not only in the Navy but in the Army! The naval increase alone involved an expenditure of £12,000,000.

The German Government's request to Lord Haldane was, as might be expected, for a political understanding. Lord Haldane as naturally asked the Emperor, the Chancellor and Admiral von Tirpitz, what was the sense of trying to bring about a solemn agreement of amity if Germany at the same moment was going to increase her Navy as a precaution against Great Britain, and Great Britain, as was to be expected, was going to increase her Navy correspondingly as a precaution against Germany. The German Government's answer was to persist that without a general political agreement there could be no naval agreement. In the same breath, however, the German Government intimated that in return for an acceptable political agreement there could be no reduction in the increased naval programme, only some temporary retardation. And even that naval understanding was not to be a written document, not even a "scrap of paper" but only a verbal understanding!

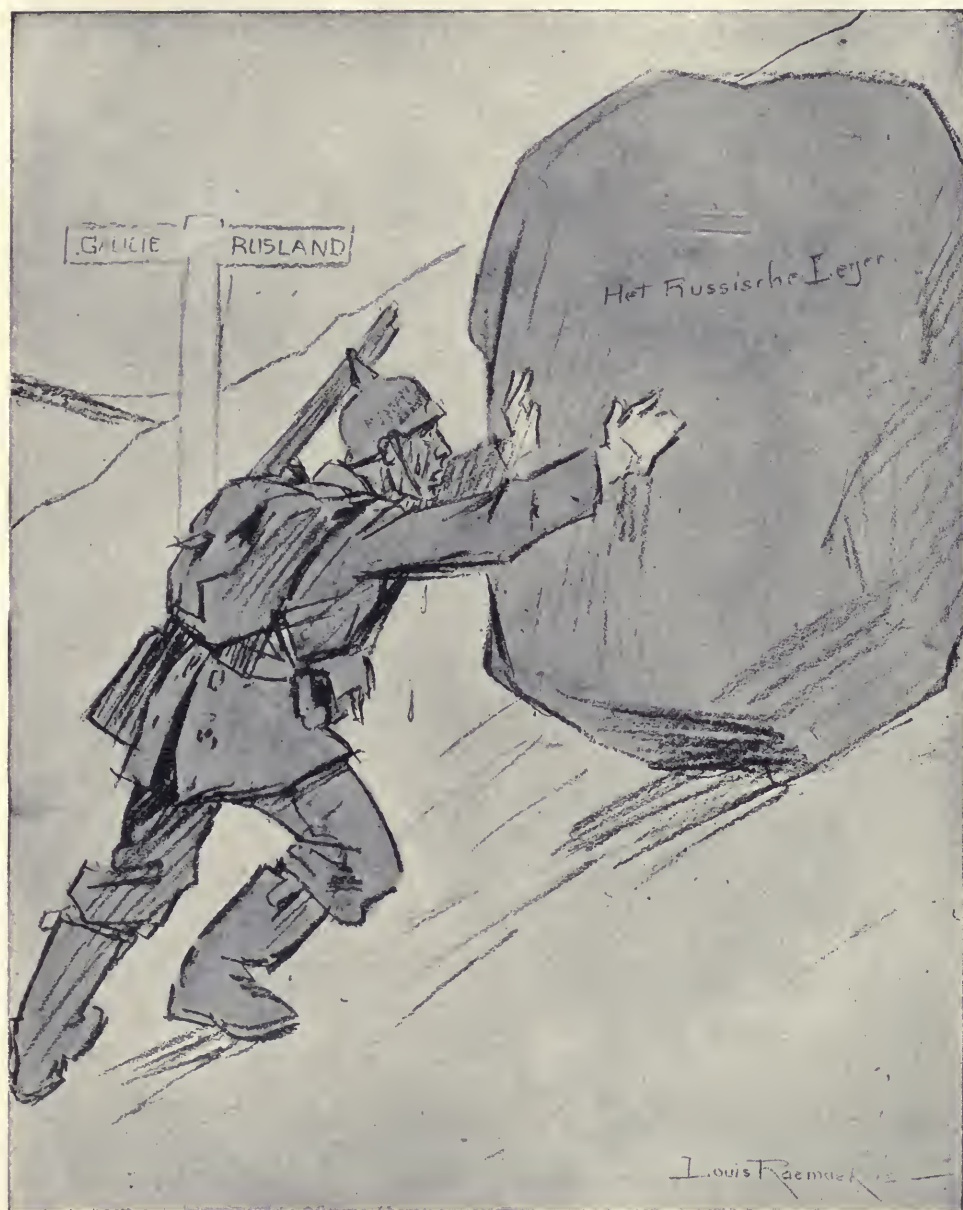
**GREAT BRITAIN OFFERS AN ANGLO-GERMAN AGREEMENT.**—As to a political understanding the British Cabinet offered the following:

"The two Powers being naturally desirous of securing peace and friendship between them, Great Britain declares that she will neither make nor join in any unprovoked attack on Germany. Aggression upon Germany is not the subject and forms no part of any Treaty, understanding or combination to which England is now a party, nor will she become a party to anything that has such an object."

Germany would be asked, of course, to sign a similar undertaking. But Germany would not agree.

シ、  
フ、  
ア、  
ス、

神話にシ、フ、ア、スが神の罰を蒙りて重き石を山の上に押し上げることな命せられたるが此石は山の上まで上ぐれば又再び元の所へ落來り斯くて押し上げれば落ち永劫止む時なしとあり、恰も此神話のシ、フ、ア、スの如く境洪軍が露軍を露境へ押し戻せば再びカリシヤに押し寄せ來るなり



### SISYPHUS

In the legend Sisyphus was condemned to push uphill a stone which always rolled down again. Since the drawing was made the stone has rolled down out of "Rusland" (Russia) into "Galicie" (Austria Hungary).



「木の葉の落つる(秋)前に平和は来らん」  
千九百十五年の春カイセルは其軍隊に斯の如く傳へたり而して來りし平和は是れ死の平和なりき



“BEFORE THE LEAVES FALL YOU WILL HAVE PEACE”

From a speech of the Kaiser to his troops in the Spring of 1915. The peace that came to them was the peace of death.

GERMAN ATTEMPT TO SECURE BRITISH NEUTRALITY.—*The truth was, as the German Ambassador in London ultimately said, what the German Government wanted was a pledge of British neutrality in the event of Germany being engaged in War.* In the words of the sober and authoritative writer already quoted, Germany desired that "the Triple Entente should be broken up and that Germany should be left to deal with France, Russia, or Belgium, free from any risk of England concerning herself in the matter."

SIR EDWARD GREY'S FRANKNESS.—Sir Edward Grey was perfectly frank with the German ambassador. There was no aggressive design in British policy, he said. France knew well that if she acted aggressively against Germany no support would be forthcoming from Great Britain. Into an agreement embodying those points, Great Britain was ready to enter. But she could not bind herself in advance to remain neutral whatever might happen. A day might conceivably come when a German Government might desire to crush France. If England bound herself in advance to stand aside, she might, after seeing France crushed, have to fight by herself later on. Germany, it should not be forgotten, was greatly increasing her military and naval armaments, and had in recent years threatened both France and Russia with War.

STILL FURTHER BRITISH OFFERS TO GERMANY.—After the collapse of these negotiations Great Britain might have been excused for dropping the subject of a naval arrangement with Germany. But the British Government realised that in an honest decision not to add to the naval strength of Germany and Great Britain lay the best security for peace. Great Britain therefore made yet another effort in 1912 and again in 1913. Mr. Churchill in introducing the naval estimates brought forward a proposal for a "naval holiday." He announced that if in a given year Germany would build no warships Great Britain would do the same.

"In this way without negotiation, bargaining or the slightest restriction on the sovereign freedom of either Power, relief might be obtained from the strain which the world was enduring."

It will be observed that this proposal, in meeting the objection to "restriction on sovereign freedom," had taken note of a point urged by the German Emperor. It is significant of the sincerity of Germany's attitude towards the preservation of peace that this proposal shared the fate of all the other British proposals and was rejected.



Nevertheless, though it proved impossible to make progress along the line of direct negotiation with Germany, Sir Edward Grey continued to express himself in a friendly way towards Germany. He said, too, how pleased he would be to see Russia (an Entente Power) come to an agreement with Austria (an Alliance Power). Upon the adoption of such a line of action depended the best hope of European peace. Similarly, speaking in the House of Commons (March 13, 1911), he said,

“We have the strongest desire to see those who are friends on good terms with other Powers; we regard it without jealousy and with satisfaction.”

**GREAT BRITAIN'S REASONABLE ATTITUDE.**—In the early summer of 1914, on the very eve of the War, Sir Edward Grey came to an agreement with Germany as to the Bagdad railway. Nothing could show more clearly that Great Britain had no desire to prevent the legitimate expansion of German influence. Indeed, in a leading Review, one of the most distinguished of British Colonial Administrators and African pioneers\* outlined plans for the Germanisation of Asia Minor.

**VISITS OF STATESMEN AND EDITORS TO GERMANY.**—Note should also be taken of the fact that Lord Haldane had not been the only semi-official messenger of good will to Germany. Mr. Winston Churchill and Mr. Lloyd George both went to Germany with the object of removing misconceptions in high quarters and bringing about a better understanding. Again, with a view to enlightening German public opinion as to the sincere desire of the British people for friendly relations with Germany, a party of editors went to Germany and later brought over a party of German editors to Great Britain. Mention might be made too, of the way in which three or four of the most influential journals in Great Britain, throughout a considerable period, made a practice of putting German views before their readers. One London daily journal even printed a little article in German every day for some years.

To sum up. Great Britain, as we have seen, had realised the folly of the old animosities which existed between herself and France and between herself and Russia. Thanks to Agreements which did not bind her in any way to aid France or Russia in War, she lived in sympathy with their progress and development, and on several occasions the world benefited by her sane relations with them. Great Britain desired nothing

---

\* Sir Harry Johnston, G.C.M.G.

better than to get on the same sane footing with Germany. She tried to bring about that desirable state of things by the practical method of securing an equitable abatement of the naval rivalry between them. We have seen that her efforts were protracted and patient, and that they failed.

THE SECRET OF GERMANY'S UNWILLINGNESS TO REDUCE ARMAMENTS.—Why did Germany resist these friendly proposals for reduction of the naval stress which was the real cause of any friction which might exist between Great Britain and Germany?

Why did Germany, while so steadily refusing all overtures as to a radical solution of the difficulty between Great Britain and Germany, by the simple method of a common reduction of naval armaments, persistently endeavour to secure the neutrality of Great Britain in the event of Germany and Austria Hungary being at War with France and Russia?

There can be only one answer. As we shall see beyond question in a later Chapter, *Germany, who had so long prepared for War, now meditated War.\**

---

\* That the object of the German Government was to hoodwink Great Britain while showing an apparent willingness to negotiate is frankly admitted in Prince Bülow's "*Deutsche Politik.*"



## CHAPTER XVII

### GERMANY'S GREATER AIMS

#### PLANS FOR WORLD DOMINION

AFTER THE WAR OF 1914.—Why did Germany meditate War? Let one of the most responsible and most cautious historical writers in Great Britain, Dr. G. W. Prothero, editor of the leading British review, the "Quarterly Review," answer\* :

"The attention of Great Britain had been so long concentrated on the growth of the German Navy that it failed to observe what has been for the last fifteen years or more the fundamental aim of German policy.

"A study of Austro-German behaviour in regard to the Balkans and of the possibilities open to German ambitions, combined with an examination of the German mind as displayed in a long series of political writings, points to the conclusion that the domination of the Nearer and Middle East was the essential object of their diplomacy and their gigantic military preparations.

"I do not mean that the statesmen of Berlin aimed at nothing else—far from it. The eventual absorption of Holland and Belgium, with German-speaking Switzerland and other countries or parts of countries; the conquest of the French, Dutch, and Belgian Colonies; the diminution of France and Russia, not to speak of the destruction of British sea-power and the overthrow of the British Empire—all these came within their purview as ultimate objects. But what seemed attainable within a calculable time was the mastery of the Ottoman Empire and the lands that lie between it and the frontier of Austria-Hungary; and at this they have consistently aimed. In regard to the Balkans and the Turkish Empire they were repeatedly ready, if need were, to go to War.

"Once masters in those territories, the German Powers would obtain what they wanted for their economic growth, throw open a vast region to German enterprise and capital, exclude Russia from the Mediterranean, and menace their chief rival, Great Britain, in the most vulnerable portions of her Empire.

"Russia would undoubtedly resist, and would be aided by France ;

---

\* In his book, "German Policy before the War."

but, for all the talk (for home consumption) of the Russian bugbear, Berlin was not afraid of France and Russia combined; and England might be—and to a large extent was—lulled into security. The pacific attitude of the British Government, and its persistent efforts to arrive at an understanding with Germany, (vide previous Chapter) had doubtless fostered this belief.

“The attack on France and Russia was but a preliminary step, masking the real aim. This could not be attained without the overthrow of those Powers, but such a victory would be, after all, only a means to an end. The frontiers on either hand once secured, the forces of Germany—military, economical, and financial—could, without let or hindrance, flood the Nearer and Middle East. From this point of vantage, with enormously increased resources and heightened prestige, the final challenge might safely be issued to Great Britain for the empire of the world.”

GERMANY AS SHE SEES HERSELF.—The truth is, as has been said, that the world has to deal, in the case of Germany, with “a people in whom past success has engendered a degree of arrogance probably without parallel in the history of the world.” Some amazing quotations from German writers have been already given. It is possible to add to them almost indefinitely. Here are two more extracts from speeches by the Emperor:

“God would never have given himself so much concern for our German fatherland if He were not reserving a great destiny for us.”—At Tangier, 1905.

“The German people will be the block of granite upon which God will raise and perfect the civilisation of the world.”—At Munster, 1907.

The words of the greatest figures in German philosophy have been torn from their context in order to countenance an attitude to the outer world which these thinkers would have repudiated. The country has lived in an atmosphere of militarism and aggressive thought. It has been stated that no fewer than 700 books dealing with War have been published in Germany in one year. On the title page of the most widely read of German military authors, General von Bernhardi, is the motto, “War and bloodshed have done greater things than love of neighbour.” Treaties, wrote Treitschke, “are all concluded with a mental reservation.” Only questions of third rate importance can be submitted to arbitration. Bernhardi is for “staking all” on “world-power or downfall.” The character of small States, says Treitschke, is always inferior. “If we wish to gain the position in the world that is due to us,” Bernhardi



declares, "we must rely on our sword." What that "position" is Woltmann, in his "Politische Anthropologie", is in no doubt, "The German race is called to embrace the earth within its sovereignty." After this, we need not be surprised to read in the "Frankfurter Zeitung," "We make this War for humanity; this War comes from God." This is clearly the view of the Munich professor, Baron von Stengel, who was one of the German delegates at the Hague Conference:

"We Germans form the crown of Kultur in all creation. Subjection to our control, which is in every respect superior to any other, is the only and the surest way to prosperous existence for every nation. Under our protection, all International law is perfectly superfluous, because we of our own instinct give every one his rights."

## CHAPTER XVIII

# HOW GERMANY FORCED THE PRESENT WAR

## WHAT HAPPENED IN 1913

“It is natural that experienced strategists should feel the need of turning to account the efficiency of their troops and their own capacity to lead, and of making themselves prominent in history.”—*Bismarck*

EXTRAORDINARY ADMISSIONS.—No candid reader of the two previous Chapters can be in much doubt that Germany meditated War on France and Russia. No candid reader who peruses the official documents issued after the present War began can be in any doubt whatever.

The data which have been published since the War began may be divided into two parts. There are first, the data belonging to the year 1913.

The secret Memorandum on the strengthening of the German Army, dated March 19, 1913, which came into the possession of the French Government a month after preparation, has already been quoted. Here is another extract:

“We must allow the idea to sink into the minds of our people that our armaments are an answer to the armaments and policy of the French. *We must accustom them to think that an offensive War on our part is a necessity in order to combat the provocations of our adversaries.*

“We must act with prudence so as not to arouse suspicion.

“*We must so manage matters that under the heavy weight of powerful armaments considerable sacrifices and strained political relations, an outbreak should be considered as a relief.*”

And the document goes on at some length to show how preparations for bringing about risings in Egypt and elsewhere should be set on foot.

THE WAR CLOUDS OF 1913.—There is in Germany a measure preliminary to mobilisation which consists of warning officers and men of the reserve to hold themselves in readiness. This warning, which had been given in 1911 at the time of the Agadir crisis, was again given in April, 1913. As we now know, War was averted on both occasions by the firm action of Great Britain in intimating that she would have to be reckoned with if an unprovoked attack were made on France.



This same year, it is now known by a declaration made in a speech by an ex-Premier of Italy, Signor Giolitti, Austria tried to associate Italy in an attack against Serbia which Germany would have backed. Evidently Italy's refusal to participate arrested War at this time. \*

But War was none the less meditated. In November, 1913, the Kaiser told the King of the Belgians that War with France was "inevitable and near at hand."

Now we come to 1914. The story of the few days immediately preceding the War, as disclosed by the documents, is impressive, and will be told in the next Chapter.

A SHORT ACCOUNT OF THE NEAR EASTERN QUESTION.—Before acquainting himself with the story, however, the Far Eastern reader who may not have closely studied the Near Eastern question must understand something about it. The Near Eastern question was a question which arose from the misgovernment of alien races by the Turks. But it was also the question of the competition of Russia and Austria-Hungary for influence in the Balkan States. During the Russo-Turkish War the Russian troops had come within sight of the minarets of Constantinople. Russia had only been held back by Great Britain—to her later sincere and acknowledged regret—from taking possession of Constantinople. Russia wanted Constantinople, first, for the sentimental reason that it was formerly a great Christian capital; second, because it would give her an ice-free port, which she does not yet possess. Austria-Hungary, with Germany behind her, wanted to reach the open sea at Salonika.

THE CONDITION OF AUSTRIA-HUNGARY.—But the future not only of the Balkan States but of Austria-Hungary was involved in the Near Eastern question.

Early in the reign of Kaiser Franz Josef, Prussia had despoiled him of a large section of his territory and had deprived Austria-Hungary of her prestige among Germans. Few people believed that the loosely compacted agglomeration of many races called Austria-Hungary would survive the life of its aged ruler. Germany regarded herself as the heir to his dominions. A large proportion of the population of Austria-Hungary was either German or anti-Slav. Already Germany and Austria-Hungary were in the most intimate political and military Alliance, and

---

\* The Italian Ambassador at Constantinople before the beginning of the present War has just been removed from the diplomatic list because he failed to report to his Government in 1913 a confidence he had received from the German Ambassador to the effect that Germany undoubtedly meditated War.







plans for a Customs Union were in preparation. It was by the absorption, first, of Austria-Hungary, and, then, of the Balkan States, including Turkey, that Germany was to secure the lordship of the Near East.

TURKEY AND THE BALKAN STATES.—As to Turkey, great influence had been secured there by Germany by furnishing monetary and military aid, by turning a blind eye to the Armenian atrocities which appalled Western Europe and Russia, by flattering the Sultan and bribing the Pashas, and by parading the German Emperor through Palestine. He disported himself at Jerusalem in a turban; and in a mosque the sovereign of a handful of negro Mahommedan subjects in mid-Africa, had the effrontery to proclaim himself “the Protector of Mahommedanism”!

As to the non-Turkish Balkan States, the throne of Roumania, which had been a minor adherent of the Triple Alliance, was occupied by a Hohenzollern, the sovereign of Bulgaria was a Hapsburg, the Queen of Greece was the Kaiser’s sister, and, as the only market for the staple trade of Serbia was Austria, Serbia was economically under Austria’s influence.

We have seen that when Austria-Hungary established her territory farther south by annexing Bosnia and Herzegovina, Germany threatened War with Russia if she took umbrage. Under similar threats, Austria-Hungary had compelled Serbia to recognise what she had done. Austria-Hungary and Germany were naturally much concerned when, as the result of hostilities among the Balkan States, the Slav Serbia (and to a smaller degree the Slav Montenegro) were much aggrandised. For Serbia, divided from Austria-Hungary only by the Danube—Montenegro lies between Austria-Hungary, Serbia and the sea—would be the first stage in the German-Austro-Hungarian progress towards Constantinople.



## CHAPTER XIX

# THE DIPLOMATIC HISTORY OF THE WAR YEAR

### SIR EDWARD GREY'S STRUGGLE TO AVOID WAR

THE ULTIMATUM TO SERBIA.—All the circumstances in which, in the early summer of 1914, the heir to the Austro-Hungarian throne and his wife were murdered in Bosnia by Serbian fanatics are not yet known. The result, however, was the dispatch on July 23 of an ultimatum to Serbia *which the German Emperor and the German Ambassador in Vienna had seen before it was sent off*. Within forty-eight hours Serbia was to comply with ten demands of the most humiliating character. Sir Edward Grey declared (July 24) that he "had never seen such demands addressed to an independent State," and strongly urged the withdrawal of the time limit.

A well known Italian writer, Signor Guglielmo Ferrero, in a work published last year, does not hesitate to call the action of Austria-Hungary a deliberate provocation of Russia. The severity of the Austro-Hungarian demands is the more noteworthy, he says, in that they were made after Austria-Hungary had assured the Powers for a fortnight that her demands would be moderate. Italy, which with Austria Hungary and Germany composed the Triple Alliance, complained that her Ally issued the ultimatum to Serbia without giving Italy "the least intimation and without taking any notice of the counsels of moderation addressed to her by the Italian Government."

SIR EDWARD GREY'S WARNING.—Russia pointed out that the Austro-Hungarian action, backed by Germany, was intended to provoke War. Sir Edward Grey as clearly intimated that an attack by Austria-Hungary on Serbia would probably mean Russian intervention, that this would involve France and Germany, and "it would then be difficult for Great Britain to stay out." Germany, on her part, declared that the Austro-Hungarian demands were "equitable and moderate." Sir Edward Grey then urged that Germany, France, Italy and Great Britain should act together for peace at Vienna and Petrograd.

RUSSIAN AND BRITISH EFFORTS FOR PEACE.—On July 25, Russia announced that she was willing to leave the question in the hands of Great Britain, France, Germany and Italy. Serbia had been urged by Sir Edward Grey (July 24) to yield as much as possible. On July 25, with the approval of Russia, Serbia made the most astonishing submission to Austria-Hungary. Russia, which had given Serbia equally good counsel with Great Britain, was ready to agree (July 25) that Serbia should give Austria military possession of her capital preliminary to an appeal to the Powers! The Austrian reply (July 25) was to disregard the submission of Serbia—a submission which Sir Edward Grey described as “the greatest humiliation I have ever seen a country undergo,”—to withdraw her Minister and to intimate that Serbia would forfeit her independence!

GERMANY OBSTRUCTS PEACE PROPOSALS.—On this day Germany had declined the proposal of Sir Edward Grey that she should influence Austria-Hungary as a basis for negotiation. Germany also refused (July 27 and 28) Sir Edward Grey’s proposal that there should be a Conference of Great Britain, Germany, France and Italy while Austria-Hungary and Germany deferred action.

Although on July 27 the British Ambassador in Vienna concluded after consultation with his fellow ambassadors that Austria-Hungary meant War from the beginning, Sir Edward Grey intimated (July 29) that “if Germany will suggest *any* method—since mine is unacceptable—France, Italy and Great Britain are ready to follow her.”

GERMANY TRIES TO SECURE BRITISH NEUTRALITY.—And now Germany’s action is increasingly significant. The German Chancellor, after a conference with the Emperor, spoke openly of Germany’s part in the War and endeavoured to secure British neutrality by promising not to annex any part of France and to respect the neutrality of Holland. Nothing was said about the French Colonies. Two of these Colonies alone cover half the Southern shore of the Mediterranean. And nothing was said about Belgium.

SIR EDWARD GREY’S INDIGNANT REPLY.—Sir Edward Grey indignantly replied the next day. He said that “*the one way of maintaining and preserving good relations between England and Germany is that they should continue to work together to preserve the peace of Europe.*” He wrote further:

“If the Peace of Europe can be preserved and this crisis safely passed, my own



endeavour will be to promote some arrangement to which Germany can be a party, by which she can be assured that no aggressive or hostile policy will be pursued against her or her allies by France, Russia, and ourselves, jointly or separately. I have desired this and worked for it, as far as I could, through the last Balkan crisis. The idea has hitherto been too Utopian to form the subject of definite proposals, but if this present crisis, so much more acute than any which Europe has gone through for generations, be safely passed, I am hopeful that the relief and reaction that will follow may make possible some more definite rapprochement between the Powers than has been possible hitherto."

A FURTHER BRITISH EFFORT FOR PEACE.—On July 30 Austria-Hungary announced that she was mobilising completely. The same day Russia offered to stop all military preparations on her part if Austria-Hungary would not violate the independence of Serbia. At this stage secret military preparations had been going on in Germany for some days.

As to Austria-Hungary, Serbia and Russia, the British Ambassador in Berlin pressed Germany to suggest some method, as proposed by Sir Edward Grey, by which Germany, Great Britain, France and Italy could use their influence for peace. The next day (July 31) Sir Edward Grey himself made a further attempt. He declared that

"if Germany will get *any* reasonable proposal put forward, which made it clear that Germany and Austria were striving to preserve European peace and that Russia and France would be unreasonable if they rejected it, I will support it at St. Petersburg and Paris, and if Russia and France will not accept it I will have nothing to do with the consequences. Otherwise, if France is drawn in, we shall be drawn in."

GERMANY FORCES THE SITUATION WITH AN ULTIMATUM TO RUSSIA.—This same day Russia and Austria-Hungary agreed that Russia should "preserve her waiting attitude" and Austria-Hungary should advance no farther in Serbia. Meanwhile "the great Powers shall examine how Serbia can give satisfaction to Austria-Hungary without impairing her sovereign rights and independence." The Conversations accordingly began, for there was no time to lose; but *Germany suddenly forced the situation* (1) by sending an ultimatum to Russia demanding her demobilisation in twelve hours, (2) by refusing to give the guarantee that France had promptly given to respect the neutrality of Belgium.

ANOTHER GERMAN EFFORT TO SECURE BRITISH NEUTRALITY.—The day after, August 1, Germany made a final effort to secure the neutrality of Great Britain. Would Great Britain stand aside unconditionally if Germany agreed not to violate Belgium and not to annex any part of France or any French colonies? Sir Edward Grey, no doubt realising, first, that there was no security for the fulfilment of such a German promise, and, second, that, in any case, it looked very much

like the supreme German effort to destroy for ever the good will existing between France (and her Ally, Russia) and Great Britain, contented himself with saying that Great Britain was unable to give any such undertaking.

**GERMANY DECLARES WAR ON RUSSIA AND SENDS AN ULTIMATUM TO BELGIUM.**—The same day Germany announced that she had declared War on Russia. The declaration which the Russian Minister of Foreign Affairs made at this juncture should not be overlooked. He said "with emotion," that throughout the crisis "no suggestion had been refused" by Russia.

On August 2, Germany sent an ultimatum to Belgium. Sir Edward Grey at this stage assured France that if she was attacked by Germany the British Navy would protect her in the North Sea and in the Channel.

**ITALY'S SIGNIFICANT ATTITUDE.**—On August 3, Italy, a member of the Triple Alliance,\* declared that the War undertaken by Austria-Hungary and the further War which might result from it had an aggressive object and was consequently in conflict with the conditions of the Triple Alliance. She would therefore remain neutral. As early as July 28, Italy had intimated that she would be ready to cooperate with Great Britain on any lines for peace. Nothing could be more significant of how the rights of the situation stood than the attitude of Italy through the crisis.

**GERMANY'S FINAL ACTIONS.**—On August 4, Germany made a final attempt to get Great Britain to stand aside. She offered this time to promise that she would not at the end of the War annex Belgian territory. As Germany had already invaded Belgium and had broken a solemn engagement to the Powers of Europe, it is difficult indeed to understand how she could ever have imagined that her proposal would receive attention.

The same day the British ultimatum to Germany threatening War if by midnight Germany proceeded farther with her invasion of Belgium was delivered. The British Ambassador in Berlin, in presenting the ultimatum, made a final appeal to the better judgment of Germany. He asked "whether in view of the terrible consequences which would ensue it were not possible even at the last moment" for Germany to reconsider her action. Herr von Jagow refused "if the term given were even twenty-four hours or more"; and War began.

---

\* The Triple Alliance consisted of Germany, Austria-Hungary and Italy, with Roumania; the Dual Alliance of France and Russia. Great Britain had an Entente with France and Russia.



THE CASE AGAINST GERMANY.—Any reader who has leisure to examine for himself the bulky collection of dispatches of all the Powers\* which have now been so very briefly summarised will get an even more convincing impression of the facts of the case. They are

1. That Germany did nothing whatever to restrain Austria-Hungary, but (though Austria-Hungary may herself have become a little nervous when the crisis arrived and she began to realise that one result of a general War might be her own extinction), was herself firmly resolved on War;

2. That the Serbian affair and Germany's duty to her Ally were merely a pretext for War, for which neither France nor Russia nor Great Britain had given any provocation, and

3. That, when Germany entered the War against Russia and France she hoped almost up to the last moment that Great Britain, from whom she thought she had been successful in hiding her real intentions during recent years, might be persuaded, by some sort of promise or other, to remain neutral.

GERMAN OFFICIAL ADMISSIONS.—The future historian who desires to arrive at the truth as to the present War will not overlook the following passage in the German White Book :

"We were perfectly aware that a possible warlike attitude of Austria-Hungary against Serbia might bring Russia upon the field, and that it might therefore involve us in a War, in accordance with our duty as Allies. . . . We permitted Austria a completely free hand in her action towards Serbia. . . . Sir Edward Grey had made the proposal to submit the differences between Austria-Hungary and Serbia to a Conference of the Ambassadors of Germany, France, and Italy, under his chairmanship. We declared that we could not participate in such a Conference."

When the German Chancellor declared in the Reichstag, after the fighting began, "Our enemies chose War," Dr. Liebknecht shouted, "Lies, you chose it."

Mr. Theobald Butler, an English professor of modern languages, who has lived in Germany continuously since 1905, and has just returned to England, writes :

"To my personal knowledge the leaders of the German Army began their final preparations for War at least a fortnight before August 1st, 1914. About the middle of

---

\* The chief despatches are collected from British, French, Russian, Belgian, Serbian, German and Austro-Hungarian Official publications in "Collected Diplomatic Documents relating to the War," published for the British Government (London : Wyman, 1s.) The documents presented to the Italian Parliament are to be found in "Diplomatic Documents," published for the Italian Government (London : Hodder and Stoughton.)

July my classes, consisting for the most part of younger officers and Civil Servants, mysteriously began dropping off."

"THE WAR WHICH WAS FORCED UPON US"—One of the greatest and most independent of German publicists is Maximilian Harden. A short time ago his famous paper, the *Zukunft*, was seized for an unanswerable indictment of Germany's foreign policy from the time of the Agadir incident in Morocco, in July, 1911 (when the Kaiser sent a warship to "protect German subjects" in a port where there was none), until July, 1914 (when Austria declared War on Serbia, and Germany sent an ultimatum to Russia). It taunts the German Foreign Ministry with having caused "a cold breeze to blow from Berlin" in response to England's repeated efforts to arrive at an understanding designed to avert a European War, and bitterly attacks the familiar Berlin dictum about "the War which was forced upon us." Harden observes that

"the Chancellor must know by this time that *his opinion that the War, which Austria-Hungary declared five days later than we did, was forced upon us, has found belief almost nowhere in the whole world.*" [Germany declared War on Russia on August 1 and on France on August 3. Austria declared War on Russia only on August 6. She had declared War on Serbia on July 28.]

A GERMAN CRITICISM OF THE GERMAN CHANCELLOR.—Describing the last hour efforts of Sir Edward Grey and the British Ambassador to Germany to stave off the inevitable in Berlin, Harden writes:

"What was the situation? Here was the strongest military Power in Belgium, that is in possession of a pistol which it could aim at Britain's heart. Granville, Salisbury, Gladstone or Lansdowne [previous British Ministers] would in such a case have declared War. The British Minister in Berlin asks for passports. After he has got them, he once more, against all precedents, goes to the Chancellor to make one more attempt at peace. But in vain. The excited Chancellor overwhelms him for the space of twenty minutes with harangues about England, who, for the sake of the word neutrality and a mere scrap of paper, has made up her mind to go to War against a thoroughly pacific nation! The march through Belgium was for Germany a question of life or death. The same question, the British Minister retorts, is one of life or death for England's honour."

DOING JUSTICE TO SIR EDWARD GREY.—Harden recalls Sir Edward Grey's historic speech in the House of Commons: "There was no tone of bombast in that speech. It was the earliest possible recognition that this War would be accompanied by horrors inexpressible, cruelties as terrible as the Satanic powers could invent. That day and that night, as we know from a variety of sources, Grey suffered poignantly under the spectre of those impending horrors, and from out of his recent interview in an American newspaper there protrudes plain evidence that



he is still under the spell of the same woe which found utterance in the Commons twenty-two months ago."

A FINAL FACT.—Some extracts from the remarkable interview to which Herr Harden refers will be given later. Meanwhile account may well be taken of a fact which still further supports the contention that *Germany deliberately forced War*. It is that Germany was perfectly well aware that, while German and Austro-Hungarian military preparations were not only complete but in every way superior to those of other countries, Russia was in process of reorganising her defences. On July 28 the Austro-Hungarian Ambassador at Berlin declared to a colleague that "Russia neither wants nor is in a position to make War." The military reorganisation which was also proceeding in Belgium was known to all the world. Generally speaking, as the results of the first year of the War showed, the Allies were wholly unprepared for War in the sense that Germany and Austria Hungary were prepared.





[illegible]

第八十一頁參照

## CHAPTER XX

### WHAT THE ALLIES ARE FIGHTING FOR

#### A PRECISE STATEMENT BY THE BRITISH FOREIGN MINISTER

"We re-echo your Majesty's firm determination to continue the War until the mutual object of the Allies, to preserve justice and freedom, is duly obtained."

—*The Emperor of Japan's Message to King George at the beginning of the third year of the War.*

"FOR LAW, JUSTICE AND PEACE.—In the interview with Sir Edward (now Viscount) Grey, referred to by Herr Harden, the British Foreign Minister demonstrated what the Allies mean by "justice and freedom":

"Prussian tyranny over Western Europe our peoples will not stand. The pledges given as regards the restoration of Belgium and Serbia shall be kept. What we and our Allies are fighting for is a Europe free from hectoring diplomacy and the peril of War, free from the constant rattling of the sword in the scabbard, from perpetual talk of 'shining armour' and 'War lords.'\* We are fighting for law, justice, peace; for civilization throughout the world as against brute force, which knows no restraint and no mercy."

WAR AGAINST THE GERMAN PHILOSOPHY OF WAR.—But the Allies are also fighting the German idea of the wholesomeness, almost the desirability of ever recurrent War:

"Prussia under Bismarck deliberately and admittedly made three Wars. [The War against Denmark, 1864; against Austria, 1866; against France 1870]. We want a settled peace in Europe and throughout the world, which will be a guarantee against aggressive War.

"Germany's philosophy is that a settled peace spells disintegration, the sacrifice of the heroic qualities in human character. ["War," said Treitscke, "is the highest state craft; only in War does a people become a people."] Such a philosophy, if it is to survive as a practical force, means eternal apprehension and unrest. It means ever-increasing armaments. It means arresting the development of culture and humanity."

THE CASE FOR INTERNATIONAL NEGOCIATION.—The Allies do not believe in War as the preferable method of settling disputes between nations:

---

\* Phrases from the German Emperor's speeches.



"When nations cannot see eye to eye when they quarrel, when there is a threat of War, we believe the controversy should be settled by methods other than those of War. Such other methods are always successful when there is good will and no aggressive spirit. [For example, the "Alabama" arbitration, under which Great Britain paid the United States 30,000,000 yen, and the experience gained in the working of the Hague tribunal.] We believe in negotiation. We have faith in international conferences."

HOW GREAT BRITAIN TRIED TO AVOID WAR.—Viscount Grey then recalled how before this War broke out he urged a Conference on Germany. But as we have seen, Germany would not agree, though Russia, France and Italy all accepted:

"Then I requested Germany to select some form of mediation, some method of peaceful settlement of her own. She would not come forward with any such suggestion. Then the Emperor of Russia proposed to Germany to send the dispute to The Hague Tribunal. There was no response. It was a case of Europe's submitting to the Teutonic will or going to War.

"After Serbia had accepted nine tenths of Austria's demands, the settlement of outstanding questions would have been easy. They would have been settled in a week, and all these calamities would have been averted. Russia ordered no general mobilization till Germany had refused a conference and till German preparations for War were far ahead of those of the Russians."

Germany was, in fact, at War with Russia four or five days before Austria-Hungary declared War.

NEGOCIATION VERSUS THE WAR METHOD CONTRASTED.—The British Foreign Minister asked that the method of negotiation and the method of War should be contrasted in the light of this struggle.

"Do we not see the disaster of the War-method conclusively shown? Industry and commerce dislocated: the burdens of life heavily increased; millions of men slain, maimed, blinded; international hatreds deepened and intensified: the very fabric of civilization menaced."

USELESS TALK OF PEACE.—The injustice done by this War has got to be set right.

"The Allies can tolerate no peace that leaves the wrongs of this War unredressed. When persons come to me with pacific counsels I think they should tell me what sort of peace they have in mind. If they think that Belgium was innocent of offence; that she has been unspeakably wronged; that she should be set up again by those who tore her down, then, it seems to me, they should say so. Peace counsels that are purely abstract and make no attempt to discriminate between the rights and the wrongs of this War are ineffective if not irrelevant."

NO COALITION AGAINST GERMANY.—Viscount Grey then dealt

with the wild talk about Germany being "encircled," and about there being a "coalition" against her.

"Germany knew there was no coalition against her. We had assured her, in the most formal and categorical way, that in no circumstances would we be a party to any aggression against her. She wanted us to pledge ourselves to unconditional neutrality, wanted us to declare that, no matter what she did on the Continent, we should not interfere. She always referred to a possible War forced on her. The trouble was that she gave us no test of a War forced on her. She remained free to claim that any War was forced on her.

"*She now claims that this present War was forced on her. I need hardly remind you that at the outset Italy, the third member of the Triple Alliance, definitely refused to accept that view.* No one thought of attacking Germany; there was not a measure taken by any other Power that was not purely defensive; the German preparations were for attack and were far ahead of others on the Continent.

"Belgium was a bulwark—defensive of Germany, of France, and of European peace. This bulwark, until Germany decided to make War, was in no danger from any quarter."

GREAT BRITAIN'S RELATIONS WITH DIFFERENT COUNTRIES.—As has been abundantly shown, Great Britain's *rapprochements* in recent years have had as their object good relations and an end to quarrels with other Powers.

"Going far back, we had working relations with the Triple Alliance. But we were habitually in friction with France or with Russia. Again and again, it brought us to the verge of War. So we decided to come to an arrangement with France, and then with Russia—not with any hostile intent towards Germany or any other Power, but wholly to pave the way to permanent peace. So, instead of preparing for War, as Germany asserts, without a vestige of truth to support the assertion, we were endeavouring to avoid War. And German statesmen knew we were endeavouring to avoid War and not to make it.

"Nobody wants peace more than we want it. But we want a peace that does justice, and a peace that re-establishes respect for the public law of the world."

GREAT BRITAIN'S REAL FEELING TOWARDS GERMANY.—As to the declaration of the German Chancellor that Great Britain wants to destroy "united and free Germany."

"We never were smitten with any such madness. Herr von Bethmann Hollweg knows we want nothing of the sort. It belongs to the rudiments of political science, it is abundantly taught by history, that you cannot enslave a people and make a success of the job—that you cannot kill a people's soul by foreign despotism and brutality. We aspire to embark upon no such course of folly and futility. We believe that the German people—when once the dreams of world-empire cherished by Pan-Germanism are brought to nought—will insist upon the control of its Government; and in this lies the hope of secure freedom and national independence in Europe. For a German democracy will not plot and plan Wars, as Prussian militarism plotted Wars, to take place at a chosen date in the future."



THE HOPE FOR THE FUTURE.—Viscount Grey then spoke of his hopes for the future:

"Long before this War I hoped for a league of nations that would be united, quick, and instant, to prevent, and, if need be, to punish violation of international treaties, of public right, of national independence, and would say to nations that come forward with grievances and claims, 'Put them before an impartial tribunal. Subject your claims to the test of law or the judgment of impartial men. If you can win at this bar, you will get what you want; if you cannot, you shall not have what you want; and, if you attempt to start a War, we shall all adjudge you the common enemy of humanity, and treat you accordingly. As footpads, safe-breakers, burglars, and incendiaries are suppressed in nations, so those who would commit these crimes, and incalculably more than these crimes, will be suppressed among nations.'"

WHY THE WAR MUST GO ON.—The British Foreign Minister explained in conclusion why the War must go on. The "menace of destruction" hangs over the world.

"The Germans have thrown the door wide open to every form of attack upon human life. The use of poisonous fumes, or something akin to them in War, was recommended to us many years ago, [long before the foundation of the German Empire] and was rejected by us as too horrible to use. The Germans have come with mines in the open seas, threatening belligerents and neutrals equally. They have come with the indiscriminating, murderous Zeppelin, which does military damage only by accident. They have come with the submarine, which destroys neutral and belligerent ships and crews, in scorn alike of law and of mercy. They have come upon blameless nations with invasion, incendiarism and confiscation. Their science is dedicated to wiping out life. They have forced these things into general use in War. If the world cannot organize against War, if War must go on, then nations can protect themselves henceforth only by using whatever destructive agencies they can invent, till the resources and inventions of science end by destroying the humanity that they were meant to serve.

"The Germans assert that their culture is so extraordinarily superior that it gives them a moral right to impose it upon the rest of the world by force. Will the outstanding contribution of "Kultur" disclosed in this War be such efficiency in slaughter as to lead to wholesale extermination?

"The Prussian authorities have apparently but one idea of peace, an iron peace imposed on other nations by German supremacy. They do not understand that free men and free nations will rather die than submit to that ambition, and that there can be no end to the present struggle till it is defeated and renounced."

THE BRITISH BLOCKADE.—Viscount Grey spoke of Germany's use of the submarine. The German Chancellor has had the hardihood to argue "that the submarine is a legitimate measure of self-defence against the British policy of using the command of the seas to starve Germany into submission." The truth is that the German Government declared

its intention of instituting a submarine blockade on February 4, 1915, whereas the measures of reprisal against Great Britain were not announced until March 11th.

Herr Harden, who has been already quoted, openly scoffs at the argument that Great Britain is inhuman in stopping cargoes intended for Germany. The fact is, of course, that Germany has a reasonable amount of food. The real reason why she resents the action of the British Navy is that it has kept out copper, nickel, rubber and other War material.

WHY PEACE DOES NOT COME.—As to peace proposals, as Viscount Grey recently said in Parliament,

“it is childish to say that because we will not accept the terms of peace that suit Germany therefore we are responsible for prolonging the War.

“The real thing which is responsible more than anything else for prolonging the War at this moment is that the German Government goes on telling its people that they have won the War, or if they are not winning the War they are going to win it next week, and that the Allies are beaten. The fact is the Allies are not beaten, and are not going to be. The first step towards peace will be when the German Government begins to recognise that fact.

“If any one has a right to speak on behalf of peace at the moment, it is the Government of France. Well, the Prime Minister of France has spoken, and he has said :— ‘To-day the word peace is a sacrilege. What will the generations to come say if we let escape the occasion to establish firmly a durable peace? Peace must be based on international right.’”

THE DEBT TO GERMANY.—In an address of sympathy with the Allies signed by 500 of the most prominent American public men they said :

“We are not unmindful of the great contributions which Germany has in the past made to the common treasure of modern civilisation ; all of us acknowledge our debt to Germany ; many of us have had the advantage of German education ; some of us are of German blood. But *the welfare of that civilisation for which Germany has done so much, the highest interests of Germany herself, demand that in this conflict Germany and Austria shall be defeated.*”

WHAT THE WORLD HAS TO DECIDE.—As Senator Root, formerly American Secretary of State said,

“the War began by the denial on the part of a great Power that treaties are obligatory when it is no longer for the interests of either of the parties to observe them. This denial is supported by half the military power of Europe. The civilized world has to determine whether international law is to be a mere code of etiquette, or whether viola-



tions of the law of such a character as to threaten the peace and order of the community of nations shall be treated by analogy to criminal law."

A FORECAST THAT WAS FULFILLED.—The first German Emperor promised in 1871, when the Empire was founded, that Germany would "willingly pay the respect it claims for its own independence to the independence of all other States and peoples, the weak as well as the powerful." On which an eminent publicist wrote with remarkable prescience :

"Can a great Empire governed by a soldier, populated by soldiers, and ruled by a caste whose pride it is to be the highest trained warriors the world has ever seen, be an Empire of Peace? Why should it be? Because Germans are cultivated? True; but where is the proof that culture is a guarantee for moderation? No culture can surpass that of the German professorate, which has been more exacting in its requirements, more hostile to other nations, more completely penetrated with the spirit of dominance than either the people or the soldiery of Germany.

"Is the guarantee the morality of Germany? That has not prevented Germany from annexing States which heartily desired not to be annexed. In international affairs, as in private affairs, the keynote of morality is unselfishness; and accepting for the nonce the German view of the whole situation, they are still retaining and pleased to retain a million-and-a-half of free persons in unwilling subjugation for their own interest.\* They declare the possession of Metz, which is as French as Paris, and of Alsace, which has become French, essential to the permanent security of Germany. We say it renders Germany permanently insecure, because it compels France to hunt about for alliances against her; but let us admit the German case, and still it comes to this, that Germany will, if need be, avowedly and openly postpone her own sense of right, her own lofty morality, to her own material interest. What guarantee is there or can there be for the world in a morality tempered by such an explanation as that?"

AN IMPERIAL FAMILY HABIT.—The history of the narrow escapes of Europe from declarations of War by Germany has been told in previous Chapters. Had Great Britain not prevented such declarations of War, and War had broken out, the old Emperor William's grandson, the present Emperor William, would no doubt have claimed, as he has done in the case of present War, that Germany was not responsible for

---

\* The allusion is to the population of the annexed Alsace-Lorraine (Elsass-Lothringen).

it. But that is an Imperial family habit. Bismarck's autobiographical records show that the first German Emperor's plea that Germany was in no sense responsible for the Franco-Prussian War of 1870 was untrue. Bismarck himself admits that that War was precipitated by his falsification of a French dispatch. No pretence is nowadays made, either, that Prussia did not will in the same way the War with Denmark (1864). As to the War with Austria (1866) the old Emperor William affirmed that "he had done all in his power to spare Prussia the sufferings and sacrifices of a War." "This," he added, "is known to my people and to God, who sees the heart. We have no choice, we must fight for our existence." "Unfortunately von Moltke (in his Memoirs) contradicts his august master point blank.

"The War of 1866," (he writes), "did not take place because the existence of Prussia was threatened, or in obedience to public opinion or to the voice of the people. It was a War which was foreseen long before, which was prepared with deliberation and recognized as necessary by the Ministry in order to secure the establishment of Prussian hegemony in Germany."

GERMANY'S MORAL ISOLATION.—"Germany's greatest weakness to-day," as a neutral writer says, "is her moral isolation. She stands condemned by the judgment of the civilised world. No physical power she can exercise can compensate for this loss of moral power."

"The time has indeed come," in the words of another neutral who has been the official representative of his country in Berlin, "to affirm in no doubtful terms that there are certain rights and duties of nations upon regard for which the future of mankind depends."\*



## CHAPTER XXI

### WERE OTHER POWERS BLAMEWORTHY?

#### A CANDID EXAMINATION OF THE FACTS

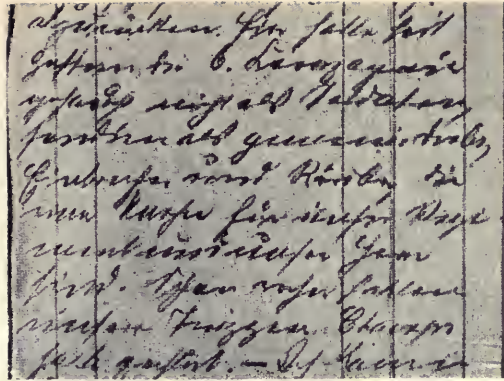
ARE OTHER POWERS EQUALLY TO BLAME?—I would willingly conclude this book with the preceding Chapter. But there are two or three suggestions as to the responsibility for the War which I do not wish to ignore. The first suggestion is that, "among various kinds of national arrogance and combativeness, the German kind was merely the most intensive and most pronounced." This has been excellently answered in the "Westminster Gazette," of London, by a well known publicist in touch with the best sources of information :

"We do not claim innocence for other nations, but the Germans have a unique responsibility for the course of events which has made this War so much worse than any other War. Their theory of the nation in arms led logically to the unlimited violence which seeks not merely to defeat armies, but to crush and intimidate entire populations. Their idea of War, not as a last resort when a nation is attacked or its honour threatened, but as an extension of policy, led to a new and deliberate use of force for political purposes, and placed all Europe under the shadow of the Mailed Fist. There is nothing in history quite comparable with Bismarck's deliberate picking of quarrels at carefully planned intervals.

"The real politics which he invented were simply a weighing of armed forces from which sentiment and morality we excluded. Other nations have had periods in which they have yielded to these ideas, but none has ruthlessly systematised them and pursued them for generations like the Germans. The Germans have produced an armed system which never existed till Bismarck came on the scene. Worst of all, they have forced other nations to tread the path they had chosen for themselves at a time when the natural trend of civilisation was towards peace and peaceful commerce."

OUR GERMAN FRIENDS.—There are few Britons without some German friends or acquaintances. We know very well that all the German people were not meditating War. But as the "Westminster" says, "they were none the less in the grip of a militarist system to which they submitted with complete docility and which chose its own moment for War in 1914." The writer goes on :

"The diplomacy of 1914 is of capital importance in the interpretation of previous events. Here we saw the system remorselessly at work, closing all doors on peace, peremptorily refusing time for reflection or negotiation, feverishly anxious lest a moment



# CONFESSION OF DISGRACEFUL CONDUCT

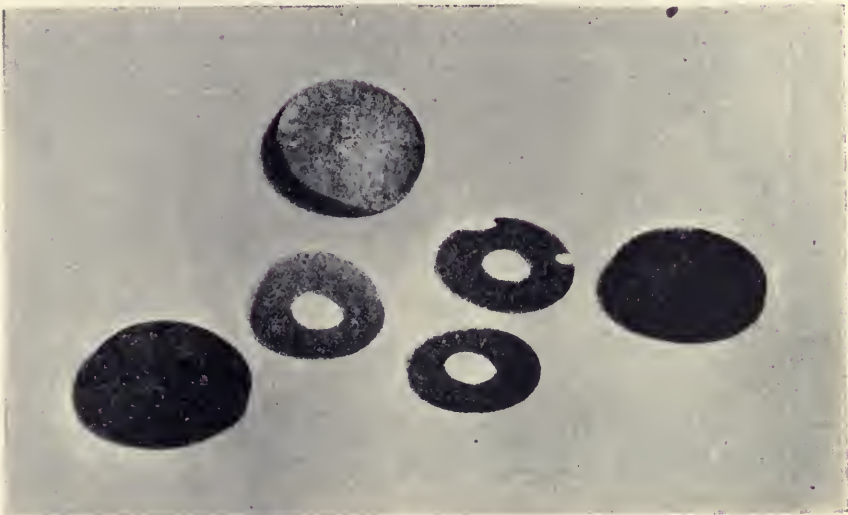
Letter from German Soldier, 65th Infantry

See page 67

恥づべき行為の自白

獨軍第六十五聯隊兵卒の書簡

第九十六頁參照



# GERMAN SOLDIERS' INCENDIARY TABLETS

See page 69

獨兵の放火用火藥錠

第九十九頁參照



白耳義王其兵士を激勵す（輸入ロンドン・ニュースより）



From "Illustrated London News"

THE KING OF THE BELGIANS ENCOURAGING HIS SOLDIERS

should be lost in the surprise blow which was to overwhelm France by invading her through Belgium, thinking from the first moment to the last of the military adventure and not at all of the political problem. The German people may have been innocent of it all, but no Government in Europe, except the German, could have comported itself thus, and no people in Europe, except the German, could have evolved such a Government."

**GERMAN FEAR OF RUSSIA AND ITS CAUSE.**—The writer insists with truth that, for the heavily armed and nervous state of Europe, Germany was chiefly responsible, and for the ultimate explosion specially responsible. He admits, however, that the German people suffered from the same fears as their neighbours. The fear of Russia unquestionably contributed largely to the catastrophe.

"But the ground for it must be discovered in German policy towards Russia. Twenty years ago there was no German and Russian hostility or any sign of Russian aggression westward. Even when the War broke out, Russia had an unorganised and ungarrisoned western frontier, and has suffered much adversity in consequence. But unquestionably her intention was greatly to strengthen her defences and to increase her army proportionately. Why? Because in the last twelve years she has suffered one mortification after another at the hands of the Germans. They took advantage of the Japanese War to force upon her a most unfavourable commercial treaty; they incited Austria to annex Bosnia and Herzegovina, and boasted openly that they had intimidated Russia with their 'shining armour.' Then they discovered that the population of Russia was more than twice their own, and that the situation might become alarming if she so armed herself as to be in a position to resent these affronts. A quite legitimate fear; but whose fault?"

**FRANCE AND GREAT BRITAIN.**—The writer quite honestly says that, granting that Germany had some case to go upon as to Morocco, (Chapter XVI) neither France nor Great Britain ever behaved to Germany over that or any question as Germany did to France. The British record, generally, is that, as appears from the data brought together in previous Chapters,

"We have strenuously endeavoured not only to keep the peace, but to find means of satisfying German Colonial ambitions and to provide a regular machinery for abating armaments and settling international disputes.

"For these reasons, and others that would take too long to develop now, we unhesitatingly reject the theory that the guilt of the present War must be impartially distributed between the combatants, with perhaps a slightly greater share for Germany. We believe it to be the profound truth that this is a struggle between Prussian militarism and the non-militarist Powers, between the denial of law and right in international affairs and their recognition. There is a real conflict of ideals."

**"COMMERCIAL WAR" NONSENSE.**—Taking leave of the "Westminster" writer, there is the suggestion that the cause or a cause of the War was British jealousy of German trade. On this point I may



quote an American student of European history, Mr. B. E. Shmitt—obviously a man of German origin—who has written a book in which he tries to examine the origins of the War in an impartial spirit.

“It would be foolish to say,” he writes, “that when the War came there was not in the back of the English mind the idea that, if the Navy could control the seas, a severe blow would be inflicted on German foreign commerce; but no looser statement can be made than that British participation in the great conflict was dictated by cupidity or jealousy.”

The person so commercially-minded as to be capable of taking the view that the War is a Business War may well be invited to write down what he conceives to be the monetary gain which can offset such losses to Great Britain as these:

1. Direct cost of the War, which is already in its third year, at the rate of, say, 50,000,000 yen a day in cash outgoings.\*

2. Heavy and irreparable losses in men killed, maimed or dead by disease, and the heavy future burden of pensions to wives and children and to survivors and injured.

3. Enormous loss due (a) to the stoppage during the War of trade with Germany, Austria-Hungary and Turkey, and (b) to the killing off and impoverishing of potential customers there.

4. Loss due to destruction of shipping and property, and to the removal of labour from productive work.

GERMANY'S GROWING POPULATION PLEA.—The monstrous notion that Germany was forced into War in order to obtain room for a too numerous population has been exposed by many writers. But it is perhaps well to state that Germany is far from being over-populated. The volume of emigration has been for some years past steadily diminishing. In 1885 some 172,000 emigrants left Germany. In 1892 the number fell to 116,000 and in 1898 to 23,000, at which figure it remained for many years. In the year 1912 the emigrants were no more than 18,000. The population of Germany is 68 millions; but the distinguished French economist, Yves Guyot, points out that a German population of 90 millions would only mean 166 to the square kilometre, and that Belgium in 1913 had a population of no less than 260 to the square kilometre, without being forced in any marked degree to resort to emigration.

---

\* One might add the money subscribed to War charities. It is estimated at not less than 500,000,000 yen during the first two years of the War.

BRITISH AND GERMAN WORLD POLITICS.—The present War has its roots in a determination on the part of Germany to become at any cost the dominating Power of the world. The rejoinder may, no doubt, be made that there have been Britons as well as Germans who have had dreams of world power. But when the very most has been said on this point that can be said, how much does it amount to? Very little. For, as Sir Harry Johnston has lately written, there have been nobler currents of opinion among the British people which have prevented the nation developing this dangerous ambition of world power, much less hurling itself into a world War to support it. The dominions of Great Britain are in every clime; but there is no careful, open-minded student who is in any doubt whatever as to the three outstanding facts of their history:

1.—These oversea dominions were unmistakably acquired with no conscious purpose of world rule. They are in no sense the product of Imperial State policy. They were gained, in the main, not by the British Government at all. They were obtained by adventurous Britons who had almost to force the new lands on a Government which was by no means anxious to add to its responsibilities. One of the truest things ever said about the British Empire is that it came together in a fit of absence of mind.

2.—The second point about which every student of British oversea history is in no doubt is that the conditions in which the British colonies were gathered together can hardly occur again. They were chiefly acquired during a period when (a) British shipping and British foreign trade were without serious rivals, (b) when industrial and social conditions in Great Britain were such that large numbers of particularly intelligent, vigorous and resourceful men were eager to find a livelihood and homes oversea, and (c) when a large part of the earth was still, as in the case of Africa and Australia, sparsely populated and without established government.

3.—The third point on which all students agree is that the British Empire is due, in no small measure, to a certain gift of colonisation and for the management of subject races for which the British people are remarkable. This gift is no doubt due to enterprising ideas, strong individuality, a capacity for direction, a habit of taking large and broad-minded views, and a certain carelessness of criticism and consequences when it is felt that the right course is being pursued. It has been justly said that while the British have been the pioneers of commerce, the



Germans have been the pedlars. It is not merely because the Germans started late in the day that they have failed to make a success of their colonies. It is largely because they lacked some of the qualities and experience which go to the making of a colonising Power. They have been successful oversea when they have been living, as in America or in the British colonies, under some other administrative ideals than their own.

## CHAPTER XXII

### DID THE BRITISH HATE THE GERMANS?

#### WHY FIVE MILLION CIVILIANS BECAME SOLDIERS

BRITISH FEELING TOWARDS GERMANY BEFORE THE WAR.—We may now claim to have examined, in this and other Chapters, every possible suggestion as to the cause of the War. By a process of exhaustion we are driven back to the point at which the book started :

1. The War was caused by the action of Germany in offering, in co-operation with Austria-Hungary, deliberate provocation to Russia.\*

2. Great Britain was brought into the War by the German invasion of Belgium.

It was inconceivable to the average Englishman that Germany should attack Belgium or France. He might see a good deal in some of the papers about Germany as the War State. But the fact did not sink into his consciousness. He was amused or regretful rather than suspicious. He did not know what we now know, how near to War Great Britain had been on two recent occasions when Germany had threatened France. He did not know that so many proposals of a naval arrangement between Great Britain and Germany had been rebuffed. He knew nothing, of course, of German War preparations or of the German spy system, and he did not realise the character of German aims in Turkey and Asia Minor. He thought Lord Roberts was probably unnecessarily alarmist about the need for preparadness ; and the very

---

\* FURTHER EVIDENCE AGAINST GERMANY.—The well known German publicist, Friedrich Naumann, has declared that the Central Powers are responsible for the War and that Germany is conducting a War of conquest, not of defence.

Roumania, it now appears, was a secret member of the Triple Alliance. In withdrawing from it, as Italy has done, and declaring War on Germany, Roumania declares that the Central Powers are fighting "for the sole purpose" of aggression.

As regards Austro-Hungarian action, the following, (from the *Gazette de Lausanne* of December 17th, 1914), written by an Austro-Hungarian diplomatist, is of special interest : "Berlin incited our diplomacy to extreme measures (against Serbia), and the moment it appeared that, after all, a compromise might be reached, launched her ultimatum to Russia. We were thus forced into War. Our country is the only one which has not published the diplomatic documents relating to the period immediately before the War. We could not do so without exposing Germany."



limited subscription list of the Navy League shows how little attention he paid to the anxieties of that society. He never took the Kaiser's talk about the "War Lord," "shining armour" and "mailed fist" very seriously. He thought of the Emperor William as the unruly small boy who, at a State ceremony in Westminster Abbey, quietly bit the bare leg of an English cousin in Scottish dress. He remembered the gossip about this same small boy getting a severe talking to from his grandmother, Queen Victoria. The Emperor was not popular in Great Britain for several reasons. It was thought that he had been unfilial to his father, the Emperor Frederick (who was greatly respected in Great Britain,) and had been not too dutiful to his mother, the able and enlightened Empress, who was the daughter of Queen Victoria and the sister of King Edward. He was thought to be bumptious and restless, if able and well meaning. But the average Briton had the notion that, whatever might be the aberrations of the Kaiser and the tendencies of the German militarists, the mass of the German people were pacific folk, whose scientific, social and economic development was much to their credit and might, to some extent, be worthy of imitation.

HOW GERMANY MUST BE JUDGED.—It was the belief that there were in Germany, as some one has written, "plenty of honest, pleasant, and goodhearted people." A well known writer puts the matter very clearly :

"I first visited Germany in 1890 ; my last and sixth visit was in 1913. An uncle of mine married a German wife ; I have walked and motored through all parts of Germany ; I have lived in German families ; I have met and corresponded with various German savants ; in September, 1911, on the Franco-German frontier, I was drinking beer and bathing with officers of the Army. Until 1913 it never dawned on me that the long enterprise of perverting the German mind through the State schools had made much progress."

And how fairly the situation is judged at the present moment by many Britons may be estimated from the following extract from a London weekly review :

"Perversion of the German mind has doubtless gone far. But we cannot judge its extent, because we do not know how far the German view of the War depends on a deliberate approval of the crimes, on ignorance of their nature, or on disingenuous and imperfect accounts of them."

We do know, however, that no protest has been made in Germany against the Belgian atrocities\* and that no opposition was manifested to-

---

\* The German author of "J'accuse," which denounces the Belgian horrors and holds Germany responsible for the War, has had to seek refuge in Switzerland.

wards submarine horrors until it was discovered that, through antagonising the United States, they might be unprofitable. It is on the basis of these facts, therefore, and not on speculations as to the personal character of some Germans, that we must take our stand in judging and resisting Germany.

THE SHOCK OF THE INVASION OF BELGIUM.—The shock which the average Englishman received from the invasion of Belgium as a preliminary to an attack on France was profound. He might have been uneasy in the case of a merely defensive German War against France via the Franco-German frontier, but, as Mr. H. G. Wells says in his new novel,

“Had Germany been content to fight a merely defensive war upon her Western frontier and let Belgium alone, there would scarcely have been such a thing as a War party in Great Britain.”

There had been a War between France and Germany in 1870 which had not involved Great Britain. “The attack on Belgium, however, made the whole nation flame unanimously into War.”

HOW GERMANY CREATED THE BRITISH ARMY.—It was a burning indignation with Germany, not jealousy of Germany, which brought volunteers in crowds to the British Army at home and oversea. And Germany in her madness took always the course during the War which produced more and more British volunteers—and no fewer than 4,000 American volunteers. Not content with slaughtering the unoffending Belgians by her overwhelming numbers and equipment, she was guilty of the Belgian outrages. On these outrages and the destruction of Louvain followed the submarine horrors, poisonous gas, and the wanton killing by Zeppelins.\* The murder of Miss Cavell (which some one has said was “worth an army corps to Great Britain”) was succeeded by the shooting of Captain Fryatt,† and all along there have been the cruelties of the prisoners’ camps. It was Germany who created the British Army. There is nothing in the world of which we can be more certain than that 5,000,000 British volunteers would never have come forward for a War of an aggressive character against Germany.‡

---

\* It is estimated that 2,242 men, women and children have been sacrificed at sea through submarines and that 426 men, women and children have lost their lives and 938 have been injured from Zeppelin fire. All these were non-combatants.

† For particulars, see page 139.

‡ Even some wild talk, which has taken small account of economic laws, for seizing German trade after the War has been largely inspired by the idea that the way to limit Germany’s powers of being a bad neighbour is to cripple her in commerce.



"I don't know how often I have had this bit of dialogue with some French non-commissioned officer," writes a British sergeant.

"Frenchman: 'Vous vous etes volontaire, sergent?'

"I: 'Oui, caporal. Nous sommes tous volontaire.'

"F: 'Toute cette grande armee?'

"I: 'Oui—tous.'

"F: 'C'est beau, ça.' "

THE SPIRIT OF THE BRITISH VOLUNTEERS.—The volunteers poured in from their colleges and country houses, from shops and factories, offices and mines\* because it was borne in on them that International Law and Public Right, that Civilisation itself was at stake. These men came with no animosity to the German people, but firmly determined to bring to reason those who had assumed the control of their destinies, and so greatly abused their trust. Their kindness to German prisoners and wounded has been touching. A letter before me from a brother officer of a dead soldier says, "He continually spoke to his men of the good points of the Germans." The anxiety expressed by two friends of my own on going to the front was lest they might unhappily meet in combat German friends and acquaintances. Germany's inhuman conduct of the War by land and sea has succeeded in doing what would have seemed impossible when War was declared. It has drawn into the Army many Socialists—six volunteered at an early date from the staff of a small Socialist paper—and even hundreds of Quakers and intellectuals who in ordinary circumstances are all bitterly opposed to War. These men, against their proclaimed convictions, have taken up arms and have in many cases given their lives, for no other reason than to restrain and reform a Power which, after committing an outrage on Public Right, was callously inflicting incredible miseries. They felt that German militarism stands for a conception of International relations and public morality that, if not destroyed, must be subversive of Civilisation, and that there is no other way than for those who realise this and care for the welfare of mankind to fight to the death, as a kind of International Police Force, against a criminal Power.

THE VERDICT OF HISTORY.—Nor should we forget the sacrifice made by the men who first landed in France before the Volunteers could be trained.† The British Army, as history knew it, has ceased to

---

\* As out of every 13 men above twenty years old about 9 are electors the masses of the people have been accustomed to take a close interest in public affairs.

† It is evidence of how little Great Britain contemplated War that, for lack of uniforms, many of these volunteers had to be trained in civilian clothing.

The Modest Villa in which  
the King of the Belgians has  
lived during the War

戦争中白耳義王の住める  
質素なる住宅



#### THE BELGIAN CROWN PRINCE

His Royal Highness is a Soldier of the 12th Regiment. This photograph was taken by Her Majesty the Queen of the Belgians. Both photographs are kindly lent by His Excellency Count Della Faille.

#### 白耳義皇太子殿下

殿下は第十二聯隊の一兵卒にてあらせらる、此御肖像は白耳義女王陛下御自身の御撮影に係る、右二の寫眞はデラ・フアイ伯閣下が親切にも貸與せられたるものなり。





King George and  
King Albert

皇帝ジョージ陛下及  
皇帝アルバート陛下

exist. Probably not 10 per cent. of the force which crossed the Channel in August 1914 is left on this earth. History will speak of the nobility of that first Army and of the civilian soldiers who have taken its place. It is in the conviction that History will declare that no troops ever offered up their lives for a purpose less self-seeking and less tainted with low aims and base feelings, that I have tried in this book to set before my Japanese friends what moved my countrymen to draw the sword.



## CHAPTER XXIII

### THE CONCLUSION OF THE WHOLE MATTER

#### WHY PEACE IS HINDERED

WHERE JAPAN IS CONCERNED.—This War is not only worthy of study because nothing more astounding or more profitable to ponder has happened in the relations of States in modern times. It is worthy of study because Japan is an Ally of Great Britain. One duty of Allies, if their Alliance is to be fruitful and lasting, is for them to lose no opportunity of improving their knowledge of one another. Without fully understanding the motives which animated the British people in this War, the British people must be unknown in those respects in which it is most vital for an Allied people to know them. Nothing puts the quality of a nation's morality to a severer test, nothing shows more clearly what a nation's morality is really worth than War. In the Wars of 1894 and 1904 the morality of Japan was most severely tested and set in the clearest possible light. The same thing has now happened to the morality of Great Britain, Belgium and Germany. The War has allowed nothing to be hid about their morality. The War has laid bare the absolute truth. The British people, in supporting their Government in declaring War on Germany and in resolutely carrying on that War have not been moved by political, commercial or material considerations. They have been influenced by the German treatment of the Belgians and by the conviction that it is their duty to resist and overthrow the base and perilous conception of International Morality which the rulers of Germany are endeavouring to force on the world.

VAIN PEACE TALK.—Some well meaning people, deploring all the horrors and waste of the War, say "the War has gone on long enough and should stop." They vaguely propose "Conciliation." Those of us whose relatives and friends have died in this War, and are likely to hear at any time of the deaths of still more relatives and friends, those of us who know how much has been sacrificed and how much is still to be sacrificed in this War, those of us who feel how alien to all ideas of human progress and enlightenment is this terrible slaughter, are in no need of anyone preaching Peace to us. Every day we look forward to the time when Peace shall come. But if there is one lesson to

be learnt from this War it is the folly of "crying, 'Peace, peace, when there is no peace.'" We cannot have a further reign of International Make-Believe throughout the world. Peace can only be based on a sound and honourable conception of International relations and International Morality. We must make a settlement which is founded not in mere weariness but in reason and in strength of purpose. An unworthy Peace, as the French Premier has just said, is "an insult to the dead." Conciliation is a good thing; "blessed are the peacemakers." But as another French statesman, M. Clemenceau, asks pointedly, "conciliation as to what?"

"Did we before the War ask anything of Germany? Have we since the War anything to ask save independence and liberty, and the reparation of the unjust harm done? What possible conciliation can be imagined concerning these matters?"

GERMANY THE ONLY OBSTACLE TO PEACE.—In the first week of the third year of the War one of the most responsible of London weeklies announced that it would open its columns to a discussion of the "conditions and principles" on which Peace might be established. Then came the Fryatt case, and the following week, the proposed peace discussion was abandoned with the announcement:

"The country will not think of Peace while Germany conducts War on lines of piracy, and invents a code of sea law to terrify us into acquiescence in it."

It is not the Allied Powers, but an utterly unregenerate Germany which stands in the way of Peace.

WHERE THE GERMAN CODE IS TAKING US.—Captain Fryatt commanded one of the Great Eastern Railway Company's regular passenger boats between Harwich and Holland. He was shot by the Germans, after a hurried court martial, for trying to save his ship by attempting to ram a submarine. His execution was in flagrant opposition to all sea law, including German law. Paragraph 11 of the code of German prize law, issued six months before the War began, expressly says of a merchant vessel resisting capture, that "the crew are to be treated as prisoners of war." A manual of sea warfare by Dr. Wehberg, an assessor of the German Admiralty Court, published six months after the outbreak of War, says, "Active resistance has no influence on the fate of the crew of an enemy merchantman." As Dr. Wehberg points out, and every student knows, a merchantship in resisting capture, does not incur the penalties of the *franc tireur*. The German plea at the court martial was the monstrous one that the captain who resists an illegal



attack upon his passengers and crew, and takes the only means of protecting them from certain death is a franc-tireur and an assassin. On which the London journal which in past years has shown the most friendliness towards Germany properly remarked that this plea, and many like pleas with which the Germans have sought to justify their barbarities by land and sea, are leading straight to the doctrine that the German soldier or sailor may commit any atrocity that he thinks convenient to his purpose.

THE NEXT GERMAN HORROR.—What will come next? "If necessary," writes Dr. Heinz Potholf, (leader of the Progressive People's Party in the Rhineland, and a former member of the Reichstag), in his "Volk oder Staat," "we must kill the hundreds of thousands of prisoners who are now consuming our supplies." His is not a solitary voice. Karl Strupp says in the German "Yearbook of International Law," "Prisoners may be allowed to die of hunger if the commander considers that this is the sole mean of carrying out an order which he has received." It is idle to talk of peace with a people which has as yet no conception of its awful responsibility for causing bloodshed such as has never appalled the world since history began, a people which has even now in its seared heart the preparation of fresh iniquities.

"The sin that practice burns into the blood,  
And not the one dark hour which brings remorse,  
Will brand

the German nation. Of the German people it may be said:

"They paid the price to reach their goal  
Across a world in flame;  
But their own hate slew their own soul  
Before that victory came."

The catastrophe which has overtaken Europe will not have been suffered in vain if the world should learn to what moral disaster a nation may be carried by a kultur which is rooted in materialism.

THE ALLIES' PEACE TERMS.—There can be no doubt as to why Great Britain and the Allies continue fighting. Here are the words of the Prime Minister:

"Great Britain and France alike entered the War not to strangle Germany, not to wipe her off the map of Europe, and to destroy or mutilate her national life, certainly not to interfere with (to use the German Chancillon's language), the 'free existence of her national endeavors.' We were driven both here and in France to take up arms in

獨帝「見よ爾はあらゆるものを失へるを」  
 白耳義王「されど尙我が魂は失はず」(パンチより)



From "Punch"

## 12.—DIFFERENT POINTS OF VIEW

GERMAN EMPEROR: "You see you have lost everything."

KING OF THE BELGIANS: "Not my soul."



order to prevent Germany (which for this purpose means Prussia) from establishing a position of military menace and dominance over her neighbors. On several occasions in the last ten years Germany has given evidence of her intention to dictate to Europe under threat of War ; and in violating the neutrality of Belgium she proved that she meant to establish her ascendancy even at the price of a universal War and of tearing up the basis of European policy as established by treaty. The purpose of the Allies in the War is to defeat that attempt ; and thereby to pave the way for an international system which will secure the principle of equal rights for all civilised States."

If that is not plain enough, the words of one of the greatest of British oversea administrators, Lord Cromer, may be quoted :

"We wish to destroy, not the military power of Prussia, but the militarist party dominant in that country."

This work "must be, however," he is careful to add, "the work of the Germans themselves. It would be a fatal error to endeavour to impose from without any internal reforms on Germany."

"But we cannot, in justice to ourselves, to the rest of Europe, and to posterity, lay down the sword until the Germans are converted, and until they wake up to the fact that their present policy and system of government constitute a curse both to themselves and the rest of the civilized world. No such conversion can take place until the complete failure of their system is rendered so clear to whatever sane elements remain in Germany as to encourage them to throw off the yoke and again enter into the comity of civilized nations from which they are now banished."

# APPENDIX

## THE BRITISH CHARACTER IN WORLD HISTORY

### A SWISS WRITER'S COLLECTION OF FACTS FROM A HUNDRED YEARS

BY M. ANDRÉ DE BAVIER, IN THE "REVUE DES JEUNES,"  
APRIL 10, 1916

MANY, while they honour British honesty, continue to ignore the idealistic side of English policy. The British nation has had its hours of expansion and conquest. But we must not conclude that the English are incapable of justice and generosity because they have carved out a vast Empire for themselves. They govern it with true liberalism, and on many occasions they have striven to submit their policy to the exigencies of morality.

The Englishman, as a rule, abstains from any invocation of the great principles that govern his conduct. He has a sense of modesty in all that touches his most intimate feelings. Rhetoric and theatrical flourish are so repugnant to him that he always fears he may exaggerate his thought and fail in sincerity to himself. Moreover, his idealism differs entirely from that of the Latins. The Frenchman is full of enthusiasm for ideas as such; he loves theories and abstractions. The Englishman is the very reverse of an ideologist; but this does not prevent him from being an idealist. His phlegmatic exterior often conceals a passionate soul. His religious turn of mind causes him to look at life in its moral aspects. His sentimental life, which is no less delicate than intense, makes him sensitive to the pain of others. If he is somewhat indifferent to philosophical considerations, he is moved at once when he realises injustice.

It was the English who, at the Congress of Vienna in 1815, demanded and obtained a general declaration against the slave trade. In 1834, the British law set free 800,000 slaves at a sacrifice of £ 20,000,000, an immense sum for that period.

England enthusiastically followed the War of independence of the States of South America against Spain and the revolt of the Greeks against the Turks. Distinguished Englishmen went so far as to offer their services to the South Americans and the Greeks. Admiral Lord Cochrane re-organised the Chilean navy. The Spanish Viceroy was indignant, and expressed his surprise that a British nobleman should so far lower himself as to espouse the cause of rebels. To this Cochrane made the proud



reply: "A British nobleman has a right to adopt any country which is endeavouring to re-establish the rights of aggrieved humanity." In 1827, we find Cochrane in Greece, fighting against the Turks. He was associated with several of his compatriots, among them Byron, who died in Greece, and Sir Richard Church, the hero of Lepanto. England remained the faithful friend of Greece. The English envoy at Constantinople in 1830, obtained the Volo-Arta frontier for the youthful kingdom. In 1862, England ceded the Ionian Islands to the present King George as a coronation gift. In 1880, Gladstone brought about the restitution of Thessaly and a portion of the Epirus to Greece.

England, moreover, has always favoured the small States. In 1847, Switzerland was threatened with a civil war. Austria and Prussia were eager to take advantage of the crisis, and intervene. England, happily, was on the alert. The chance of foreign intervention thus disappeared, and Switzerland was saved.

The efforts of the Italians to throw off the Austrian yoke were followed with lively sympathy in England. At the Congress of Troppau in 1820, we find England already combating all idea of foreign intervention in Italy. In 1847, divining that Austria was making ready for War, Palmerston sent Lord Minto to Italy, who assured the King of Sardinia of England's friendship. The following year, Palmerston caused arms to be conveyed to the Sicilians who had risen in revolt. At the Congress of Paris, in 1856, he demanded the evacuation of Tuscany by the Austrians.

The secret of Palmerston's ascendancy over the British people, until his death, lay in the fact that he understood how to appeal to their chivalrous feeling. As Mr. Low tells us in his *Political History of England*: "His countrymen felt proud of a statesman who upheld the weak against the strong, and constitutional rule against autocracy."

In 1895 and 1896, the Armenian massacres took place. Public opinion was violently agitated. Meeting followed meeting. The other Powers refused to take action, but Gladstone, demanded that England should put an end to the scandal. Gladstone, made an eloquent speech against the Turks when he was eighty-eight years old. The support given to the Sultan by the German Emperor unhappily prevented any effectual intervention on the part of England, but British opinion had given a noble proof of disinterested idealism.

But more than this: *whenever an English Government has been guilty of an injustice, there has always been a party of courageous men in the country to resist it.* At the time of the famous War known as the Opium War Lord Ashley proposed the suppression of the opium trade, and Gladstone, Sir James Graham and Peel denounced the action of the Government. They all but gained the support of Parliament, for the motion of censure was only rejected by a majority of nine votes out of five hundred. In 1857, Cobden was even more successful.

At the end of autumn of 1856, War broke out with China. Canton was bombarded by the British Fleet. Lord Derby in the House of Lords, and Cobden in the Commons, moved a vote of censure against the Government. The Government put up the best defence at its dis-

posal; the English flag had been insulted; it was necessary at any cost to safeguard British prestige and support Her Majesty's Commissioner at Hong Kong, who had thought it his duty to begin hostilities. It was impossible to draw back now that the Chinese had massacred several Europeans and burnt houses of business. The House of Commons nevertheless voted Cobden's motion. When we study the speeches delivered on this occasion, it is impossible not to be struck by their moral elevation.

Listen to Lord John Russell, a former Prime Minister, who was once more to hold that position: "We have heard much of the interests of commerce," he said. "We have heard much of the honour of England. To those who argue: 'It is true we have a bad case; it is true we were in the wrong; it is true we committed injustice, but we must persevere in that wrong; we must continue to act unjustly, or the Chinese will think that we are afraid,' I say: Be just and fear not. Whatever we lose in prestige, I am convinced that the character and honour of this country will be raised higher by such a policy."

Lord Robert Cecil, the future Lord Salisbury, declared that England ought not to provoke weak States like China, and that English statesmen should always be ready to repudiate any illegitimate act of aggression. Gladstone once more manifested his chivalrous spirit in one of the finest speeches of his life. In the final voting, the motion of censure was carried by 263 against 247 votes.

In 1880 a tempest of idealism shook the country and swept through the House of Commons. Gladstone, whose party had been in a minority for several years, organised a vast electoral campaign at the end of 1879, attacking Lord Beaconsfield's Government in the name of a singularly lofty conception of international policy. The eminent Liberal statesmen's criticisms were not all well founded, but the inspiration which animated the Gladstonian campaign, was admirable. Gladstone constantly exhorted the Government to respect the rights of others. "Large and small States should be treated with the same justice and the same respect," he cried at Edinburgh. "Remember," he said in a speech at Glasgow, "that the sanctity of life in the hill villages of Afghanistan is as inviolable in the eye of Almighty God as can be your own." And the people of Great Britain, whom the Germans would have us believe to be a coldly utilitarian people, responded to Gladstone's passionate appeals by returning him to power a second time.

In England, political life, the domain of compromise offers, many noble examples of this sense of duty. Men like the Conservative Peel and the Liberal Gladstone have not hesitated to sacrifice all to the cause they considered just. Peel knew quite well that he was ruining his political career when he passed the Bill for the abolition of the corn duties, in opposition to the majority of his own party. Gladstone, beaten in the elections of 1886 on the question of Irish autonomy, preferred to make his return to power very doubtful rather than renounce the policy of Home Rule.

"England expects every man to do his duty," said Nelson shortly before his death. It is this love of duty which has transformed thou-



sands of Englishmen into apostles. But this love of duty is in itself only an effect. Its cause must be sought in the depths of the English spirit.

## *THE BRITISH CHARACTER IN THE PRESENT WAR*

*BY TWO JAPANESE WRITERS*

*I.—MR. RYUKEI YANO IN THE "TOKYO NICHU NICHU,"  
SEPT. 25, 1916\**

"THERE are no people so easily misunderstood as Englishmen, and none who so easily misunderstand others as Japanese." I should not wonder if there were some truth in these words. The British are very slow and the Japanese are very quick. I cannot imagine that there will ever be a fundamental shaking of the Anglo-Japanese Alliance, but Japanese will serve a good cause by being more narrowly careful in matters of detail. Once they make up their minds, firmly and step by step, the British gain ground and never stop till they get there, though slowly. And they are peerless in their loyalty to their pledged word. These are the beautiful traits of Englishmen, though they may have their shortcomings.

They have taken up arms with the Allies, and they may be depended upon to do their part heart and soul. But they are heavy and slow. In the eyes of the impatient Japanese, their movements are tantalizing, so much so that they are apt to cry: "What can those British be doing? Surely they are not napping, are they? Do they mean to make the French and Russians pull the chestnuts out of fire, while they go piling up their gains behind their back, taking in all the enemy colonies?" The British are liable to arouse such suspicions in the minds not only of Japanese, but even of neutrals. Such suspicions are not unnatural to hasty minds; but given sufficient time they are sure to disprove themselves. To judge Englishmen, it is necessary, therefore, to wait till the end is reached.

Not accustomed to land fighting, the British took things easy at first and I should not be surprised if they were in the habit of shaving every morning in the trenches. So slow and complacent are they, they can work themselves up to great valours and in the end they are sure to come out on top. As a rule they do not betray passion, and they are often a puzzle to those who are not familiar with their ways.

---

\* The translation is that which was made by the *Japan Times*.

Another trait of theirs is that they tell every thing exactly as it is and never try to gloss over things, a trait practicable only by men who are veracious and large-hearted. Look at their War reports. Reverses are reported as reverses and nothing is concealed. Take, for instance, the recent naval engagement; its report was such a crystallization of truth that once made public there was no necessity to correct it later.

There is equal bigness about them whether beaten or victorious. The Germans are quite different. They conceal defeats. They juggle with the number of their ships lost or damaged. Many of our countrymen with their usual hastiness, were to their chagrin deluded into a belief that the British had sustained a crushing defeat when they first read the report of that sea battle.

Standing in the midst of impenetrable smoke, with shells exploding left, right and overhead, and the poison gas rolling over the ground, any people but British show excitement with their hair standing on end, as one may say in Oriental fashion. Not so with the British. With not a muscle of their face twitching they go about their work the very picture of composure and calmness. These are the characteristics that our countrymen should grasp well, in order to understand the British.

One side so slow and deliberate, and the other side so impatient and hasty, it was really marvelous that an Alliance was possible between the British and Japanese. So may write historians of the future. But different in so many respects, there is one point of supreme importance which the two races have in common. That point is the "samurai" spirit coming down from feudal days, that goes into the life of the two people. Here they feel and act alike. Slowness or hastiness is after all a small detail. That "samurai" spirit which enables one to talk and laugh in the face of death is the strong bond that binds the two races.

With a fleet twice as large as that of Germany, Great Britain firmly controls the supremacy of the seas and is shouldering the great task of maintaining the blockade. That is not all: she is accommodating her Allies with money and munitions. With these alone she is taking her full share of the War. But in addition, she has raised an army of above five million men. That means no small sacrifice. Great Britain, one should say, is indeed doing more than her share.

In the great Napoleonic War England gained in energy and effort when the other countries began to get exhausted from long fighting. The same thing is happening again. When the other belligerents are beginning to feel the effect of the struggle, the British are slowly working themselves up to a fighting mood. It is only from now on that the true value of the British may be judged. When treating of the British, nothing should be so thoroughly shunned as hasty fault-finding.

2.—FROM A LEADING ARTICLE IN THE "HERALD OF ASIA," EDITED  
BY MR. MOTOSADA ZUMOTO, OCT. 21, 1916

A NATION which has succeeded in raising millions of soldiers fighting for the freedom of their country and ideals, out of a race which seemed



to be hopelessly individualistic; a nation which can console themselves in the tragic loss of their greatest hero with the idea that there are a number of substitutes among them; a nation which hardly takes notice of the harsh criticisms of the Anglo-Japanese Alliance, in a moment when they have every right to expect nothing but sympathy from a friend; a nation which remained perfectly calm over the fatal error made in the Balkan campaign—such a nation and its literature, afford a living lesson by which all Japanese would fain learn and improve themselves, and for which their past experience and training have admirably fitted them.

---

### *BRITAIN'S BUSHIDO*

#### *A FRENCH WRITER ON THE BRITISH AND JAPANESE SPIRIT*

*BY M. PAUL GAULTIER IN THE "REVUE BLEUE,"  
JULY 8TH 1916*

IF the Allies had ever needed reassurance, nothing could better have fortified their hopes than the miraculous transformation of England. For England, of all countries on earth the least prepared for War on land, has developed into a military Power of the first rank. And the transformation is the more striking in that England, to achieve it, has had to run counter to all her own traditions.

Peace-loving in the extreme, England of all things hated conscription. Of her own accord England adopted it. England of all countries is most jealous of her liberties, most suspicious of encroachments on them by her rulers. Yet England deliberately bowed beneath the authority of the State, not only in matters military, but in all her industrial life as well, so as the more promptly and thoroughly to supply the imperative necessities of her armies. And such a sacrifice means no less than that England, motherland of all freedom, has calmly chosen, in the cause of a higher freedom, to lay down her liberty, for the sake of other rights and other liberties oppressed and trampled on. Better still, it was in freedom that England abdicated her freedom. It was by a supreme act of her liberty that she sacrificed her liberty for the sake of victory. In fact, it was in ultimate obedience to her character that England has violated her character, and, in that strength of individualism and sense of individual values which is so essentially the British spirit, has found the secret of merging all in militarism, the very thing in itself most abhorrent to British feelings.

Talk of peace-loving. England was peace-loving indeed in 1914. The history of the crisis from which the War was born makes this as clear as daylight. Paléologue, Cambon, Poincaré all come to England from France urging the Cabinet to range England openly on the side of France and Russia, so as to scare off the catastrophe. And all the British Cabinet will answer, even up to July 25th, is that England will find it hard to remain neutral if the War grows general. On the 27th the Government can only guarantee to the Russian Chancellor its "diplomatic support." On the 29th Sir Edward Grey warns the French Ambassador that England retains her freedom of action or inaction. Finally on the 31st, on the French President's appeal that War will be averted if England openly makes common cause with France, the British Ambassador in Paris answers for the Foreign Office that nobody in England considers the country in any way bound to take part in the European quarrel, and that consequently it is impossible to promise the participation of Great Britain. And then comes August 4th and the violation of Belgium. Germany and England had guaranteed the neutrality of Belgium. Germany has broken the bond. England immediately steps out on to the side of the Allies, and War is declared.

The Asquith Cabinet inherits all the traditions of the Campbell Bannerman Cabinet, called into being by the reaction against the South African War. The Asquith Cabinet was entirely absorbed with social reform and social progress. The fact that the British Government, despite the bond between France and England, did not from the very beginning range itself on the side of France, means that, before doing so, it had to be sure of public opinion; for in England not only is any Government powerless against public opinion, but even without it. And this shows clearly on every count that English public opinion was not at that time inclined to War.

In July 1914, then, England's mind is for peace. War, for England, is an abstract idea. She does not know it: therefore she does not fear it. Especially as the Britisher, eminently unimaginative and dependent on "facts," is unable to believe or realise (his pet phrase) anything he does not actually see.

The French had this truth enforced upon them by England's slowness to achieve unity. To give England any real idea of the monstrous horrors meant by modern War, the country not only had to be flooded with accounts and pictures, but actual exhibitions of returned wounded had to be put in circulation among the public and even "personally conducted tours" to the front must needs be arranged.

After all, how *should* England have grasped the terrors of War, safe as she feels herself, like Japan, in her setting of sea? The Mongol failed to set foot in Japan; only the Norman a thousand years ago, has ever successfully set foot in England. Small wonder if England, crystallized in devotion to her past, has developed a consciousness of immemorial security. A consciousness, indeed, making sometimes for such over-complacent optimism that again and again her leaders, her newspapers, and her orators have been driven to over-emphasise their pessimism, in the sheer necessity of scarifying England into motion—



England so slow and difficult of movement—in the very perfection of her national health and nervous balance.

Even by her habits of civilisation, that true civilisation which holds all violence in supreme detestation, England was peace-loving before the War. Even her national religious spirit, always inclined to the ethical rather than the metaphysical, encourages England to hold War in contempt. The law of Moses says "Thou shalt not kill." Just try to realise then, what this categoric prohibition may mean for a puritan soul (such as is common in England) which believes itself responsible for all its actions directly to the Powers of Heaven alone. What excuse can such a man draw from his earthly officer's order to shoot? How can he figure the Christian God in khaki, driving a bayonet through the belly of a German workman? The Christian Saviour firing a mitrailleuse on an ambushed German column? "No" says the "Conscientious Objector," the very notion is preposterous, and that is enough for me. I cannot countenance War, not even a defensive War." He takes, in fact, the Buddha-view rigidly and in its entirety, nor will he encourage anyone else to take part in an action that he himself considers to be morally evil. For instance, the Chaplain of a Cambridge College denounces even the Archbishops for talking about the liberty and safety of England, and of her position in the world, as if any earthly danger or urgency whatsoever could weigh against the positive commands of the Prince of Peace,—(a title of the Christian Jesus, equivalent to that of the coming Buddha). There is even a Christian sect, the Quakers-whose convictions are so firm on this point that it was felt necessary to exempt them from Conscription. And of this very scruple, too, certain Socialists have not failed to make capital.

Furthermore, England was peace-loving more especially through her hatred of militarism. While Germany is a huge machine in which each citizen is glad to be as a nut or bolt, England is a vast association of Englishmen, each one of whom in himself *is* England. England is not, for Englishmen, the implacable and dominating divinity that Germany is over Germans, not the beloved Motherland of France for whom all her sons are glad to suffer and die, not the immemorial ancestral Holiness that is Japan: England is each man's own self, his very incarnation. Thus you can understand why the Englishman always feels at home. Wherever he goes he takes his England with him. And thus, even more, you can understand what blank and bitter shame possesses an Englishman (who has never been a soldier or had any necessity for being one) when suddenly, by inevitable military exigency, he finds himself reduced to the level of a mere instrument. Nothing could be more abhorrent, not only to the national character itself, passionately devoted to individual liberty as it is, but also to the whole upbringing of each Englishman, a long and sedulous cult of his own personal individuality. The very spirit of England, in fact, is violated by the notion. "How can a slave be free?" asked Lord Dysart, speaking on Conscription in the House of Lords. What it comes to is that in the eyes of most Englishmen conscription was bound to be a

blow to England's self-respect. This is the real underlying reason why conscription has met with such opposition, and why voluntary enlistment was so long preferred. Why, to this day, some of the finest minds in Great Britain remain of the opinion almost universally held before August 2nd 1914, and still maintain that on the field of battle one volunteer is worth many conscripted men. Sir John Simon believes that the superior moral value of the volunteer is as three to one, and Colonel Seeley puts it is high as ten to one.

It was really out of pure individualism and force of personal conscience that 3,000,000 Englishmen came crowding immediately to the colours, on hearing of outraged Belgium and the unknightly uglinesses to which the German armies were descended. For it is exactly and literally true that because of that scrap of paper guaranteeing to Belgium an inviolable security, and because the signature of England foots that document, that in one crowd all England—gentlemen, merchants, labourers, miners, workmen—came hurrying spontaneously to the service of their King. It was not that they thought of England and her peril: they had not yet begun to realise that there was any. They thought only of upholding the word and the honour of England, and remembered nothing but their anger against the crimes of Germany. Never yet has such a sight been seen. You may say, in very truth, that those earliest volunteers were Crusaders, going forth to War against the Powers of Evil, precisely represented for them on earth by the German with his lack of scruple or code of conduct. The Zeppelin raids, the bombs dropped on defenceless open towns, in time intensified men's horror and brought home to men's minds the danger that impended over England, and by a natural consequence, only swelled the armies of free citizens in arms. So absolutely true it is that with a high-hearted nation the terrorising methods of the Germans produce the precisely opposite effect to that intended.

In every method used to inspire recruiting, in every advertisement, in all popular appeals framed to fit the exigencies of English taste you can see even more clearly that what was moving all these millions of Britishers to offer the glad sacrifice of their lives was not even a desire to stand well with the wave of public opinion, but nothing more than each man's own sense of personal honour and imperative personal decency. It was to feel clean in his own eyes that each man joined.

This is a typical English trait, to such an intensity has a Britisher's feeling of independent responsibility ingrained in him the necessity of standing well with himself. And therefore it was that all the appeals had to aim at each man's personal conscience. "Duty" was the keynote of every placard and poster. Kitchener and Roberts from every hoarding urged their countrymen to do their duty, and every picture on the walls was aimed to reach various points of a man's self-respect. And, as gradually the best men had joined, the same appeal was pressed closer and closer home to the rest. Finally when every summons, every urgency had been exhausted, the last "slackers" who lingered were called upon in their homes, and personally urged to "do their duty." Well might Lord Derby, calling out to the remaining



manhood of the country to come forward freely to do its duty before it was compelled, describe this service, with only apparent contradiction, as "compulsory free service."

Finally Conscription itself passed into law on May the 16th 1916, and only so passed by a free conjunction of the whole national will. So that without paradox, one may seriously say that the heaviest blow ever dealt to the liberty of England was dealt by that very liberty itself. Let there be no mistake. If British public opinion, absolute sovereign in Great Britain, had not been wholly won to Conscription, there is no imaginable Government that could possibly have imposed Conscription on Great Britain. And if British public opinion was so converted,—and a conversion it was, indeed,—the dominating causes of that conversion were moral ones.

I do not mean to pretend, of course, that England's danger from German ambitions counted for nothing. The English are far too practical to have remained blind to such a point. It was even their utilitarianism which, after 16 months of voluntary recruiting, turned towards Conscription as the best remedy for a state of things which, in the very nature of free service, was bound to sacrifice the flower of the nation and leave the weeds untroubled.

In the same way the transformation of the whole of England into one vast factory of War material was the result of millions of private initiatives all converging to one end, in exact contrast with the motive force of Prussia, which is external authority. And remember, British organisation has never yet submitted to a predetermined plan deliberately followed out; it rather copies the processes of Nature, which advances gropingly in a succession of experiments, sometimes contradictory and often abortive. And Nature's own favourite method is by association, which while safeguarding individuality, yet quadruples the utility of each in the whole. This is the British fashion also. Its achievement is stability, though at the price of a deliberateness which certainly had its share in delaying the industrial adaptation of Great Britain to the needs of the War.

The hardest task of all, Lord Buddha says, is to change one's self. And this task England has achieved of her own accord, in pure honour and in defence of that liberty which stands at the opposite pole to Prussian militarism.

And, if you want to realise, too, that England's characteristic pleasure in effort has collaborated in this national transformation, you have only to glance at the splendid great jolly fellows who are filling the Front. One glance will convince you. The Britisher, of course, is not an intellectualist in the same sense as the Frenchman is. The Frenchman revels in discussion and introspection of every sort on every subject while the Britisher, on the contrary, does not consider intelligence as an end in itself, nor even as a very important thing anyhow. To counterbalance this, he is amazingly courageous, and—what counts yet more—he deliberately ranks courage above intellect. Not, goodness knows, that the Englishman is not intelligent. A long line of philosophers and students give the lie to any such notion. But what I mean to say is, that England subordinates thought to action.

Everything in English life tends towards the national cult of action, —education, which is essentially a training in character; sport, which is essentially practice in quick decision, and that samurai-like sense of personal dignity which really goes hand in hand with his religion and his ethics, to make up the personality of each individual Englishman. Yes, and even the balance of an Englishman's nerves and the force of his manhood, (yet further developed by physical exercise) combine to play their part in whetting his natural taste for effort to a yet keener edge.

That almost Japanese self-control which marks the British soldier is the best proof of this. And this self-control comes out in the calm with which "Tommy" confronts the most hideous situations. He gets into no flurry, he yields no step: he dies where he stands. Hence the appalling scale of losses in the British army. Only a Japanese could understand so absolute a stoicism, verging on the callous were it not relieved by the touch of humour lightening in a cool clear gaiety: or sympathise wholly with Tommy, up to the knees in the water of a Flemish trench beneath the unremitting lances of the rain, lifting up his hearty chorus of "Somewhere the sun is shining." And you may find further proof of that cult of the indomitable will which an Englishman takes with him everywhere, in the special care which all English soldiers have of their personal decency and their fashion of living. To them their self respect depends inevitably on personal will, and you may safely say that to an Englishman his conditions of life mean very much more than comfort. They involve his most intimate pride in himself. What British officer would go into battle unshaved, for instance? He would feel himself lessened and lowered in his own sight.

And indeed before the unworthy tricks and the cruelties of the Germans had opened their eyes, the British soldiers took the War just as a game, though longer and more perilous than most. They brought to it that same sense of honour and fair play which shines in their games, and dearly did they pay for it again and again.

Thus, the more scrupulously to "play the game" and observe the Declaration of London—never even passed into law by Parliament,—England waited for many months before proclaiming corn and cotton as contraband of war. And a more startling instance yet: not only in the beginnings of the War were Germans allowed to circulate freely in Great Britain, but British warships had orders to give free passage to German reservists. Could such an extreme pitch of scrupulous chivalry be easily paralleled? On the other hand, up to the moment when England grew convinced that its enemy was not "playing the game," there was no trace of hatred for the Germans in any English soldier's mind. "They're a very decent set fellows," writes one; another shakes hands all round with his prisoners. And even when the British soldiers came awake at last to German treachery, an astonished contempt was their dominant emotion. But that astonished contempt became a very potent factor in England's developed determination to carry the war right through to its end, were the task to take 10 years. To England, the defeat Germany has become a question of Heaven's just vengeance, with England for its instrument in punishing sin.



And indeed, let the German make no error. The unprofessional levity of the Tommy, with his games of football between two assaults, does not even conceal, but proves and itself reveals an inexorable determination that takes no count of time. In point of fact, during the first months of the European War, the majority of English people looked on it as just yet another of the trifling colonial expeditions—the only form of War; remember, that England has known for centuries past—which by no means monopolise the energies of the country, and allow everyday life to go on quite as usual. And then England began to understand, bit by bit, that this time she was faced by a battle for her own very existence, the first she has known for a thousand years. And it is for this life-and-death combat that England has achieved her deliberate transformation of herself. In one word, with a free heart she has made herself the slave of War. And this means that, standing in defence over her heritage of liberties, the fruits of her own spirit, England confronts the German machine in a supreme appeal to all that is deepest and most spontaneous in her own nature. And in the unfaltering answer to that appeal, she advances to the conquest of Germany, invincible in her conquest of herself.

---

### *Translation of Proclamations*

(Page 25)

#### TO THE INHABITANTS OF THE LIEGE DISTRICT

Powerful Germany invades our land after an ultimatum which constitutes an outrage.

Little Belgium proudly takes up the challenge,

The Army will do its duty!

The population of the Liège district will do its duty!

Further, it will continue to give an example of restraint and of respect for the law.

Its ardent patriotism is the assurance of its behaviour.

Long live the King, Commander in Chief of the Army!

Long live Belgium!

LEMAN, Lieutenant General and Military

Governor of Liège.

August 4, 1914.

(Page 31)

PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT OF NAMUR

MOST IMPORTANT NOTICE

The Civil Governor draws the most serious attention of the inhabitants of the Province to the very great danger which may arise for civilians using firearms against the enemy.

They must in this matter unquestionably observe the utmost care.

The duty of defending the country is laid upon the military alone.

The least failure to observe this warning is likely to provoke reprisals, firing, etc.

MICHEL, Military Governor

Approved, BARON DE MONTPELLIE.

Namur August 7, 1914.

(Page 33)

NOTICE

Whoever has in his possession firearms (guns, rifles, revolvers), whether a private person or a shopkeeper, must, without fail, deliver them to the Town Office, not later than Monday 17th from 10. a. m. to noon.

All arms deposited must bear the address of the owner.

A receipt will be given.

The Home Minister warns civilians, if the enemy should appear in their district:

Not to fight;

Not to insult or threaten;

To stay indoors and shut the windows so that the enemy shall not be able to say that there has been provocation.

If soldiers enter a house or an isolated hamlet to defend themselves the inhabitants should leave at once so that no charge may be made that civilians have fired.

Any act of violence by a single civilian would be criminal and would render him liable to arrest and punishment. Such an act of violence by a civilian might serve as a pretext for bloody reprisals, looting, massacres of the innocent population women and children.

DR. EVERAERTS, Burgomaster.

Fleurus, 14th August, 1914.



(Page 46)

## TOWN OF DINANT

Those who have lists of the bodies exhumed (series A.) must *without any delay* deliver them to the Town Office.

Those who do not comply with this formal Order of the German authorities are liable to be severely dealt with.

F. BRIBOSIA, Burgomaster.

Dinant 20th Oct. 1914.





大正五年十二月十五日印刷  
大正五年十二月十八日發行  
大正六年一月五日再版印刷發行

金壹圓八拾錢

|        |        |
|--------|--------|
| 不<br>許 | 複<br>製 |
|--------|--------|

編輯者兼  
發行者

東京市麻布區市兵衛町二丁目十二番地

ジエー、ダブリユー  
ロバートソン、スコット

東京市芝區新錢座町十番地

印刷者

齋藤 千吉

東京市芝區新錢座町十番地

印刷所

近藤商店印刷所

東京市日本橋區通三丁目一四、一五、一六番地

賣捌所

大阪京都  
福岡仙臺

丸善株式會社





一千九百十四年八月十四日

フリユールスに於て

市長

ドクトル、エヴラーツ

(英文四十六頁)

デナン市

發掘せる死體の表(A號)を所持する者ある時は即刻之を市役所に送附すべし。獨逸官憲此の正式の命令に違背する者は嚴罰に處せらるべし。

一千九百十四年十月二十日

デナンに於て

市長

ブリボシヤ

右承認す

男 爵      ド、モ      ン      ベ      リ      ー

（英文三十三頁）

掲 示

何人と雖ども火器（大砲、小銃、拳銃）を所藏する者は、自用と商品とを問はず、來る十七日月曜日までに午前十時より正午までの間、相違なく之を市役所に差出すべし。

差出したる武器には其所有者の住所姓名を付すべし。

右は凡て受領證を交付す。

敵兵來るに際し内務大臣が軍人以外の人民に警告する處は

戦ふこと勿れ。

敵を凌辱し若しくは脅すこと勿れ。

敵をして我れより反抗を受けたりと云はしめざる様、皆屋内に止まり窓を鎖すべし。

若し軍隊が自衛のために民家若しくは獨立村落に立入る場合には、住民は直ちに立退き人民が發銃せりとの誣言なきを期すべし。

人民の一人にしても之れを犯す者ある時は、其爲めに罪せられて逮捕懲罰を受くるに至るべく、從て慘酷なる復讐戰、掠奪、又た婦女小兒等無辜の住民の虐殺を行ふべき口實を與ふるに至るべし。

其熱烈なる愛國心こそは其行動の如何を證するに足る。

陸軍總司令官たる國王萬歲

白耳義萬歲

一千九百十四年八月四日

リエージュ總督陸軍中將レーマン

(英文三十一頁)

ナムール州廳

最重要なる揭示

民政長官は州内の住民に對し、軍人以外の者が敵に向て火器を使用せば容易ならざる危險發生すべきを痛切に警告す。

住民は凡て命令の儘に充分の注意を以て服従せざる可からず。

國家防禦の任務は凡て陸軍に於て之に任す。

此訓戒を少しにても破らば爭奪砲撃等忽ち起るに至らん。

一千九百十四年八月七日

ナムールに於て

總督

ミシエール



國も漸次戦争の性質を解するに至つた。戦争は正しく自國の危急存亡に關するものであつた。建國一千年、英國は初めて斯んな國難に出逢つたのである。英國が一大革新を其の國情の上に加へたのは此の危急に處せんが爲めである。換言すれば英國國民は其の自由意志を以て戦争の奴隸となつたのである。即ち英國國民は其の不撓の精神を以て獲得したる先祖代々の遺産である自由てふものを守護せんとして、今や獨逸なる戦争機械に對持し而して其の國民性中の最高最大なるものに訴へて居るのである。實に其の訴は聞れた、それ故に英國國民は今日其克己の勢を以て、獨逸征服に従事して居るのである。

## 告示の譯文

(英文二十五頁)

リエージ地方の居住者に令す

雄猛なる獨逸は最後通牒を我に送り直ちに我が國土を侵略す、之れ暴逆なる行爲なり。

白耳義小なりと雖も堂々として復讐に立つ。

軍隊は其任務を完ふすべしリエージ地方の住民は其任務を完ふすべし。

其上常に忍耐と又た法令の尊重とに對する好模範を示すべし。

る。唯だ彼等が獨兵の憎むべきを思ふたのは、獨兵が公平な態度を取らず實に卑怯極まる振舞ひをすると云ふことを確めたる後に始まつたのである。されば初の中は、英兵は獨兵を見て敵と思はぬ位であつた。獨兵は頗る禮節に厚し。」是れ一英兵の書翰中に見る所である。また中には自分が監視して居る獨逸の捕虜と、誰れ彼れの隔てなく握手した英兵がある程である。尙ほまた英國が遂に獨兵の譎詐百出に目を醒ましたときでも、獨兵が憎いと云ふ考はそれ程に起らなかつたのである。起つたのは驚愕の念である。事の意外にあきれたのである。驚愕の念と共に浮んだのは侮蔑の念である。此の驚愕侮蔑、これぞ英國をして、たとへ戦争が十年かゝるとも、其の窮極を見るまでは斷じて戦争を休止せぬと云ふ猛然たる決意を起さしむる導火線となつたのである。蓋し英國は天意に背戻する殘虐の獨逸を膺懲するは、正しく天の爲めに復酬を謀る所以なることを自覺するに至つたのである。其の心に思ふやう、天我が英國を假つて、積惡の獨逸を所罰せしむと。

獨逸人は、勘違ひをして貰ひ度くない。英國の如上の態度は誇張でも何でもない。全く事實有りの儘の話である。英兵は氣輕て卒直である。フットボールの競技をしても直ぐ向きになり本氣になる。併して一度本氣になるが最後、英兵は時間を物の數ともせぬ。即ち時間が如何に長くかゝらうがそんな事には頓着なく、たゞ目的の遂行に其の全力を傾倒するを知るばかりである。事實を云へば歐洲戰亂の勃發後數ヶ月間と云ふもの、英國民の大多數は此の戰亂を以て些々たる植民地戰位ゐに見てゐたのである。尤も英國に取つては過去數世紀間初めて出逢ふ戰爭ではあつたのである。併し植民地に遠征軍を送る位であれば、決して國力を擧げて掛るの要もなく、國民の日常生活も平時の儘にして居られるのであるから、戰亂に對する英國の態度は甚だ悠長であつた。然るに英

嗜みと其の生活方法とに對して拂ふ細心の注意に於いて窺ふ事が出来るのである。英兵にとりては自重てふ事は必然個人の意志に關する問題である。かるが故に讀者諸君は生活狀態が英國人に對しては安樂以上の或る條件を俱備した問題だと斷言することが出来るのである。實に生活狀態に關する事柄は英國人にとり其の自尊心に密接なる關係を有する問題となるのである。故に英軍の士官にして髭を剃らずして戰場へ赴くものがあるであらうか。若しかゝる事を爲さねばならぬとしたらば其の士官は必ずや自身の嗜みが非常に傷けられたと考ふるであらう。

獨兵の不法行爲や殘忍な行爲に初めて目を醒ました其の以前英兵は實際の所戰爭を將に一個の競技と見て居たのである。尤も極めて長期な極めて危險な競技と見たは勿論であるが。さればこそ英兵は競技に臨むと同じ態度で戰爭に臨んだのである。平素の競技に於て其の最も重んずることは公平な態度を持つることである、卑怯な振舞ひをせぬことである。英兵は戰爭にも之を適用し爲めに一再ならず非常な損害を被らされたのである。併し英國は飽くまで競技に對する態度を維持せんとしたのである。かのロンドン宣言は法律として英國の議會を通過したものである。然るにも拘らず英國は此の宣言を固守し、幾閱月を経たる後初めて石炭と棉花とを戰時禁制品として布告するに至つたやうな譯である。英國の公平な態度に關し、更に驚くべき一の事例は、英國が戰爭の初期に、獨逸人が英國々内に於て自由に印刷物を配布するを許したのみならず、英國軍艦は無條件で獨逸の豫後備兵を其の本國へ送還したと云ふことである。かゝる義舉が容易に再び見られるであらうか。また一方に於いて、英兵の頭には獨兵が憎いと云ふ考は微塵もなかつたのである。英兵は獨兵を以て競技の相手と見てゐたからであ



此の武士的自尊心は英國の宗教併に倫理思想と眞に調和的のもので、共に相待つて英人の特色ある人格を養成するのである。かくして英人の行爲を重んじ努力を愛する特性は益々涵養され練磨される一方には、英人には素と沈着、剛毅の資性がある、此の資性がまた努力を愛する特性を發達助長せしむる因となる。併して此の資性は體育に依つて更に發達せしめ得るものであるから、體育の如何に依つては、其の努力愛好の特性に及ぼす影響は、更に／＼大なるものがあり得る道理である。

英人が如何に行爲を重んじ努力を愛するかの例證としては此處に最も適切なものがある。それは外でもない、英國兵士の特色を爲すかの自制力である。英國兵士の自制力に富む殆ど日本兵士を見るの觀がある。此の自制力は英兵が如何なる危険の前に立つても従容として聊か狼狽の様を示さざる其の態度に看ることが出来る。英兵には驚くと云ふことがない。一步たりとも後へは退かぬ。其の立つ所で死ぬのである。英軍の損害が毎々驚くべき數を示すのは實は之が爲である。

戦線に立てる英兵は、さながら禪僧を見るが如くである。淡然として何事にも動する色がない。若し英兵にして己が義務を盡しつゝありとの自覺より來る淡い愉快の情を感じなかつたなら、彼等は更に一步を進めて木石と化したであらう。かくの如きは何人も到底解し得る所でない。之を解し得るは日本人あるのみである。降る雨にフランダール方面の塹壕内は水浸つて膝を没するに拘はらず、蛙にあらぬ英兵は、聲揃えて、「何處にか日は照り居れり」の軍歌を高らかに歌ふのである。此の間に於ける英兵の心事は誰か能く之を解することが出来る。之を解し得るは日本人あるのみである。猶ほ進んで讀者諸君は英人のこの不屈不撓の意志の一端を、英兵が其の身

を一瞥せよ、征戰の苦を色にも出さず、如何にも勇ましく、如何にも愉快さうに軍務に服して居るのを認めるからである。蓋し英人が此の特性を有するには自ら理由がある。と云ふのは英人は理智の人ではない。少なくとも佛人の所謂理智の人と云ふ意味に於て決して理智の人でない。佛人は如何なる問題に於ても如何なる事柄に於いても之を討議し、之を思索し、其の理智を働かさなくては已まぬ。併し英人は大に趣を異にする。一體彼等は理智を以てさして必要なものと考へては居らぬ。少なくとも理智は事をする上の手段に過ぎぬものと考へて居る。佛人は稍もすれば理智そのものを以て手段にあらず目的なりとする癖があるが、英人に取つて理智は目的となり得ないのである。かるが故に自然彼等は理智の方面に多少の缺陷を有せぬではないが、此の缺陷は其の驚くべき勇氣を以て補償するのである。否な單に補償するばかりでなく、彼等は勇氣を以て眞に理智以上に價值のあるものとして勇氣を重んじて居るのである。然り英人は遂に理智の國民ではない。勿論英國は哲學者を出して居る、思想家を出して居る。此の點より云へば以上の斷定は正鵠を得ないやうに思はれるかは知らぬが、併し記者の言はんと欲する所は、英國人は思想よりも行爲を重んずると云ふ點に在るのである。換言すれば英國人の本領は理智に存せずして勇氣に存すると云ふのである。偶々學者が出た思索家が出たと云ふ事實があつても、それは決して矛盾となるものではない。

かく英國民は勇氣を重んじ行爲を尊ぶ。實行と云ふことは一の國民的信條である。さればこそ英國の國民的生活は總て行爲中心になつて居る。例へば、教育は品性の陶冶を以て其の主眼とし、また體育は果斷の精神と、日本の武士のやうに自己の品位體面を重んずる精神、此の二者を訓練するを以て主眼とするが如きである。併して

の組織は豫め周到なる考慮の下に劃策されるものでも何でもない。由來英國國民は經驗に重きを置く國民である。空に考へると云ふことは其得意とする所ではない。されば如何なる組織も初めは唯だ常識を以て考案し、而して盲人が手搜りをして行く様に之を運用して行くのである。時には撞着も起つて来る。時には一向に結果の現はれぬこともある。併し之は英國國民に取つて固より豫定の行動である。而して英國國民より見れば之れも經驗、彼れも經驗であるのである。尙ほまた彼等は聯合協力と云ふことを喜ぶ。蓋し聯合協力は、個人の利益を安全に擁護する一方には、個人の能率を大に増大せしめる。即ち聯合したときの個人の能率は單獨のときの個人の能率に四倍もする。凡そかくの如きが一般組織に對する英人の態度であり特性であるのである。されば英國が軍需品を製出するに當つても、其の生産組織は如上の短所と長所を交々示したのである。即ち初めに考慮を費すと云ふことをせぬ爲めに、軍需品の製出も初めの中は稍もすれば供給の需要に伴はぬ遺憾があつた。併し其の基礎は極めて強固であるから、漸次其の運用の熟するに及び、多々益々辨するの餘裕を生じて來た。

世の中で至難な事は己れ自身を改造するに在ると佛陀は曰ふて居るが、英國は此の至難な事を己が自由意思で立派に遣つて退けたのである。其の動機は全然自由の爲めであつた、自由擁護の爲めであつた。而して此の自由とは何あらう、獨逸の軍國主義と兩極端を成すものである。

且つまた英國國民は、努力を以て快と爲す特性を有するものである。此の特性は、今回の國民的大革新を來すに當り様々の方面に顯はれて居るが、之を知るには必ずしもさう多方面に亘つて物色するの要はない。唯だ戰線に立てる英兵を見ればそれで充分である。而かも一目でそれが分明に解る。何故と云ふに、請ふ試みに行いて戰線



る、故に國民の自由に束縛を加へた者は政府であると曰ふ者があるとすれば、之は考違ひと云ふものである。何となれば論者は、英國特殊の國情を考慮の中に置いて居らぬからである。抑も英國に於て輿論は絶對の權威である。若し此の輿論にして徴兵令を可と認めなかつたときは、如何なる政府が能く徴兵令を大英國に布くことが出來たであらう。さて英國の輿論は、徴兵制度に對してかく一變したのである。而して此の一變を來せる原因は實に道德的動機に外ならぬのである。

かく云へばとて記者は、英國が全然獨逸の野心に脅かさるゝ危險を眼中に置かなかつたと曰はんとする者ではない。否な英國人は實際的の國民であるだけに、かゝる事態に對しては到底盲目で居るものでない。隨つて徴兵制度を採用する動機に至つても、對獨逸と云ふ、即ち道德と交渉のないものも勿論あつた。また彼等の所謂功利說からも來て居るのである。即ち彼等は開戰以來十有六ヶ月の間義勇兵制度の下に戰つた。然るに此の制度の自然の結果として、英國は國民の精華とも稱すべき優良分子を戰場に奪はれ、劣等分子のみを國內に残さなければならなかつた。之は極めて寒心すべき事態である。是に於て思へらく、之に對する最良の救濟策は、劣等も戰地に送り、精華も内地に留むるを得る徴兵令を採用するに在りと。之も徴兵制度採用の一動機であつた。

次に英國全土が遽然として、軍需品製造の一大工場に化し去つたのも、幾百千萬の從業者が自發的に一個共通の目的に蟬集した爲めである。獨逸に在つては國家の權力に強制せられて個人が軍需品の製造に當るのである。之に反して英國は個人が其の自由意志に基づいて製造に従事するのである。此處にも亦英獨の間に絶好の對照を示して居る。尙ほまた知らなければならぬは、國國に於ける各種の組織に關することである。英國に於ける一般

行はなければならぬと。かくて彼等は遂に自己を欺むことが出来ないのである。事情既に斯の如しである、是に於てか義勇兵勧誘の方法は一として彼等の良心に訴ふるを以て目的としないものである。「義務」「職分」、此の語は如何なる廣告にも見ざる所のないものである。立て札、掲示廣告等には必ずキチナー卿とロバート卿との肖像が、各自の義務を盡せ職分を果せと國人に訴えて居るのである。また到る所に貼り付けられてある繪畫も、人の自尊心を喚るを以て目的として居らぬものはない。かくて此等の勧誘法は着々功を奏し、責任を解する士人は先づ以て軍に投じた。其の餘の者も、手を換え品を換え、層一層踏み込んで其の良心を喚らるゝ所より、之れまた相續いで投じた。今や餘すは遲鈍者の一團である。此の連中に對しては既に方法が盡きて居る。こゝに於て個人訪問が開始せられた。併し其の説く所は依然として義務を盡せ職分を果せと云ふに在る。唯だ此の場合には個人個人に就いて直接に説くだけのことである。之を要するに、國家より強制されない中に各自の自由意思で兵役に就き、以て義務を盡せと云ふのが何時も勧誘の要旨であるのである。ダービー卿は之を稱して『義務的自由兵役』と云ふて居る。義務的自由兵役とは一見矛盾のやうであるが、實は全く其の通りである。卿の言は曰ひ得て妙と謂ふべきである。

最後に徴兵令は一千九百十六年五月確定の法律となつた。而して該令が法律となつたのは、全國民の意思が何等の強制にも基かず自由に一致した爲めである。蓋し徴兵令は英國の自由に曾て見ざる最大の束縛を加ふるものである。然るに此の徴兵令を認めたものが英國民の自由意志と云ふのであるから、英國の自由に束縛を加へたものは自由そのものであると曰つても、決して矛盾でもない譯である。若し或は、徴兵令の發案者は時の政府であ

る。顧ふに極初期に戦場に向つた英國の義勇兵は、之れを十字軍の勇士に比するも聊か失當なことではないであらう。不信背信、人道の何たるを解せざる獨逸は、寸分違わぬ當年の異端外道である。

獨逸の飛行船は英國を襲ひ、其の爆彈は防備の無い市街に遠慮もなく投下された。此の暴舉は漸次英人の恐怖心を増大せしめ、而して遂には英人をして、將に危險の英國に肉迫しつゝあると自覺せしめた。此の自然の結果は英國の自由市民をして、劍を執つて起つゝの急を愈々切實に感ぜしめた。果然英國國民は競ふて戎衣の人となつた。蓋し獨逸の此の威嚇的手段は、固より英人を畏服せしめんとするに在つた。然るに高い考を以て其の心とする國民は威武を以て屈することは出来ぬ。否な獨逸の威嚇が豫期と全然反對の結果を來たしたことは、將に掩ふ可らざる事實である。

英國は義勇兵を募集するのに、廣告、演說等様々の勧誘法を採つた。而して此等の勧誘法は、何れも國家の急に際し最も能く國民の心を動かし得る様に仕組んだのであるが、之に現はれて居る所を見ると、かく幾百萬と云ふ英人が進んで其の身命を賭せんとするに至つたのは決して輿論に迎合し衆愚に媚びんが爲めと云ふが如き動機に出でたのではなく、全く個人的名譽、個人的體面、斯う云ふ觀念に動かされたに外ならぬことが更に一層分明に看取せらるゝのである。

自己に忠なること、自己を欺かざること、之は英人の一大特性である。而して此の特性の發達は、自ら責任を取ると云ふ觀念に其の出發點を求めて居るのである。彼等思へらく、萬事に對する責任は自ら取るべきものである。人に轉嫁し得らるべきものでない。従つて亦心にも無い事は行ふ譯に行かぬ、之と同時に是と信じたことは



したるに過ぎぬものである。一千九百十四年八月二日徴兵制度が初めて採用せらるゝに至つた以前義勇兵制度が一般に可とせられてゐたのは勿論、今日と雖も英國國會議員中依然當時の考を把持して動かぬものがある。議員等は義勇兵の徴兵に勝る、一人で能く何人かに當ると今も尙ほ主張して居る。蓋し徴兵は自尊心に缺けてゐると云ふ理由に基づくのである。例へばサー・ジョン・サイモン氏の如きは義勇兵が精神的價值に於いて勝ること一にスィーリー大佐に至つては一にして能く十に比敵すると推賞して居る。

獨逸は戰亂の勃發するや、直ちに白耳義の中立を侵害し、而かも士人を慄然たらしむるが如き醜行を重ねた。一度この報を耳にするや、三百萬の英人は、響の應ずるが如く蹶起し、潮の寄するが如く軍旗の下に馳せ參じた。これは全く個人主義の然らしめた所である、各自の良心の指導の然らしめた所である。蓋し白耳義の中立は英國の保證した所である、之が關係文書には英國の捺印がしてあるのである。英國が舉國一致、紳士と云はず、商人と云はず、職工と云はず、其他一般の勞働者までが一齊に起つたのは、一に此の保證が蹂躪せられたからである、一に此の捺印ある文書が反古にされたからである、此の外には何等の動機とはなかつたのである。換言すれば彼等は英國の利害、英國の危機、斯んな事までも考えて起つたのではない。當時英國の危機などゝは、實際彼等の頭には未だ浮ばなかつたのである。彼等は英國がそれ程急迫した事情の下に在るとは信じなかつたのである。彼等の頭に浮んだのは英國の言責と英國の名譽だけであつた。彼等は中立保證の言責を完了し、以て英國の名譽を維持せんとしたに過ぎなかつたのである。之れと同時に暴惡なる獨逸の憎むべきを知つた、唯だ之れのみであつた。然るにも拘らず三百萬の英人が、卒然干戈を執つて蹶起すると云ふ實に前代未聞の活劇を演出したのであ

急存亡の場合は、たとへ「平和の御子」(耶蘇敎の基督の一稱號であつて來迎の佛陀の稱號に相當するもの)の千古變らざる垂訓でも尙ほ蹂躪して差支ないものだと言はぬばかりの態度で、英國の自由安寧又た英國の國際的地位などを論議するのを見て、ケンブリッヂ大學の附屬牧師が大僧正たる威尊をも冒して之を難詰するが如きものである、また基督敎の一派なるクエーカー宗にも之を見ることが出来る。此の宗徒の主張はまた非常に峻嚴なもので、遂に此宗徒をして徴兵制度には應せしむること能はずとなした程である。而して社會主義者の中には其主義の主張の爲め之を利用したものと云ふ有様である。

且つまた英國は軍國主義を嫌惡する點からして特に平和を希望したのである。例へば獨逸は云はゞ一個の巨大なる機械の如きもので、國民各自は螺旋止め又は繫釘として此の機械の一部分を承つて居るのである。之に反して英國は英國國民よりなる一個龐大の組合の如きものであつて、組合各員銘々が一個の小英國たるのである。獨逸が其の國民を統治するのは國家自身の絶對最高の神性に基づくのである。然るに英國に在つては此の神性に基づくのではない。また佛蘭西に在つては國家と國民とは恰かも母子の如く國民が甘んじて國家の爲めに忍苦し國家の爲めに死生敢て辭せざるものはならぬものはない。實に英國の眞の精神はかゝる事を考へるだけでも瀆されるのである。デイサート卿は上院に於いて徴兵令法案の討議せらるゝに當り、「如何にして奴隸が自由なるを得るや」と曰ふて居る。蓋し大多數の英人は徴兵制度は英國國民の自尊心を銷磨せしめずしては已むものでないと見たのである。自尊心の銷磨、此の一事は英國國民に取つて實に堪え難き苦痛である。英國に於て徴兵制度がかくまで反對を受け、義勇兵制度がかく長く尊重されたと云ふのも、畢竟するに此の自尊心の銷磨と云ふことが理由を爲

として極めて樂天的に流れしめたのである。之れが爲め英國の有力者、新聞紙、政論家は幾度か其の悲觀説を高調せざるを得なかつた。而して此等悲觀説は英國民を警醒して以て適當なる行動を採らしむるに剋切なる必要に出たのである。蓋し英國の國家は極めて健全に發達し國民の神經も常に平靜であるため、英國民の前進は極めて遲緩でありまた困難でもあるからである。

また英國の文明は眞の文明であつて、あらゆる暴力を極度に排斥する。而して此の文明に陶冶されて來たと云ふ點でも既に英國は戰前に平和を希望したのである。また英國の國民的宗教心は哲學的よりも寧ろ倫理的に傾くを常とする。されば此の點よりしても英國は戰爭を嫌忌するの念が強い筈である。「殺す勿れ」とはモーゼの訓言である。而して自己の行爲は總て天上の威力に對して直接責任があるものであるとは英國に於て普通に見る宗教徒的教養ある人士の信仰である。かゝる人士は例ひ上官の命令であるからと云ふて、それを口實に己が本心を欺き而して人に向つて鐵砲を放てるであらふか。かゝる人士は基督教の神がカーキ色の軍服に身を裝ひ銃劔を手にして、獨逸の勞働者を屠ると云ふような事を想像し得らるゝであらうか。將又た基督教の救世主が獨軍を擁護して榴散彈を注ぐと云ふようなことをが想像し得らるゝであらうか。否、そんなことは到底思ひも寄らぬのである、あまり馬鹿氣で考へだに及ばぬ、自分は如何あつても戰爭を承認することは出來ぬ、よし防禦的の戰爭でも、最う充分である」とは「コンシエンシアス、オブジエクター」(クエーカー信徒)の唱へし處である。實にもコンシエンシアス、オブジエクターの曰ふ處は佛陀の精神其儘である。またカンシエンシアス、オブジエクターは道德的に罪なりと自ら信ずる行爲に何人が手を染めても之を容認しないのである。例へば英國の大僧正連が國家の危



つた爲めである。蓋し英國に於ては如何なる内閣も輿論に逆行するは愚か輿論を離れては如何ともなし得ぬのである。而して英國が初めより佛國側に立たなかつたと云ふ此の事實は、明かに英國の輿論が當時開戦に傾いて居らなかつた事に因るのである。

實に一千九百十四年七月には英國の國論は平和を希望して居つた。一體戦争てふ事は英國人に取つては單に抽象的觀念に過ぎないのである。英國民は實際に戦争なるものを知らないのである。其故戦争を恐れもせぬ。且つ又た英國人は想像力に乏しく單に實際の事實にのみ依絶る國民であるから自身能く言ふ通り、實際見ぬ事物を信じ若しくは理解することは出来ぬのである。

弱つたのは佛國であつた、何となれば英國民に此の特僻あるが爲め英國は其の國論を統一して舉國一致的態度を採る上に於いて眞に遅々たるものがあつたからである。英國民に近世戦争の如何に戰慄すべきものなるやを適格に理解せしめんとするには之に關する出版物繪畫の類を、國內に溢れん許りに播布するは勿論後送された傷病兵の實況を寫眞に取つて之を公衆に配布するも必要であらうし、進んでは戦地の實地視察も正しく必要であるに相違ない。

然るに日本と同じく海中に國し、國家の存立上極めて安固なる英國が、如何にして戦争の慘害を了解し得るであらふか。往昔蒙古は日本に足を踏み入れやうとして成らなかつた。四面環海の國はかくの如く安固である。唯だ一千年以前の昔ノルマン人が英國に踏み入ることが出来ただけである。既に然る以上は英國が過古を回想して國家の永久に安固なるべきことを思ふは毫も怪しむに足らぬ筈である。而して此の念慮たるや英國々民をして時

平和を愛すと云ふ段になれば種々言ふべき事がある。英國は一千九百十四年にも眞に平和に戀々としてゐたのである。此事たる今回の戦亂の突發當時に溯りて其の前後の事情を究むれば明々白々たるものがある。即ちパレオロツグ、キャンボン、ボアンカレー等が陸續英國に渡米して、戦亂を防止する爲め英國も亦た公然露佛に加盟せられ度しと英國政府を懇請したとき、英國政府の答へた處は七月二十五日に至るも尙ほ「もし戦亂が擴がつて一般的になるならば英國は中立の儘で居ることが困難になるであらう」と云ふに過ぎなかつた。踰えへて二十七日に至るも英國は僅かに露國首相に保證するに「外交的援助」を與ふべきを以てしたのみである、又た二十九日に至つてはサー・エドワード・グレー氏は佛國大使に警告するに英國は戦不戦何れもの行動に出づるも勝手たる可き旨を以てした。最後に三十一日に至り佛國大統領が「もし英國にして公然佛國と協同するに於いて戦亂は阻止せらるべし」との趣旨を以て英國の参加を哀求した時にも、巴里駐在英國大使は英國外務省の旨を受けて答へた處は、「英國國民は何人も英國が歐洲の戦争に参加せざるべからざる義務ありと思考する者なし、故に英國の参加を誓約するは不可能に屬す」と云ふに在つた。斯くて八月四日となつた而して白耳義の中立侵害があつた。白耳義の中立は獨逸が共同して保證し來つたものである。然るに獨逸は此の保證を破つた。是に於いて英國は直ちに協商側に参加し宣戦を布告するに至つた。

アスクイス内閣は南亞戦争に對する反動の結果現出したるキャンベル、パンナーマン内閣の政策を一切踏襲したのである。即ちアスクイス内閣は當時社會の改良進歩等の對内政策に其の國力を傾注してゐた。英國政府が佛英間に協定の有るにも關らず尙ほ最初から佛國側に立たなかつた次第は、先づ以て輿論の向背を確むる必要があ

これだけの事をするには實に甚大の犠牲を拂つてゐる。即ち英國は永年傳襲の一切を逆行せざるを得なかつたのである。之を思へば英國今回の國情の變化は特に人の耳目を聳動せしむるに足るものがあると謂はなければならぬ。

英國國民は極端に平和を愛好する國民である。從て其の最も嫌惡せる處は強制的徴兵制度であつた。然るにも拘らず英國國民は他の強制に依らず全然自家の發意を以て此の制度を採用した。また英國國民は世界各國民中最も自由を愛重する國民であつて、主權者の之を侵害せんことを掛念して措かざるも亦他國民に在つては決して見ざる處である。然るにも拘らず尙ほ英國國民は進んで國家の權力の前に低頭し、軍事上は愚か産業上のあらゆる方面に亘つてまでも一に國家の頤使に甘んじ、かくて其の軍隊の避くべからざる必要品を特に迅速に且つ完全に供給してゐる。是れ豈に彼等に取つて至大の犠牲でなからうか。而して此の大犠牲は取りも直さず自由の母國たる英國が、一には一段高き意味の自由の爲め、一には他國民の權利と自由とを壓迫と蹂躪とより救はんが爲め從容として吾が自由を放擲するに至れるを示すに外ならぬのである。更に剴切の語を以てすれば、英國は自由の爲めに吾が自由を放棄したものである。英國は最後の勝利を得んが爲めに吾が自由の最高の働きに基いて其の自由を犠牲に供したものである。英國が其の國民的特性を破却したのは畢竟すれば其の國民的特性に服從したと云ふに外ならぬのであつて、又た其の國民が戰慄嫌惡して止まなかつた軍國主義を一旦採用するに至るや、能く自國の上下に普及せしむるを得たる秘訣は、即ち個人主義の牢乎たる根底と英國魂の根本的要素たる個人の價値とを觀念とがあつた爲めである。



我が國家の自由と各自の理想の爲めに戦ふ幾百萬と云ふ大兵を個人主義に固まつて殆ど動かすに由なしと思はれた民衆より召募して見事成功を贏ち得た國民、また其の最も偉大な人物が慘死しても之に代る人物はいくらもあると云ふことを思ふて心を慰むることの出来る國民、また時恰も友邦よりは全然同情のみを期待して極めて當然なるべき折も折日英同盟に冷酷なる批評を試みる者があるにも拘らず殆ど之を意に拘せざる國民、またバンカンに於ける軍事行動に致命傷的の大錯誤を來しても聊か狼狽の様を見せざる國民、かゝる國民と其の文學は疑もなく好個の活敎訓にして日本國民の皆喜んで之に學びて自家の改善を謀らんとする而してまた其の實行は過去の經驗と訓練とによりて日本國民には之が極めて能く適合するのである。

## 英國人の武士道

### 佛國記者の英國魂及び大和魂觀

一千九百十六年七月八日發行「レヴューブルユー」誌所載ポールゴールチア氏論

協商諸國が若し英國の態度に關し安心の爲め何等かの保證が欲しかつたと云ふのであるとすれば、それは殆ど奇蹟と見紛ふ程に英國國情の一變した事實である。顧ふに此の事實はど協商諸國をして安心の臍を固めさす上に於いて絶好の保證は無かつたに相違ない。其の事實とは外でもない、英國は從來世界中最も陸上の武備に乏しかつた國である、然るに今や一躍して世界第一流の陸軍國になつてゐる。之が即ちそれである。而して英國が能く

爆彈の裂片は雨飛し、毒瓦斯は全地を蔽ひ砲煙糢糊たる際、他國人ならば、頭髮上り刺し、目眈眈裂く、と云ふ昂奮の態を現する場合にも尙ノヲツトした顔付にて落付き拂つて行動せる彼等の氣風を邦人は吞込み居らねばならぬ。

一方は極めて氣が永く、一方は極めて氣の早い日英人がよくも同盟したものと、後世の史家に批評せらるゝも知れぬが、斯く相違の點はありながら或一事に於て兩國民の氣質の深く一致し居る大切の點がある、夫は互に封建時代の武士氣質が尙存在して武士らしき氣風に於て互に一致の點が見出されるからである、氣の長いと短いとは言はば小節である、死生の間に立つて談笑すべき武士氣質こそ彼我双方の互に深く相許す心である。

英國が獨逸に二倍するの大海軍力を以て海上の全權を確保し、敵國を封鎖するの大任を果しながら一方には與國に對して莫大なる金錢兵器を貸與融通するは、是だけに十分の努力である、而して今や又之に加ふるに陸上に於て殆ど五百萬の大兵を擧ぐるに至つては決して生やさしい骨折でない、十二分の盡力と云はねばならぬ、昔大那翁の歐洲戰亂にも英人は他國が長い戦ひに疲れへたばる頃に益奮起したが今次も亦同様で、敵味方とも大抵に疲れ出した頃彼はそろゝと勇氣を出しかける、其眞價を評すべきは是からである、英人に對しては氣早やの批評はくれぐゝも禁物と思はねばならぬ。

第二 一千九百十六年十月二十一日發行「ヘラルド、オブ、

エシヤ」社説頭本元貞氏稿の一節

の留意を要する場合が無いでもないらしい、一たび志を決して事を始めれば一步步確實に地歩を占め、徐々ながらも必ず目的を遂げる、又誓約に忠實なること他に比類なき所など、英人の長所美德である(他の短所はあ  
るにもせよ)故に苟くも聯合軍側に立つた上は必ず飽迄も其心力を盡すに相違ないが、扱何分にも遅重なる氣風であるから、氣早な邦人の眼にはもどかしく感ぜられ、何をぐづぐずして居るか、晝寢でもして居はせぬか、唯自利のみ圖つて露、佛人を働かせ、蔭で旨い事許りして殖民地を取込むではないか杯の疑ひを招き、中立國人からも動もすれば同様の批評を得た事もある、氣早な連中から見れば無理も無い事乍ら、少しく永い目で見て居ると決して左様でないことが分つて来る、故に英人に對する批評は其結局を見た後にする必要がある。

彼等は其初め陸戰に慣れぬものから、例の悠長なる態度で戰線の塹壕中でも平生通り毎朝髯など剃て居たに相違ない、左も有つたらうと想はれる、併し斯く悠長にのろくさく見えても、次第に勇敢の働きを爲して結局に大功を必ず收むるであらう、大抵の事は喜怒が色に露はさぬこと故彼等の氣風を吞込まぬ者は一寸此邊が判じ兼ねるも知れぬ。

又彼等が何事も有體に告げて、聊かも表面を飾らぬは一種の特性である、是は畢竟直實宏量で無ければ出来ぬことである、其戰報などを見ても敗れたときは敗れたと言つて少しも隠さぬ、先頃の海戰の如きも一度出したら其報告も後に訂正を要せぬ程に事實を發表する、負ても勝ても鷹揚なものである、一方獨逸人となると全く反對で或は戰敗を秘し、或は破損の船數増減の手加減をする、故に最初戰報を見た時に氣早な邦人中には英軍を大敗北と信じて大に憤恨した者もあつたかのやうである。



守黨の首領ピール氏及び自由黨の首領グラッドストーン氏の如き人々が正義と思考する信念の前には總てを犠牲とすることを躊躇しなかつた。ピール氏が自己の率ゆる保守黨の多數の意見に反對して穀稅廢止を通過せしめた時、其の政治的生涯は全然破壊し去られんとすることを熟知して居つた。グラッドストーン氏は愛蘭自治問題の爲めに一千八百八十六年の總撰舉に於て失敗したけれ共、氏は愛蘭自治案を放棄するよりも寧ろ其政界に復歸することを欲して居なかつたのである。

「英國は各員皆義務を遂行せんことを期待す」とネルソンは最期の際に言つた。此義務の觀念こそは無數の英國人をして義務に對する使徒と化せしめたのである。併し此義務を愛すと云ふことは唯結果に外ならぬのである。其原因は實に英國魂の奥底に之を求めなければならない。

## 現時の戰爭に於ける英國人の特性

——二人の日本記者の筆になれる——

第一 一千九百十六年九月二十日發行東京日々新聞掲載

### 矢野龍溪氏の意見

或人の評に曰く英人ほど誤解され易い人種はない、日本人ほど誤解し易い人種はないと、如何にも幾分の事實があるも知れぬ、一方は頗る氣が永い、一方は頗る氣が早い、同盟の大局は永く動きもすまいが細事に於ては邦人

あれ而して恐るゝ勿れと、國威の點に於て失ふ處があるとしても此方針に依つて進む時は我國の性格及び名譽の高めらるゝことは余の信じて疑はざる處である」と。

ロバート・セシル卿即ち後のソールズベリー卿は、英國は支那の如き弱國を怒らすべきでない。又た英國政治家は常に不當なる侵略的行爲を否定する準備をして居なければならぬと極言した。更にグラッドストーン氏は其の生涯を通じて最大雄辯の一とも云ふべき其演説に於て更に遺憾なく其義俠心を發揮した。遂に政府不信任案は最後の投票に於て二百四十七に對する二百六十三の多數を以て議會を通過した。

一千八百八十年に於て理想主義の狂嵐は國家を振動せしめ遂に下院をも一掃した。

グラッドストーン氏の率ゆる黨派は數年間下院に於て少數黨であつたが、一千八百八十九年の末に理想的選舉運動を開始して國際政策の特に高尚なる觀念を標榜してビーコンスフィールド卿の政府を攻撃した。

是等有名なる自由黨政治家の批評は必ずしも悉く當を得たる者とは云はれないが、グラッドストーン氏の理想的撰舉運動の精神は實に稱讃すべきものである。氏は常に政府が他國民の權利を尊重せんことを勸告した。氏はエデンバラに於て「大國も小國も共に同じ正義と同じ尊敬とを以て遇すべきである」と叫んだ。又グラスゴーに於ける演説に於て「想起せよ、亞非汗斯坦の僻邑に在る村民の生命の尊嚴は萬能の神の眼には諸君の生命と均しく神聖なるものである」と痛論した、獨逸人は英國人を冷血なる實利主義の國民であると云つて居るが、此英國人はグラッドストーン氏の此悲痛なる絶叫より遂に氏をして再び首相の榮位に上らしめたのである。

英國の政治社會は常に義務の觀念に基く妥協の行はれる所で、斯の如き多くの高尚なる實例に富んで居る。保

なつたのである。

加之、英國政府が人道に反したる行動をなしたる時は常に之に反抗する勇氣ある英國民の一團が國內に現はれて居る。彼の有名なる鴉片戦争の當時、アシユレー卿は鴉片賣買禁止を主張した。而してグラッドストン氏、サー・デエームス・グレーハム氏、ピール氏等は政府の行動を非難した。議會の後援は殆んど此人々に集まり、政府不信任案は五百票の内九票の差を以て僅かに撤回せられた程であつた。一千八百五十七年にコブデン氏は更らに一層の成功を博した。

一千八百五十六年の秋の末、支那と戦争が起つた時、廣東は英國艦隊の砲撃する處となつた。ダービー卿は上院に於てコブデン氏は下院に於て政府彈劾の動議を提出した。政府は出來得る限り辯明して、英國の國旗は凌辱された、如何なる犠牲を拂ふとも國威を保持すること、及び戦争を開始するは其任務なりと思考する香港に於ける陛下の總督を後援することは必要である、既に清國民は歐洲人數名を虐殺し商家を焼きたる今日、最早手を引くわけには行かぬと論じた。併も下院はコブデン氏の動議に賛成し多數の差を以て政府不信任案を通過せしめたのである。吾人は當時の演説を想起する時、常に其德義的精神に動かされずには居られない。

前首相ジョン・ラッセル卿は後日再び其地位に就きたる人であつたが氏の言に、「吾人は商業上の利害に就ても亦英國の名譽に就ても多くを聞けり。併し「吾人は實に誤つてゐる。吾々は實に不正である。吾々は實に不義である。併も吾々は其不正を保存しなければならない、吾々は其非道の行爲を繼續しなければならない。然らざれば吾々は恐れてゐるものと清國人から思はれるであらう。」と云ふ議論をした人々に余は一言を呈したい。正しく



一千八百八十年に、グラッドストーン氏はセサリー及びユビルスの一部を希臘の爲めに恢復することが出来た。又英國は常に小國の味方をして居る。一千八百四十七年に於て、瑞西には内亂の起る恐れがあつた。伊太利と普魯西とは只管此虛に乘じ干涉をなさんとした。幸ひに英國は油斷がなかつた。之が爲めに外國干涉の機會は去り瑞西は救はれた。

伊太利の羈絆から脱せんとしたる伊太利國民の苦心は、英國に於て熱き同情を以て注意された。一千八百二十年トロツポー會議に於て、英國は既に伊太利に對する外國干涉の凡ての意見に反對して居たのである。一千八百四十七年に英國は伊太利が戰爭の準備を爲せることを見抜き、バーマーストン卿は伊太利に特派してサルヂニアの王に英國の友誼を保證した。翌年バーマーストン卿は獨立の爲めに起てるシシリ島民に武器を送り、一千八百五十六年に巴里會議に於て伊太利人のタスカニー撤退を要求した。バーマーストン卿が一生を通じて英國國民の指導者たりし秘訣は實に氏が英國人の義侠心に訴ふるの道を知り居たるがためである。ロー氏が其「英國政治史」に述べたるが如く「其共同國人は強きを挫き弱きを助け而して專制政治に反抗し立憲政治を頌揚する政治家を誇りとしたのである。」

一千八百九十五年及び其六年にアルメニアの虐殺が行はれた時、輿論は非常に激昂した。集會は各處に開かれた。他の列國は處置することを拒絶した、併しグラッドストーン氏は英國が此暴虐を留めなければならぬと主張した。氏は八十八歳の老齡なるにも拘はらず土耳其國に對して一大雄辯を振つた。獨逸皇帝が土耳其皇帝に與へたる援助は不幸にして英國側の有効なる抗議を妨げたが、併し英國の輿論は公平なる理想主義に對し私なき證據と

を妨げない。英國人の悠長なる外見は往々其熱烈なる局面を隠すのである。其の宗教的傾向は人生を觀るに道德的方面に重きを置かして居る。其の感情的生涯は微妙でもあり又た深刻でもあるから、他人の苦痛に對しては非常に神經を悩ますのである。英國人が聊か哲學的思想に冷膽であるとしても、一度び不義を自覺するや直ちに感動するのである。

一千八百十五年、維納議會に於て奴隸賣買反對の一般宣言書を要求し、之を獲得したのは英國人であつた。一千八百三十四年、英國の法律は八十萬人の奴隸を開放して、二億圓の犠牲を拂つたが、其當時としては大なる金額であつた。

英國は南米諸州が西班牙に反抗せる獨立戰爭、及び土耳其に反抗せる希臘の叛亂に就ては熱心に注意した。知名の英國人にて南米諸州及び希臘の爲めに同情を寄せて從軍を申込み來たれる人さへもあつた。海軍大將コクレン卿は智利海軍を改造した。西班牙の南米總督は之を憤慨し、英國の貴族であり乍ら反徒に左袒する迄に自己を卑下したことは驚かざるを得ないと述べたるに對し、コクレン卿は傲然として「英國の貴族は蹂躪されたる人權を恢復せんと努むる國は何れを問はず之を認めてやる權利を持つて居る。」と答へた。一千八百二十七年に、コクレン卿は希臘軍に参加し、土耳其に對して戰爭して居た。コクレン卿の同志の中には希臘で死んだバイロン及びシバントの勇者として有名なるサー・リチャード・チャーチ氏等も居つたのである。其上英國は希臘の誠實なる友邦となつて居た。一千八百三十年に於て、コンスタンチンノーブルに在る英國公使は希臘の爲めにヴオロ、アルタ國境を獲得した。一千八百六十二年に、英國はアイオニア群島を割いて戴冠式の献上物として現デョーヂ皇帝に捧呈した。

# 附錄

## 世界史上に於ける英國人の特性

### 瑞西記者の聚集せる過去百年間の事蹟

本文は千九百十六年四月十日發行「レヴィエール」誌上に掲載されたる瑞西記者エム・アシドル・ド・バグイエール氏の記事より抜萃したるものである。

人は英國人の誠實を尊重するけれども英國政策の理想的方面に就ては毎も之を閑却する傾向がある、英國は是迄膨脹もし又た侵略も行つた、併し英國人が自己のために斯る廣大なる帝國を造り上げたからと云つて、之を以て直ちに英國人は正義と寛容とに缺けて居ると斷定するわけには行かない、英國人は國を治むるに眞の自由主義を以てし、而して多くの場合に其政策を德義上の要求に適はしめんと努めて居たのである。

英國人は概して自己の行爲の指針となるべき大主義を口にすることを嫌ふ。凡て自己の最も切實に感じて居る事柄に觸れるやうなことは遠慮深い心持で對するのである。巧言令色の華やかさは英國人の甚だ好まぬ所である、斯くては常に自己の意思を誇張し又た自己に對して誠意を缺くに至らんことを毎も恐れて居るのである。且つ其の理想主義は拉典人種とは全然異つて居る。佛國人は思想を思想として喜ぶ傾向がある。又た佛國人は理論及び抽象を好む。英國人は斯の如き空想家とは正反對の性格を有して居る。然も之がために其理想家たること



々に明らかになつて、是等の人が其羈絆を脱れ、而して現在には其局外に在る文明國の仲間に復歸する迄は不能のことである。」

## 聯合國の講話條件

英國及び其他の聯合國が戰爭を繼續して居る理由に就ては毫も疑ひの餘地がない。

爰に首相の言を借りて言へば「英國及び佛國が共に戰爭を始めたことは獨逸を絞殺せんが爲めではなく、又歐洲の地圖より獨逸を除き、其國民的生命を破壊し、若くは之を害ひ、否（獨逸首相の言を引照すれば）「獨逸の國家的活動の自由」を妨げんが爲めでもない。吾人は英國に於ても亦た佛國に於ても獨逸（此處では普魯西を意味す）が其隣國の上に立つて軍事的脅迫と優勢との地位を建設する事を妨げんが爲めに武器を探るの止む無きに至つたのである。過去十年間獨逸は歐洲に對し屢々戰爭を以て威嚇して我意を通さんとする傾向を示した。而して白耳義の中立を侵害することに依つて獨逸は世界的戰爭を起し、且つ條約に依りて確定せられたる歐洲政策の基礎を破壊して迄も其覇權を掌握せんと計劃して居つたことが立證せられたのである。戰爭に於ける聯合國の目的は此計劃を打破し而して總ての文明國の爲めに平等主義を確立する國際制度を定めん道程を拓くことである。」

若し此言が未だ不明瞭であるならば英國の海外殖民地の重鎮なるクローマー卿の言を爰に引照して見やう。

「吾人は普魯西の武力に非ずして唯同國を支配する武斷派を全滅せんことを希望するのである。」

クローマー卿は注意深く附言して曰く、「併かも之は獨逸國民自身の事業でなくてはならぬ。獨逸に於ける内部の改革を他から強要せんとするのは大いなる間違である。」

「然も吾人は我が正義のため、他の歐洲列國のため、又た後世の爲めに計れば、獨逸國民が改心し且つ、獨逸が其現在の政策及び政治組織は自己のためののみならず他の文明國の爲めるも禍であることを自覺する迄は劍を收むることは出来ない。然も斯の如き改心は、其組織の全然失敗に終つたことが獨逸に残存せる多少とも正氣ある人

## 次の獨逸の蠻行

次に來るは何であらうか。ハインツ、ポットホルフ（ライン地方出身の前代議士にして進歩的民黨の首領）は其著「國民乎國家乎」と云ふ一書中に「今や我等の食物を食ひ盡す無數の捕虜は之れを殺さなければならぬと述べて居る。之は單り此著者のみの聲ではない。カール、ストルツは獨逸「國際公法年鑑」中に「若し捕虜の指揮官が其受けたる命令を遂行するため唯一の手段と思考したる場合には其捕虜をして餓死せしむるも不可なし。」と云つて居る。前古未曾有の驚く可き虐殺に對して之が恐るべき責任を毫も感ずることもなく、人情の枯渴せる其胸中には尙ほも新らしき罪惡を犯さんとして居る國民と共に平和を論ずるは無益なることである。

「己が犯せる罪は其血に染み

然も片時も後悔の色なし」

とは獨逸國を克く表はすものである。又た獨逸國民に對しては次の如き一句がある。

「彼等は戰亂の世界を通りて

己が目的を達せんと努力せり。

「然も其勝利を得る前に彼等の

呪ひは其魂を殺せり。」

若し世界が、物質主義に基きたる獨逸文明は國家を如何なる道德的破滅に導くものであるかを悟る事が出來たならば、今や歐洲に降りかゝれる大災害は必ずしも無用に蒙りたるものではないのである。



アット船長事件が突發したので其翌週平和に關する討議は次の社告を以て中止とした。

「獨逸が海賊の方針を以て戰爭を經營し、而して吾人を威嚇して之に默從せしめんとする海上法規を案出する間は英國は平和に對して考ふる處がない。」

平和の妨害を爲す者は聯合國ではなく實に少しも改心せざる獨逸である。

### 獨逸主義の歸着點

フライアット氏はハルウィッチ和蘭間を航行するグレート、イースターン鐵道會社

の定期客船の船長であつた。氏は潜航艇に撞き當て、自己の船を救はんとしたる廉により獨逸に於て簡單なる軍法會議の後銃殺されたのである。其死刑は獨逸國をも含みたる總ての海上法規に對する著るしき違犯であつた。

開戰の六箇月以前規定せられたる獨逸の捕獲船法規の第十一條に、捕獲を拒みたる商船に關して「船員は捕虜として取扱ふべし」と明らかに規定してある。獨逸海軍審問所の審判官の一人なるウェーベルグ博士の開戰六ヶ月後に發行したる海軍に關する著書中に「猛烈なる抵抗は敵商船の船員の運命には何等關係なし」と書いてある。

ウェーベルグ博士が指摘し且つ總ての研究家も知る如く、商船が捕獲に對して抵抗をなす共海賊の受く可き刑罰に處せらる可き理由はない。商船の船長にして其乗客及び船員に對する不當の攻撃に抵抗し、而して之を死地より救助す可き唯一の手段を採る者は海賊若くは殺人者と同等に之を處罰す可きものであると云ふ軍法會議に於ける獨逸の宣告は實に言語同斷である。過去數年間獨逸に對して最善の友誼を表し來つたる某倫敦新聞も、此獨逸の辨明、及び海陸に於ける其蠻行を擁護したる他の幾多の獨逸の辨明は、實に獨逸の陸海軍人が自己の目的に便宜なることには如何なる蠻行をも辭する必要はないと云ふ主義に歸着せしむるのであると論じて居る。

止めたがよい」と言つて居るものもある。是等の人は漠然と「和解」を提唱して居るのである。此戦争にて知己縁者を失ひ、而して何時又た他の知己縁者の計報に接するかも知れぬ吾人又た此戦争に於て如何程犠牲を拂つて居るか、且つ尙も拂はざる可からざるかを知つて居り、而して又た此恐る可き虐殺は如何程人類の進歩と文明とに對する總ての思想を阻害するものなるかを知つて居る吾人は、平和に就て説教を聞く必要を感じないのである。日夜吾人は平和の來らん時を待ち望んで居る。併も此戦争に依つて吾人の學ぶ可き一の教訓有りとせば、恁は實に『平和が在らざる時に平和々々』と叫ぶことの愚かさである。吾等は全世界に國際的虚疑の主權を繼續させることは出来ない。平和は國際關係及び國際的道德心の純良且つ高尚なる思想に基いてこそ來たし得らるるものである。平和の解決は吾人が單に疲勞して居ると云ふことに基く可きものでなく實に道理及び確乎たる目的に基かなければならない。佛國首相の最近の演説中にある如く、價值なき平和は「戦死者に對して侮辱」である。和解は善き事である。『平和を齎す者は幸である。併も同じく佛國の政治家なるクレマンソー氏が適切に質問した如く、何の爲めの媾和』なりやである。

「吾人は戦争前獨逸に對して何物をか求めたるや。吾人は開戦以來、獨立及び自由、並に非道の慘害が行はれたるに對する回復策以外に、何物をも求めて居ないではないか。是等の事に關して果して如何なる媾和を想像すべきかである。」

平和のため唯一の障害物なる獨逸 戦争の第三年目の初週に倫敦發行の週刊雜誌中の最も責任あるものゝ一は平和回復の「條件及び原則」に關する討議に其紙面を提供す可きことを豫告した。間もなくフライ

## 第二十三章 全部の結論

### 平和の障害

日本の立場 今次の戦争は唯に近世史上未だ曾て國際間に斯の如く驚くべき又た考ふるに堪へたる事が起らなかつたために之が研究の價值があるばかりでない。日本が英國の同盟國である處から特に研究の價值があるのである。同盟國の義務の一つは、若し其同盟が有効に且つ永續するものであるとすれば、相互の事情を良く了解すべき機會があれば之を逃さないと云ふことである。今次の戦争に於て、英國民を奮起せしめたる動機を充分に了解しなければ同盟國民が英國人を知るに當つて其最も重大なる點は知らないことになる。戦争程一國の道德心を嚴重に試験し、且つ其の道德心は如何なる價值あるものであるかを明瞭に示すものはない。日清日露の兩役に於て日本の道德心は最も嚴重に試験せられ且つ最も光輝あるものとなつた。英白獨の道德心も今や亦同一の試験に遭遇して居る。戦争は是等諸國の道德心に就て何物をも隠屏することを許さない。今次の戦争は絶體的眞理を有りの儘に説明した。英國民は、獨逸に對して宣戦し而して斷乎として此戦争を繼續せんとする自國政府を援助するに當つて、何等政治上、商業上若くは物質上の利害の觀念に依つて動かされたのでは無い。英國民は白耳義國民に對する獨逸の處置、及び其獨逸の統治者等が世界に強ひんとしたる卑劣にして且つ危険なる國際道德心に反抗し、之を打破するものは我が任務であるとの信念に動かされたからである。

無益の平和運動 善意に解釋する人の中には總て戦争の慘害及び浪費に就て憂慮し「戦争は大概にして



に歴史上に知られたる英國陸軍は無きものとなつた。一千九百十四年八月にドーバー海峡を横切りたる軍隊は其一割も今は世に存命して居らぬであらう。歴史は此第一軍及び其補充として出征したる義勇軍の獻身的精神に就て語るのである。余が本書に於て我同胞が如何なる動機に依つて劍を取ることもなつたか之を日本の友人に告げんとする次第は、未だ曾て斯の如き無欲なる目的の爲めに、若くは下劣なる欲望及び野卑なる感情に汚されざる目的の爲めに、斯くも生命を犠牲にしたる軍隊は未だ曾てなかつたことを歴史が宣明するであらうと云ふ確信に依るのである。

公法、公權殊に文明其物が危險に瀕してゐると思つたからである。是等の義勇兵は獨逸國民に對して敵意を持つて起つたのではなく、唯其運命を左右せんとし且つ其信用を甚だしく凌辱したるに對して之を説得せんと決心したのである。獨逸捕虜及び負傷者に對する英軍の親切は實に美はしきものであつた。其戦死者の友人なる某將校より送つた余の手許にある一書に次の如き一節がある。「英軍將校は絶えず獨逸人の長所に就て其部下に教へて居つた。」余の二人の友人が出征の際心配せる處は、不幸にも若し戦闘中獨逸の友人若くは知己に出會ひはしないかと云ふことであつた。開戦當時には寧ろ出來得可からざるものと思はれたことが、獨逸の海陸に於ける殘忍なる行爲の爲めに、英國に於て行はれるに至つた。之は多くの社會主義者が軍隊に編入せられたことである。社會主義の一小新聞の記者の内から六人は戦争開始當時に義勇兵として應募した。又クエーカー教徒及び學者にして平生は猛烈に非戦論を唱ふる人々が六百人程も應募した。是等の人々が自己の主義に反して武器を取り尙ほ命さへも捧げたのは外ではない。則ち天下の公道に反して暴行を行ひ、剩さへ信ぜられない程の殘虐を無情にも加へたる強國を抑制し且つ之を膺懲せんがためである。又た獨逸の軍國主義は、是を打破しなければ文明を滅す恐れがある國際關係及び公共道德心に對する一種の思想であることを悟ると共に、此點を承知して人類の幸福を念頭に置く人々は、唯此有罪國に對して一種の國際的警察權力を執行し最後迄戦ふより外には執るべき道がないことを信するものである。

**歴史の判決** 吾人は佛國に始めて上陸したる訓練を経ざる義勇軍の拂ひたる犠牲を忘れてはならぬ。(英國が戦争を豫期して居なかつた程度を示す證據には軍服の缺乏の爲めに多くの義勇兵は平服の儘訓練せられた。)既

敢てするの罪惡等を冒した。是の蠻行と、ルーヴァン市の破壊とに續いて起つたのが潜航艇の殘虐、有毒瓦斯及びツエツペリンとを以てせる無謀なる殺戮であつた。(潜航艇の爲めに海上で犠牲になつた人數は二千四百四十二人、而してツエツペリンの爆彈の爲めの死者は四百二十六人にて負傷者は九百三十八人であつた。是等は皆非戦闘員である。)カヅル嬢の慘殺は(或人が「英國に取りては一軍團の價值」と述べたが)船長フライアット氏の銃殺に續いて起つた。(詳細は二〇一頁を見よ)而して捕虜に對する慘殺は絶えず行はれた。英國陸軍を創造したのは實に獨逸であつた。若し此戦争が獨逸に對する侵略的戦争であつたならば、五百萬と云ふ義勇軍は決して集まらなかつたであらうと云ふことは吾人が世界中に於て是れ程確かなことはないと思ふのである。(戦後獨逸の商權を奪ふと云ふ様な無謀の考は經濟上の原理を全然無視した語であつて、之れは重に惡しき隣國としての獨逸の勢力を制限するには其貿易を打破するにありと云ふ考へから來たものである。)

英國の一軍曹は報告して曰く、「余は次の如き談話を佛國の下士と幾回となく爲して居る。

佛人「軍曹、君は義勇兵ではないか」

余「然うだ、伍長、僕等は皆義勇兵だ。」

佛人「此大軍は皆然うか」

余「然うだ。皆然うだ。」

佛人「實に偉いものだな」

英國義勇軍の士氣 義勇兵は大學、農家、商店、工場、事務所、鑛山等より集まり來つた。何れも國際



兎もあれ吾人は、白耳義に於ける蠻行に對して未だ獨逸國內に反對の聲の擧つたことを承知して居ない。(「ジャキユース」の著者なる某獨逸人は同書中に白耳義に於ける蠻行を非難し獨逸は戦争の責任を負はざる可からずと述べたが爲めに終に瑞西に難を逃るゝに至つた。)而して北米合衆國に對して爲したる潜航艇の蠻行が不利益であると判つても何等の反對は起らなかつた。故に吾人が獨逸を非難し且つ之に對抗すべき立場を採らざるを得ざるに至つたことは、一部の獨逸人の人格に關しての想像説ではなく實に以上の事實に基いたものである。

**白義耳侵入の驚愕** 佛國に對する攻撃の前提なる白耳義侵入は一般英國人を深く驚かした處である。英國人は若し獨逸が獨佛國境に於て單に防禦的戦争を爲す場合と雖も多少の不安を感じたかも知れぬのである、併しエーチ・デー・ウエルス氏が其新作小説中に述べたる如く、

「若し獨逸が其西方國境に於て單に防禦的戦争のみに満足したならば英國に於ては開戰論者は起らなかつたかも知れない。」

一千八百七十年の普佛戦争には英國は參加しなかつた。併も白耳義攻撃には全英國民擧つて戦争の爲めに熱狂した。」

**獨逸は如何にして英國陸軍を創造せしめたるか** 本國及び殖民地に於て義勇兵が競ふて募集に應じたのは獨逸に對する嫉妬心ではなく實に同國に對する燃ゆるが如き憤怒の念によるのであつた。獨逸は戦争中狂亂したる行動に出で其度毎に英國の義勇兵は増加し尙ほ又た四千人近くの米國義勇兵をも奮起せしめたのである。獨逸は其有り餘れる軍隊と武器とを以て無抵抗の白耳義人を殺戮して尙ほ足れりとせず、有らゆる蠻行を

た。獨帝は手腕があり且つ惡氣はなかつたとしても、傲慢又た粗暴であつたと云ふ評判である。然も普通の英國人等は、獨帝の脱線的言行及び獨逸軍人社會の傾向は如何であつたとしても、獨逸國民の多數は平和的國民にして其科學的、社會的及び經濟的發展は稱讃に値し且つ或點迄は模倣する價值があるものと觀察をして居たのである。

**獨逸に對する論結** 獨逸には、或記者が言つた通り、「正直で交際よく且つ親切なる人が澤山」あると信ぜられて居た。或有名なる記者は此點を最も明瞭に説明して曰く、

「余は一千八百九十年獨逸を初めて訪問した。而して余の最後の則ち六回目の訪問は一千九百十三年であつた。余の伯父の一人は獨逸婦人と結婚して居る。余は其滯在中各地を歴遊し且つ自動車で乗り廻したこともある。余は獨逸の家庭に同居して居つたこともある。余は各方面の獨逸の學者と會合し且つ之と文通したこともある。一千九百十一年九月、余は獨佛國境に於て獨軍の將校と麥酒を飲み且つ水泳を共にしたことさへあつた。一千九百十三年迄は余は官立學校の制度に依つて、獨逸人の精神を邪路に導かんとする長い間の計畫が長足の進歩をしたことを悟らなかつたのである。」

現今多くの英國人が如何に公平に形勢を觀察して居るかと云ふことは、或倫敦週刊雜誌より左の一節を拔萃して之を知ることが出来るのである。

「獨逸魂の倭けたことは全く極端に走つて居る。然も吾人が其範圍を判斷することが出来ない」と云ふのは、獨逸の戰爭觀が如何なる程度の罪惡を故意に承認することに依るのであるか、又其罪惡の性質を知らぬ爲めであるか、或は其罪惡に對する報道が虚偽且つ不完全なるが爲めであるかを知らないからである。」

露せずしては發表し得なかつたからである」と。）

二、英國は獨逸が白耳義に侵入した爲めに戦争に参加することになつたのである。獨逸が白耳義及び佛國を攻撃すべしとは普通英國人の思ひも寄らぬ處であつた。英國人は新聞紙上に於て獨逸が好戰國であることは随分讀んで居るであらう。併し英國人の腦裡には此事實は深く染み込んで居なかつた。之れを疑ふよりも寧ろ之を滑稽に感じ又た遺憾のこととして居たのである。英國人は吾人が今知る處を知つて居なかつたのである。之れは獨逸が佛國を二度も恐喝した時に如何程英國が戦争に近づいて居たかと云ふことを知らなかつたのである。英國人は英獨間の海軍協商が何回も不調に終つたことを知らなかつた。又た勿論獨逸の軍備及び其探偵組織に就ては少しも知る處がなかつた。將又た土耳其及び小亞細亞に於ける獨逸の目的の真相をも了解して居なかつたのである。英國人はロバート卿の戰備必要論を過大に見積りたるものと考へて居つた。併して當時海軍協會の製艦費加名者の少なかつたことに依つても英國人は同協會の杞憂の存する處に毫も注意を拂はなかつたことが分かるのである。獨逸皇帝の「戦争王」「光れる鎧」又は「鐵拳」等に關する演説を英國人は餘り重大視して居らなかつた。英國人は單にウイルヘルム皇帝を先年ウエストミンスター寺院の公けの儀式に於て蘇蘭土の衣服を着たる英國の從兄弟の素足を靜かに噛んだ手に餘る腕白小僧としか思つて居なかつた。英國人は此腕白小僧が祖母なるヴィクトリヤ女皇より大いに譴責されたる當時の逸話を想ひ起した。獨帝は種々なる理由に依て英國では評判が良くなくなつた。獨帝は其の父フレデリツキ皇帝（英國に於て大いに尊敬せられて居つた）に對して不孝者であり其の母なる聰明の名ある皇后、則ちヴィクトリヤ女皇の娘でエドワード皇帝の妹なる人に對しても別段孝行者ではなかつ



## 第二十二章 英國人は獨逸人を嫌ひしか

### 五百萬の民衆が軍人となる理由

戰前に於ける英國の對獨感情 吾人は本章及び他の章に於て既に戰爭の原因に於て及ぶだけ各方面の參考問題を研究したる積りであるが、今之を漏れなく説き盡さんが爲めに再び卷頭に於て論じたる點に立戻ることゝなつた。

一、今次の戰爭は獨逸が塙匈國と協同して露國に對し故意に戰爭を挑んだ其行動に依つて起つたものである。  
(獨逸に對する不利なる證言の追加 有名なる獨逸論客フリードリッヒ・ナウマン氏は中歐諸國は戰爭に對して責任を有し而して獨逸は防禦的でなく侵略的の戰爭を起したものであると言明した。

羅馬亞は今日に於て知らるゝ如く實に三國同盟の秘密の一員である。併し伊太利の如く此同盟を脱し、而して獨逸に對して宣戰するに當つて羅馬亞は、中歐諸國は「全然」侵略の目的を以て戰爭に従事して居るのであると言明したのである。

塙匈國の行動に關して塙國某外交家の發表したる次の一項(一千九百十四年十二月十七日ガゼット、ド、ローサン紙上)は特に注意すべきものである。「伯林政府は我國の外交を煽動して極端なる政策(塞爾比に對して)を採らしめた。而して妥協が成立する様に見えた其瞬間、獨逸は露國に向つて最後通牒を發した。斯して我國は開戰を餘義なくせられた。開戰間際的外交文書を發表しないのは唯だ我國のみである。之れ我國は獨逸の外交を曝

り生じたものである。英人は商業の先驅者であつて獨逸人は行商人であるとは適確なる批評である。獨逸人が殖民政策に成功しなかつたのは單に着手の遅きがためのみではない。主として殖民的強國としての資格と經驗とに幾分缺けて居る處があつたからである。獨逸人は亞米利加若くは英國殖民地の如き其個有の理想と異りたる行政的理想の下にある土地に居住したる間は海外に於て成功したのである。

ヨンストン氏の最近の説の如く、英國民間には高尚なる思潮が流れて居て此危險なる世界的霸王なる野心を助長せしむることを防いだのである。況んや此野心を擁護して世界的戦争の渦中に投するが如きことは欲しなかつた。英國の領土は世界至る處に在る。併かも此領土の歴史に於て茲に著しき三つの事實のあることは注意深き又公明なる研究者は毫も疑ひを差挟まないのである。

一、是等海外の領土は決して世界的覇權を握らんとする目的を以て獲得せられたものではない。又決して帝國主義の產物でもない。是等は全體に於て英國政府自身が領有したものでは全くない。是等は冒險的英人が占領し、責任の増加を好まなかつた政府に向つて是等の新らしき土地を押し附けた様なものである。英帝國は知らぬ間に出來上つたものだと言ふ批評は最も穿ち得た言である。

二、英國海外領土の歴史を研究する人が記憶すべき第二の點は、是等殖民地が當時獲得さるゝに至りたる事情は蓋し再び起り得べきものでないと言ふことである。是等殖民地は重に（イ）、英國航海業及び外國貿易が有力なる競争者を有せず（ロ）、英國に於ける工業及び社會狀態が多數の特に智識あり勇敢にして且つ有爲なる人物をして海外に衣食する道と家庭とを求むるに熱中せしめ而して（ハ）、地球上の大部分が尙ほ亞弗利加濠太利亞の如く人口稀薄にして且つ一定の政府を有せざりし時代に獲得されたものである。

三、總ての研究者の一致する第三點は、則ち英帝國の成立は英國々民の特長なる殖民政策上並に土人統御に對する技術に負ふ所が少くないと言ふことである。此技術は疑ひもなく企業思想、強烈なる獨立主義、統治的能力、高遠の觀察をなし得る習慣、及び一度び正道を踏んだと信じた時には毫も批評と結果とを氣にせざること等よ



對する將來の多額なる年金の負擔。

三、(イ)戰爭中に於ける對獨、塙、土の貿易杜絶(ロ)是等の地にある顧客たるべき人々の戰死及び窮乏に依りて起れる多大なる損失。

四、船舶及び財産の破壊並びに生産事業停止より生ずる損失。

**獨逸の人口過剩論** 獨逸の人口過剩に對して之を容るべき土地を得る爲めに開戦するの已むなきに至れりと云ふ無法なる言條は數多の論客に依つて反駁せられたのである。併し此處に獨逸は人口過剩の苦痛を少しも感じて居ないと云ふことを述べる必要があるかも知れぬ。獨逸の移民の數は過去數年間次第に減少して居る、一千八百八十五年には十七萬二千人の移民が海外に送られた。一千八百九十二年には其數十一萬六千人に降り、一千八百九十八年には二萬三千人に降つて其後數年間其儘の状態を維持して居た。一千九百十二年には其數一萬八千人以上にはならなかつた。獨逸の人口は六千八百萬人である。然も佛國經濟學者アイヴス・ギュヨー氏の統計の如く、今後人口が九千萬人に増加したとしても一平方基米に就き僅かに百六十六人の密度である。然るに一千九百十三年の白耳義の人口は一平方基米に就き二百六十人を下らない密度を持つて居たが格別海外に移民を送る程の必要も感じなかつた。

**英獨の世界政策** 今次の戰爭は獨逸が如何なる犠牲を拂つても世界の覇權を握らうと云ふ決心に基いて居るのである。英國も亦獨逸の如く世界の覇王を夢見て居たと云ふ反論をなす人があるかも知れない。併し之に就て何程論ずるともそれが果して如何なる影響を與へるであらうか。何も與へないのである。サー・ハーリー・ジ

「斯の如き理由と、及び此處には餘り長くなるから説き得ない他の理由に依り、吾人は今次の戦争の罪を交戦國間に公平に分ち、獨逸には之を稍重く負はしむべし」と云ふ議論は之を拒絶するに躊躇しない。吾人は今次の戦争を以て普魯西の軍國主義と非軍國主義なる交戦國との間に於ける、又た國際間の法律及び權利の無視と其認識との間に於ける戦争であるとすることが深き眞理であることを信ずる、茲に眞の理想の衝突がある。

### 「商戰」説取るに足らず

「ウエスミンスター」記者の議論は暫く措いて、此處に戦争の唯一の原因若くは原因の一つともなるべきものは獨逸の貿易に對する英國の嫉妬心であると云ふ非難である。此點に關して余は歐洲歴史研究家なる米人ビー・イー・シュミット氏の言を引照する、氏は蓋し獨逸産の人であるが、併し其著書に於て戦争の原因を公平なる精神で研究したいと勉めて居る。曰く、

「戦争開始の當時、若し海軍が海權を制することを得ば、獨逸の外國貿易に痛切なる打撃を與へることが出来たであらうと云ふ考へが英國人の腦裡に浮ばなかつたと云ふのは愚なることである。併かも亦た此大戦争に英國が參加したのは利慾心若くは嫉妬心に依つて動かされたためであると云ふ様な漠然たる觀察は無い。」

此戦争は商戰なりと云ふ見解を下すことの出来るやうな商人根性を持つた人は、次に舉げたる英國の損失を償ふに足るべき金錢上の利益は如何なるものであると思ふか、是れに就て意見を述べて貰ひたいのである。

一、直接の軍事費、則ち戦争開始後既に三年目になつて居る、一日五千萬圓宛現金にて支出されたるもの、(恤兵事業に贖金されたるものも加ふれば戦争の最初の二箇年間に是等據金の總額は五億圓を下らない。)

二、戦死者、盲者、及び病死者等の重く且つ回復し得ざる損害、寡婦及び遺子、並びに凱旋軍人及び負傷者に



認めて居る。恐露病は疑ひもなく此大災害に對して影響する處が多くあつたのである。

「併かも其證據は獨逸の對露政策に依つて之を見出すべきである。二十年前露獨間には何等の敵意も存在するこ  
となく、又た露西亞の西方侵略の傾向は毫も見られなかつたのである。今次の戦争が破裂した時でも露西亞は西  
方國境に於て充分なる防備をして居なかつたが爲めに其當然の報ひに苦んだのである。然も露西亞の目的は疑ひ  
もなく其國防を充實し而して之に應じて其陸軍を擴張するにあつた。何故なれば、過去二十年間露西亞は獨逸の  
壓迫の爲めに幾度も苦しめられて居つたのである。獨逸は日露戦争の結果を利用して露西亞に最も不利益なる通  
商條約を強制した。又更らにボスニア、ヘルツェゴビナを合併することを奥匈國に勧誘した。而して獨逸は其「研  
ぎ濟ましたる」武器を以て露西亞を脅迫したことを公然誇として居る。然るに獨逸は露西亞の人口が自國よりも  
二倍の多きあることを發見し、又若し露西亞が斯かる侮辱に對し酬ゆる處あらんとして其軍備を完成せば其結  
果は實に恐る可きものなる事を見出したのである。之れは當然の恐怖である、併し誰の罪であらうか。」

## 英國と佛蘭西

記者は極めて正直に、假し獨逸がモロッコ問題に對して要求すべき點があつたとしても、  
(第十六章參照)佛國も英國も獨逸が佛國に對した様な態度を以て此問題若くは斯の如き他の問題に於て獨逸に對  
したことは未だ曾て無いと述べて居る。前章に述べたる材料より推して、英國側の意向は大凡次の如くである。  
「吾人は、平和を維持せんが爲めに極力努力したるのみならず、又獨逸の殖民政策に對する野心を満足せしむる  
方法を發見して、軍備を制限するため且つ國際的論争を解決するため、一定の機關を設けんことに努力したので  
ある。」



來つた國はなかつた。獨逸は、ビスマルクが出づる迄は存在して居なかつた軍國制度を施行したのである。尙ほ此上に惡む可きは文明の自然の進路は平和と平和的商業とに向つて居る時代に、獨逸は他の列國をして自國と同じ道を歩ませ様としたことである。」

獨逸人中の吾人の友人 英國人中獨逸人に數人の友人を持つて居る者は少くない。故に吾人は獨逸人の總てが戰爭を希望して居たのではないことを能く知つて居るのである。「ウエストミンスター」紙上に論じてあつた如く「獨逸人は全く軍國制度に虜はれて居て克く之に服膺し又た之れが爲めに其一千九百十四年を戰爭の好時機として撰んだのである。該記者は更に曰く、

「一千九百十四年の外交史は過去の事件を説明するに重大なる關係を持つて居る。吾人は茲に此制度が殘酷に實行され、爲めに平和は遠ざけられ而して熟考若くは商議の餘地を斷然拒絕し、獨逸が白耳義を通過して佛國に侵入して之を制壓すべき奇襲の時機を失せんとするを甚だ恐れ、終始軍事的冒險のみを事とし毫も政治問題に考慮しなかつたことを推察することが出来る。獨逸國民は之に對して全く無辜のものであつたかも知れない。併し獨逸の外斯の如き行動を採つた政府はまだ歐羅巴にはないのである。又獨逸國民の外斯の如き政府を構成したる國民も亦他に歐羅巴にはないのである。」

### 獨逸の恐露病及び其原因

右の記者は歐洲の多大なる軍備の状態又た神經過敏なる有様に就て之れ主として獨逸の責任であつて而して彌々戰爭が破裂したのは獨逸が殊に其責任を負ふ可きであると述べたのは事實を語つて居るものである。併かも獨逸國民は其隣邦の國民と同様なる恐怖の念に驅られて居ることを記者は又た

## 第二十一章 他の列國も責む可きか

### 公平なる事實の審査

他の列國も均しく之を責む可きか 余は前章を以て本論を結了しても宜かつたのであるが併し未だ戰爭の責任に就て余の看過すること能はざる二三の點が残つて居る。第一は則ち「國家的傲慢と好戰的性質」とは幾多の種類がある内にも獨逸のは實に最も徹底的にして最も鮮明なるものである」と云ふことである。此點は各方面の通信に接する有名なる某記者が倫敦發行の「ウエストミンスター、ガゼット」紙上に立派に解答を與へて居る。「吾人は他列國の無罪を主張する者ではないが併し今次の戰爭をして他の戰爭よりも一層殘酷なるものとならしめたるに就ては獨逸は事件の進行に特別なる責任を持つて居るのである。獨逸の軍國主義は歸着する處單に戰場に於て軍隊を打破するのみならず又實に全人民をも粉碎恐喝せざれば止まざる程の界限なき暴逆を行はしむるに至るものである。獨逸の戰爭に對する觀念は、一國が攻撃され若くは其名譽が却かされたる際に最後の手段となすにあらず、唯其政策の遂行の爲めであるから結局政治上の目的に對して兵力を新たに又た故意に用ふるのである。故に全歐洲は鐵拳の影に被はれることゝなつたのである。ビスマークが豫定の時機に達しさへすれば屢々故意に戰爭を挑んだことは歷史上他に其類を見ざる處である。

「ビスマークが案出したる政策の眞意は感情と道徳心とを除外して單に兵力の輕重を問ふに過ぎなかつたのである。他の列國も斯の如き思想に捕はれたる時代もあつたが併し獨逸の如く代々殘酷にも之を整備し且之を踏襲し

「一千八百六十六年の戦争たるや、(モルトケは記す)普魯西の存立を危くされたが爲に起りしものにも非らず、輿論に従ひしにもあらず、又た人民の聲に依りしにも非らず。之は久しき以前より期待されたるものにして、慎重なる計畫の下に準備され、且つ獨逸に普魯西の覇權を樹立せんが爲に時の内閣が必要と認めたるによりて起されたる戦争である。」

**獨逸の精神的孤立** 中立國の某記者曰く、「現在獨逸の最大なる弱點は實に其精神的孤立に在る。獨逸は文明世界の審判に依つて有罪の宣告を受けてゐる。獨逸が如何に肉體的勢力を振ふとも、之を以て到底其精神的勢力の喪失を償ふことは出来ぬと。」

嘗て伯林に於て官吏として其國を代表して居たる他の中立國の記者の言に、「世には各國民の一定の權利と義務とがある、人類の將來は、一に此權利と義務との上に掛るものである事を確かと慥むべき時節は彌々到來したのである」と云つて居る。



冀ふ上に缺くべからざるものなりと言明して居る。吾人は曰はんとす、此領有は却て永久に獨逸を不安ならしむるものである。何故なれば之が爲に勢ひ佛國をして常に獨逸に對抗すべき同盟の相手を物色して止ましめぬからである。されど吾人は今假りに獨逸の云ふ所に従はん、然も尙、獨逸は必要に際せば自己の物質的利益の爲に、其懷く所の正義の念と其誇る處の道徳心とを公然捨て、憚らざるに至るであらう、かくの如き説明を加ふべき道徳心の中に、世界に對して果して如何なる保證をなすか、將た又之を爲すを得べきか。

### 獨逸皇室の習僻

歐洲が獨逸の一再なるざる宣戰の剋那に危く免れ得たる事蹟は既に前諸章に於て述べた如くである。若し英國が斯る宣戰を妨ぐる事なく遂に戰爭が勃發したらんには、老ウヰリヤム皇帝の皇孫たる現ウヰリヤム皇帝が今度の戰爭に際して爲せる如く、獨逸は戰爭の責任者でないと主張したことは疑ふまでもないのである。けれども之は獨逸皇室の習僻である。獨逸初代の皇帝が、一千八百七十年の普佛戰爭は何れの點から見ても獨逸の責任ではないと云つた其口實は、事實に相違してゐる事はビスマルクが自ら筆を執つた自身の記錄に依つて明かである。ビスマルク自身此の戰爭はビスマルクが佛國政府の公文書を偽造した爲に促進された事を自認してゐる。之と同じく獨逸が丁抹との戰爭（一千八百六十四年）をも求めたるものではないなど、は此頃では云はぬやうになつた。奧太利との戰爭（一千八百八十六年）に就いては、當時ウヰリヤム老帝は、「戰爭の慘害及び犠牲より普魯西を逃れしめんが爲に出来るだけ努めた事を確言し尙曰く、「此事は我人民にも又た人間の心中を見給ふ上帝にも知れ亘つてゐる、けれどもこの際他に執るべき手段はない、我等は我等が生存の爲に戰はざるを得ないと。不幸にしてフォン・モルトケ（其記錄に依れば）は、之に對し一も二もなく反對したのである。

互間の平和と秩序とを威嚇する如き法律上の犯則は、刑法を適用して之を處置すべきものなるかを決定すべき必要に迫られてゐるのである。

### 先見の明

初代の獨逸皇帝は、一千八百七十一年同帝國建設の當時、獨逸は其獨立に對して他國に要求すると同様な敬意は、弱國と強國とに論なく凡ての國と其人民との獨立に對して喜んで之を表すべきことを約したのである。之に就いて著名なる某公論家は、驚くべき先見の明を以て下の如く記述して居る。

「軍人に依つて支配せられ、軍人に依つて居住せられ、且つ古來未曾有なる極度に訓練されたる武人なる事を以て名譽とする一階級に統治せらるゝ一帝國が、果して克く平和の帝國たるを得べきか。何が故に之が平和の帝國たるを得べきか、それは獨逸人が修養あるに依るか、それは眞である、併し修養が節制心の保證であると云ふ證據は何處にあるか。如何なる修養も獨逸の學者團の修養には優ること能はず。併かも是等學者團は其需むる所苛酷に、他國民に對する敵意甚だしく、獨逸の人民若くは軍人社會の何れにも増して何れよりも渾身皆是れ優勝の氣に充ちたるものである。節制の保證が獨逸の道德心なるか。此道德心は獨逸の爲に併合せらるゝことを衷心より欲せざる他の國をも獨逸が併合せんとするを妨げなかつたのである。國際上の事件に於ても、又た個人的事件に於ても、道德の根本的觀念は「無私」に在る。而して一般的形勢に就いては暫く獨逸の云ふ所を承認せんに、獨逸は自己の利益の爲に百五十萬の自由の人に、不心得なる服従を強むつゝ之を抑留して以て自ら快なりと爲すものである。(アルサス、ローレン二州の住民を指す。現在のエルサス、ロートリンゲン)獨逸は、巴里が佛人の都たるに等しく佛人の住するメッツを保有し、今や佛人のものとなりたるアルサスを領有する事は獨逸の永久の安定を



と告げる、若し又勝利を得て居なければ、來週は必ず勝利を得る積りである、而して聯合軍は敗北すると告げて居るためである。其實聯合軍は一向敗北せぬ、又た敗北する見込はないのである。獨逸政府が此事實を認める時初めて平和に對する第一歩が踏み出されるのである。

「若し今日の場合何人にも平和の爲に提議すべき權利を有する者ありとすれば、それは佛國政府である。處で佛國首相は斯う云つてゐる。今日に在つては平和といふ言葉は神慮を冒すものである。此際永續的平和を確立せしむべき絶好機會を若し我等が逸する如き事あらば後世の人々は果して何を言ふべきか。平和は國際間の權利を基礎とするものでなくてはならぬ。

### 獨逸に負ふ處

米國の最も著名なる代表的人物五百人の連署を以て、聯合軍に寄せたる慰問狀に曰く、

吾等は近代文明の共通利福の爲に、獨逸が過去に於いて爲せる偉大なる貢獻に對しては敢て冷淡なるものに非らず。吾等は皆獨逸に對して負ふ處あるを知る。吾等の多くは獨逸の教育より利益を得たり、吾等の或者は獨逸人の血液を有す。然りと雖も、獨逸が斯くばかり盡瘁せる其文明の幸福と、又た獨逸自身の最高利益とは、今度の戰爭に於て獨逸と奧國とが打破せられんことを要求するものなりと。

### 世界は何を決定し置くべきか

米國前國務卿ルート氏曰く、

今度の戰爭は某強國側に於て、條約は之を遵守することが最早締盟國何れの利益にもならなくなつた時、義務として之を履行すべきものであると云ふ事を拒んだが爲に起つたものである。此の拒否は半ばは歐洲の軍事的威力の後援に依つたものである。文明世界は、凡そ國際公法は單に親交上の作法に過ぎざるものか、將又た國民相



ある。

普魯西の當局者は平和なるものに就いて唯だ一の見解を持つらしく思はれる。即ち其考ふる平和は、獨逸の優越せる地位に依つて他國民の上に加ふる威壓的の平和である。而して自由を貴び又た自由を冀ふ國民は、斯の如き野心に服従するよりも寧ろ死を選ぶに如かすといふ事、及びかゝる野心を膺懲し又た之を驅逐して丁ふ迄は現時の戦争を止めるわけには行かぬといふ事を獨逸は未だ悟つて居らぬのである。

### 英國の封鎖

グレイ子爵は獨逸が潜航艇を使用する事に就いて語つた。獨逸宰相は、「英國が其制海權を用して獨逸を饑餓に陥らしめ以て之を屈服せしめんとする其政策に對し、自家防衛上正當の手段である」といふ趣旨を主張するに頗る骨を折つてゐる。然るに事實は、獨逸政府は既に一千九百十五年二月四日に潜航艇封鎖に著手するの意志を宣明してゐる。而して英國に對する復讐手段に就いては三月十一日迄之を宣言をして居らぬのである。既に述べたるハルデン氏は、英國が獨逸に差向けらるゝ貨物を差止めるのは人道に反すると云ふ獨逸側の主張を公然笑草としてゐる。云ふ迄もなく、實際獨逸は相當に食料品を貯藏してゐる。獨逸が英國海軍の行動に就いて苦情を云ふ眞の理由は、之が爲に、銅、白銅、護謨其他の軍用材料の輸入を妨げられてゐるからである。

平和は何故に來らざるか 平和の提議に關してグレイ子爵は最近議會に於て下の如く述べて居る。

「英國が獨逸の意に適する平和條件を承諾せぬために、英國は戦争を永びかす責任者であるといふのは頗る子供らしい。

此際戦期の延長に對して何よりも第一に責任を負ふべきは、獨逸政府が毎も其人民に向つて獨逸は勝利を得た

何故に戰爭を續行せねばならぬか 英國外相は結論として、何故戰爭を續行せねばならぬかといふ事を説明した。「破壊の威嚇」は世界を蔽ふてゐる。

「獨逸は、人命の上に加へらるべき攻撃の一切の方式に對して悉く門戸を開放したのである。有毒瓦斯又は之に類似のものを戰爭に使用する事は、餘程以前に（即ち獨逸帝國の確立せるよりも遙かの以前）我國は其採用を薦められたのであるが、當時我國民は之を人情忍ぶべからざるものであるとして排斥したのである。獨逸は水雷を公海に持ち出し、交戰國も中立國も同様に威嚇してゐる。又た無差別に殺戮を恣にするツエツペリンを持出した。之が戰爭上に與へる損害の如きは眞の偶然のものである。又た潜航艇を持出し、法律をも人情をも無視して、交戰國又た中立國の船を問はず其乗組員をも共に擊破するを事としてゐる。又た侵略と放火と押收とを以て無辜の國民に臨んだ。獨逸の科學は唯人類の生命を奪ふが爲にのみ使用せられて居る。戰爭に對して以上の如き手段を努めて一般に使用して居る。若し世界が戰爭に對して團結する事が出來ぬとすれば、又た戰爭が此上尙も繼續されなければならぬとすれば、科學は人道の爲めに貢獻すべきものなるに、反つて科學上の知識と發明とは人道を滅亡せしむるものあるに對して、各國は、今後其發明し得べき破壊的手段は何たるを問はず治く之を使用するに於て初めて自己を防衛することが出來るのである。

獨逸人は、自己の文明は殊に著しく他に優越し、武力に訴へても之を自餘の世界各國民に強制し得べき精神的權能を獨逸人に與へるものであると主張して居るのである。此戰爭に依りて知られたる「獨逸文明」の實現に貢獻する處は、殺戮に於て誰彼の差別なく之れが絶滅を期する程に其の効力があるものであらうかと云ふことで



「我等は未だ曾つて斯かる狂暴なる言を以て驚かされたる事は無い。ベートマン・ホルウエヒ氏は、英國が斯の如き事を毫も求めざるを既に知つて居るのである。凡そ一國の人民を奴隸として之に依つて事を爲さんとするの不可能なる事、外邦に對する虐政と蠻行とを以て人民の精神を殺す能はざる事は、政治學の初歩に屬する明らかなる理にして、歴史は既に之れを充分に教へて居るのである。我等は獨逸人民が、其全獨逸主義の包藏する世界的帝國建設の迷夢が竟に、空想に歸する時は、専ら其の政府を自ら管理せんことを主張するに至るべしと確信する。茲に初めて歐洲に於ける自由と國民的獨立とを期待することが出来るのである。其故は獨逸の民主政治は、普魯西の軍國政治が將來一定の時期に戰爭を起さんとして計畫せる如くには戰爭を劃策せざるべしと思ふからである。

將來に對する希望　斯くて後グレー子爵は將來に對する其希望を語つた。

今度の戰爭の餘程久しい以前、余は國際間の條約、民衆の權利、國民的獨立等に對して之を犯さんとする行為を速に防止し必要の場合には之を所罰する爲めに、各國民の一大團結を希望したのであつた。而して不平と要求とを提出し來る各國民に對しては、「其不平と要求とを公平なる法庭に提出すべし、其要求する處を法律上の判定又は公平なる人の審判に委ねよ。若し此法廷に於いて勝訴とならば其求むる所を獲べし。若し然らずば、求むる處は之を得べからず。若し戰爭を起さんと謀るならば、之れ人道に對する共同の敵國なりと凡て審判し、之に従つて處置すべし。恰も剽盜、強盜、夜盜及び放火等が各國に於て防遏さるゝと同様に、上述の惡事を犯さんとするもの及び更に之れよりも甚だしき惡事を犯さんものは國際間に之を防遏すべきである。」



勢的以上に出づるものはなかつた。獨逸の準備は攻撃の爲めであつた。然も夫が歐洲大陸の何れの國にも遙に先んじて居たものであつた。

「白耳義は、獨逸の爲め佛國の爲め將た又歐洲の爲めの守勢の城壁である。此城壁は、獨逸が開戦を決定せるまでは、何れの方面よりも絶えて危険を感じなかつたのである。」

英國と各國との關係 既に屢々に記述せる通り、近年に於ける英國の調停は其目的に於て他の列國と親善なる關係を進め争鬭を絶滅せんとするにあつた。

「既往に遡り、英國は三國同盟に對しては有効なる關係を持續してゐた。併し我等は佛國、又は露國と絶えず軋轢を重ねたのである。其爲め屢々戦争は將さに開かれんとした、それ故英國は初めに佛國に對し次に露國に對して協約を遂げやうと決心した。勿論獨逸其他何れの國に對しても何等敵意ありての事でなく、偏に永久的平和の道を開拓せんとするに外ならなかつた。されば獨逸の云ふ如く戦争の準備を爲すに非らず、斯くの如き形跡は毫もなく専ら戦争を避けん事のみに腐心してゐた。而して獨逸の政治家も我國が専ら戦争を避くる爲めに努め、之れを起さんとする考は毫も持つてゐなかつた事を知つてゐた筈である。「我等ほど熱心に平和を希望する者はない。併かも我等は正義を行ふ平和を希望する、世界の公法に對して一般の尊敬を再び確立する平和を希望するのである。」

獨逸に對する英國の眞の感情 英國は「統一され且つ自由ある獨逸を破壊せんと欲す」といふ獨逸宰相の公言に就いて、

持込んで來たとすれば、其人果して如何なる平和を考ふるものなるかを予に語るべきものであると思ふ。白耳義は毫も犯せる罪なき事、同國は名狀すべからざる侵害を受けたる事、同國は倒されたるもの、手に依つて再び起されざる可からざる事等を若し心中に考ふるならば、其時こそ此人は媾和を談じてよいと思ふのである。單に抽象的に、此戦争の正義と罪惡との差異を毫も辨別せんとせざる平和談判は、畢竟筋違ひのものならざれば効能のないものである。」

獨逸に對抗して提携する處なし 其時グレー子爵は、獨逸が「包圍された」とか、又た獨逸に對抗して提携する處があるとかの無稽の説に就いて論じた。

「獨逸に對して決して他國が提携など爲したることの無きを獨逸は知つて居るのである。我國は、正式に又た卒直なる方法に於て、英國は如何なる場合に於ても獨逸に對する侵略策には毫も組せざるべきことを保證した。獨逸は英國に對して無條件にて中立を守ることを誓約すべく要求した、獨逸が歐洲大陸に於て如何なる振舞を爲さんとも、英國は之れに干渉せぬことを宣言すべく要求した。獨逸は萬一戦争を強いられると云ふことを能く云つた。獨逸の所謂強ひられた戦争は如何なるものなるか其標準を示さぬため困まるのであつた。獨逸は飽迄も如何なる戦争も皆他から強られるのであると言張つた。

「獨逸は今や現時の大戦争は他國より獨逸に強ひられたるのであると主張して居る、戦争の當初、三國同盟の第三加入者なる伊太利は、獨逸の此の見解に同意する事を斷然拒絶せる次第に就いて今更貴下の記憶を喚起する必要を認めぬ。何れの國も獨逸を攻撃しやうとは思つて居なつた。獨逸以外の何れの國が執れる手段も單に守

るに、獨り獨逸は竟に賛成しなかつたのである。

「其時余は獨逸に調停の形式即ち獨逸自身が考ふる平和的解決の何等かの方法を選択するやうに要求した、獨逸の方からは一向何等の提議をも持出さなかつたのである。それ故露國皇帝は爭議一切を海牙法廷へ提出するべく獨逸へ申込んだ、之れに對して何等の應答もなかつた。茲に於て歐洲がチュートン民族の意志に屈服するか又は戰ふかの場合になつたのである。

「塞爾比は既に奥國の要求の十中の九迄を承諾したのであるから、目下の問題の解決は寧ろ容易であつた、一週間もかゝれば解決さるべく、今日斯くの如き災害は避けることが出來たのである。露國は獨逸が商議に依ることを拒絶して其出帥準備が露國よりも遙かに進める迄は一般動員の命令を下さなかつたのである。實際に於て獨逸は、奥國が宣戰せるよりも四五日前に既に露國と對戰してゐたのである。

**協議手段と戰闘手段との對照** 英國外相はハルデン氏に對し、協議に依る手段と戰爭に依る手段とを今次の戰爭の實際に照らして其得失を對照せんことを求めた。

「吾人は戰闘手段の慘害が歴然と現はれたるを見るではないか。商工業は亂れ、生存上の負擔は著しく増加し、幾百萬の男子は殺戮され、不具にされ、盲目にされた。國と國との間の憎惡の念は深く又烈しくなつた。文明の組織は悉く崩れんとして來た。」

**無用の平和談** 此戰爭に依つて行はれた不正は之を直はさなければならぬ。

「聯合國は此の戰爭の不正行爲を償はずに放任する如き平和は承知する事が出來ぬ。若し何人か媾和の相談を



「ビスマルクの下に於ける普魯西は兵備を整へ堂々と三回の戦争を爲してゐる。(一千八百六十四年には丁抹と、一千八百六十六年には伊太利と、一千八百七十年には佛蘭西と。)吾等は歐洲並に全世界を通じて安固なる平和を欲するのである。之れ纏て侵略的戦争に對する保證である。

「獨逸の戦争哲學にては安固なる平和は崩壞を現出すると云ふ、即ち人間の性格中に在る英雄的素質は之が犠牲となると云ふことである。(トライツエケは曰く、「戦争は最高なる權謀術策である、戦争に於て初めて人民が眞の人民となるのである」と)斯の如き哲學が若し實際的勢力として存続したならば、之れ永久の憂患と不安とに外ならぬ、益々軍備の擴張に外ならぬ、修養と人道との進展を阻害するに外ならぬのである。」

### 國際的商議に於ける場合

聯合國は戦争を以て各國間の爭議を裁定する好良なる手段とは信せぬのである。

「一國と一國とが相争ふ時其意見が合はず、今にも戦争が迫まらんとするといふ場合に、我等は斯る爭議は戦争以外の手段に依つて解決さるべきものであると信ずる。兩者の間に好意があり毫も侵略的精神が無かつたならば、斯る他の手段方法は毎も功を奏するものである。(一例を挙げれば、「英國より米國へ三千萬圓を支拂へる」「アラバマ事件の協定」及び海牙法廷の運用より得たる經驗。)我等は協議の効果を信ずる。我等は國際的協議に信頼するものである。

戦争を避ける爲に英國が如何に努めたるか グレー子爵はそれより戦争勃發前獨逸に對して熱心に協議を開かんことを勧誘せることを追想した。併かも、既に記述せる如く、露、佛、伊國は悉く之を承諾せ

## 第二十章 聯合各國は何が爲に戦ふか

### 英國外相の精細なる陳述

「朕は、正義と自由とな擁護せんが爲め聯合各國共同の目的が遺憾なく達せらるゝ迄は、戦争を繼續すべき陛下の確乎たる御決意を不載するものなり。戦争第三年の初に當りて英國皇帝陛下に送られたる日本天皇陛下の御親電」

法律、正義及び平和の爲に　ハルデン氏が云へるサー・エドワード・（今では子爵の）グレー氏との會見談の中に於て、グレー氏は聯合國の所謂「正義と自由」とは何を意味するかを言明してゐる。

「普魯西の暴虐なる政治が西歐一帯を蔽ふに至らむ事は我等各國民の耐へ難き處である。白耳義と塞爾比とに與へられたる兩國復舊に關する誓言は必ず履行せられねばならぬ。我國及び我が聯合國が戦ひつゝある目的は歐洲をして虚勢的外交并に戦争の危害より逃れしめ、又た鞘の中に止むことなき及の音より逃れしめ、將た又た「輝ける甲冑」と及び「戦争の王侯」（獨逸皇帝の演説中の用語）等の間斷なき話柄より逃れしめんが爲めである。我等は法律、正義及び平和の爲に戦ひつゝあるものである。抑制なく、慈悲なき野獸的勢力に對抗して全世界に文明を遍からしめんが爲に戦ひつゝあるものである。」

獨逸の戦争哲學に對する戦争　併かも聯合國は、獨逸の所謂健全的思想なる、殆ど永久循環して戦争を希望することに對しても亦戦つて居るのである。

エドワード・グレー氏の萬世不朽なる大演説を想起して曰く。「氏の當時の演説には毫も侮慢の調あらず。該演説は此度の戦争が筆舌に盡し難き慘憺たる光景と又た惡魔の仕業にも等しき殘虐なる行爲を續出し來る可きことを夙に認めたるものであつた。吾人は種々の方面より聞知せる如く、其の日も其夜も、グレー氏は斯く降りかゝらんとする慘事の光景を想ひ合はせて苦悶したのである。尙ほ米國新聞に散見する氏が最近記者との會見談に依つて見るも、氏は既に二十二箇月以前英國下院に於て爲せる演説にあると同様なる憂慮に今も尙ほ沈めることを克く知らしめるものがある。」

**最後の事實** ハルデン氏が引證せる注目すべき會見談に付いては、後章に之が拔萃を掲載する積りである。それ迄の間、獨逸が豫め計畫して戦争を強ひたることを尙ほも證する一事實を須らく茲に擧ぐべきである。之れは獨逸と埃匈國との軍備が既に充分整頓せるのみならず、他の何れの國にも優越し居たる際に當つて、露國は漸く其國防を改正せんとする道にあつた。七月二十八日伯林駐在の埃匈國大使は一同僚に告げて曰く、「露國は戦争を欲せず又た戦争を爲すべき地位にもあらず」と。而して白耳義も亦當時軍備改正中なりし事は遍く世の知る處であつた。之を概言するに、戦争第一年間の結果が示せる如く、聯合國側は何れも獨逸及び埃匈國が準備をなせると同様には、全然準備が無かつたのである。



しく攻撃した。ハルデン氏は曰く。

「宰相は埃匈國が獨逸の宣戰よりも五日後れて宣戰せる此戰爭が敵方から強ひられたるものなどと云ふ其意見に對しては全世界何れの處にも信する者なき所以を、今こそ悟らなければならぬ。」（獨逸は八月一日に露國に對し、又た八月三日佛國に對して宣戰した。埃國は漸く八月六日に至りて露國に宣戰したのである。塞爾比に對しては七月二十八日に宣戰して居た。）

**獨逸宰相に對する獨逸人の批難** サー・エドワード・グレー氏と伯林駐在の英國大使とが伯林に於て既に避く可からざる時局をも之を挽回せんとせる最後の利那の努力をハルデン氏は記述して曰く。

「當時の形勢は如何ありしか。既に白耳義には世界の最も有力なる陸軍國が入込んである。此陸軍國は眷銃を攜帶して居る、之を以て直に英國の心臓を狙ふことも出来るのである。グラングヴィール・サリスベリー・グラッドストーン又はランズダウン（凡て英國の前大臣）などであつたならば、斯る場合に臨めば必らず宣戰を布告したのであらふ。伯林駐在の英國大使は旅券の交附を乞うた、之を請取るや、大使は斯る場合に於ける一切の先例を顧す今一度び宰相の許に到り再び平和の爲に計る處があつた。併かも之れは無効に爲した。激昂せる宰相は、英國が單に中立といふ言葉と、唯一片の反古紙の爲に、全然平和的な國民に對して開戰の決心をなしたりとて英國を詰責し、二十分間は大使をして口を開かしめなかつた。宰相は、白耳義國內の進軍は獨逸に執りて死活の問題なりとし、英國大使は之を以て英國の名譽に係はる同じく死活問題であると答へたのである。」

サー・エドワード・グレー氏が爲せる處置の公平なる事 ハルデン氏は英國下院に於けるサー・

佛伊三國大使の商議に委ねんことを提議せり。吾人は斯くの如き提議に参加すること能はざる旨を聲明せり。」  
獨逸宰相が戦争開始後議會に於て、「我等の敵國は戦争を選んだ」と公言するや、リーブクネヒト博士は絶叫して曰く、

「そは虚言のみ、爾が戦争を選んだのである。」と。

一千九百〇五年以來引續き獨逸に住せる現代語の教授英人テオボルド・バトラー氏は近頃歸國したるが、記述して曰く、

「余の親しく知る處は、獨逸陸軍の幹部に於ては、一千九百十四年八月一日の尠くも二週間前より最後の戦闘準備に着手してゐた。七月の中旬に至り、主として青年士官と文官とより成る余の組は、不可思議にも罷めるやうになつた。」

吾等に強られたる戦争 獨逸の最も偉大なる且つ最も不偏不黨なる公論家の一人はマキシミアン・ハルデン氏である。過般氏の有名なる一新聞「ツクンスト」は、一千九百十一年七月モロッコ國に於けるアガヂール事件の際（即ち獨帝が「獨逸の臣民を保護」と號して一人の獨逸人も居らぬ港へ一隻の軍艦を派遣したる當時）より、一千九百十四年七月（即ち奧國が塞爾比に宣戦し獨逸が露國に最後通牒を送れる頃）に至る迄の獨逸外交政策を全然辨疏の餘地無き程峻酷に論難したる廉を以つて、官憲の爲に押收されたのである。氏は此論文に、英國が歐洲戦争を避けんとして兩國間に協定を遂げんがため切りに努めたるに對して、「伯林より寒風を吹き送らせ」たりとて獨逸の外務當局を盛に罵倒し、其往々口にする「吾等に強いられたる戦争」なる慣用語を烈

マン書店より發行されたる書冊中に收録せる英、佛、露、白、塞、獨、及び埃匈國公文書類より採録したものである。又た伊國議會に提出せる公文書は伊國政府の爲めに倫敦ホツダト及スタウトン書店より發行せる「外交文書」に收録してある。事實の眞相は、

第一、獨逸は埃洪國を抑制すべき何等の手段をも執らず（併も埃國自身は愈々危機接迫の際には稍や弱氣を出し且つ歐洲一體の戰爭ともならば其結果は埃國自身の滅亡をも來たすべき恐れあるを自覺し始めたるにも拘はらず、自身固く開戰の決意をなせること。

第二、塞爾比事件並に獨逸が其同盟國に對する條約上の義務等は單に開戰の爲に利用せる口實に過ぎず、之に對しては佛國も露國も將た又た英國も何等挑撥がましき態度を取らざりしこと。

第三、獨逸が既に露佛二國と戰端を開ける後にも、獨逸は最近數年間英國に對し其眞意を隠し得たるものと思ひ込み、今回も亦何等かの約束又たは其他の方法を以て英國を中立ならしむるやうに説得することが出来るものと最後迄も期待しゐたること。

**獨逸政府の承認** 現時の戰爭の眞相を究めんとする將來の歴史家は、獨逸外交文書中次に拔萃せる一節を觀過することが出来ぬのである。

「埃匈國が塞爾比に對して極力交戰的態度を持するに於いては、露國をも起たしむるに至るべく、斯くては吾等も亦同盟義務に準據して戰爭に参加すべきことは明らかである。……………吾等は埃國が塞爾比に對して全然自由行動を執る事を許せり。……………サー・エドワード・グレー氏は塞埃兩國間の懸案は、氏自身を議長として獨



る戦争并に之によりて起るべき次の戦争は共に侵略の目的に出づるものである。従つて三國同盟の條件に衝突する處がある。故に伊太利は何處までも中立をするのであると。是より先七月二十八日伊太利は、平和に對しては如何様にも英國と協力する積りで居る由を通告した、此危機を通じて、伊太利の態度はど時局に於ける理否を明白に表明せるものは無かつたのである。

### 獨逸最後の行動

八月四日獨逸は英國を局外に立たしめんが爲に最終の企圖を試みた。今度は獨逸は戦争終了後白耳義の國土を併合せざるべきを申出たのである。併し獨逸は此時既に白耳義の國境内に侵入して歐洲列國に對する神聖なる約束を破棄したる後の事であるから、獨逸は如何にせば他國が獨逸の提議に注意を拂らふものと思ふことが出来るか甚だ了解に苦しむ次第である。

同日英國より、獨逸が若し今夜の夜半にかけて白耳義に於ける其侵入軍を更に進ませたならば、英國は獨逸に宣戦すべしといふ最後通牒が獨逸に向つて發せられた。伯林駐在の英國大使は此最後通牒を提出するに臨んで、獨逸が今一應考へて見るやうに頼んだ。大使は問うて曰く、「英獨開戦によりて生ずる畏るべき状態を思へば、今最後の際に臨みて尙且獨逸に取つて再考の餘地は無きものであらふか」と。然るにフォン・ヤゴウ氏は、「假令今後二十四時間又は其以上の猶豫期間を與へられたりとも」と之を拒絕した。遂に戦争は始まつたのである。

### 獨逸の態度に對する非難

列國間に往復せる書類は其數夥しく其大要のみを略記したのであるが、若し讀者にして是等書類を精讀する暇があれば實際の事情を一層明瞭に悟ることが出来るのである、(本書に引用せる主要なる是等の文書は、曩に英國政府の旨を受けて「戦争に關する外交文書集覽」(代價一志)と題し倫敦ワイ

同意した。茲に於て相談は今は猶豫すべき時機でないから時を移さず開かれた。然るに獨逸は突如として時局を急轉せしめた。即ち第一、十二時間内に復員を要求したる最後通牒を露國に致送せるに依り。第二、白耳義の中立を尊重すべく佛國は直ちに之を保證せるに獨逸は斯る保證を與ふる事を拒めるに依りてある。

再び獨逸は英國の中立を求むるに努む 其翌八月一日、獨逸は英國をして中立を守らしめんがため最後の努力を試みた。曰く、若し獨逸が白耳義の中立を犯さず佛本國の幾分をも將又た其殖民地の何れをも併吞せざる事に同意せば英國は無條件にて局外に中立すべきや否やと。サー・エドワード・グレー氏は、先づ第一に斯の如き獨逸の約束を履行すべく何等の保證無き事、第二に何れにせよ佛國と（其同盟國たる露國と）英國との間に存在する好意を永久に破壊せんとするが獨逸の専心努力する處なるに相違なかるべきを思ひ英國は唯だ答ふるに其様な請合を爲すこと能はざる旨を以てしたのである。

獨逸は露國に宣戰し白耳義に最後通牒を送る 同日獨逸は露國に對して宣戰を布告せる事を言明した。此際に露國外務大臣が爲せる言明は注意すべきものである。氏は「激昂して」曰く、今回の危機を通じて、一切の提案は一も「露國が之を拒絶せるものはない」と。

八月二日獨逸は白耳義に最後通牒を送つた。此時サー・エドワード・グレー氏は佛國に對し、若し佛國が獨逸より攻撃せらるゝ事となれば、英國海軍は北海及英佛海峡に於て佛國を保護すべく保證した。

伊太利の注目すべき態度 八月三日伊太利は三國同盟（三國同盟は獨逸、奧、伊及羅馬尼より成り、二國同盟は佛露よりなり、又た英國は露佛と 商の關係に在る）の一員として聲言して曰く、此度奥匈國の企てた

在の時局が幸ひにして無事に経過し去るを得ば、其後に來るべき各國の安堵と又た此反動とは、列國間に是迄よりも更らに鞏固なる和解を來さしむるを得べき希望を予は持つものである。

平和の爲め更らに英國の努力 七月三十日埃匈國は全國の動員中なる由を發表した。此日露國は、若し埃匈國にして塞爾比の獨立を犯さるに於ては露國は一切の軍事的準備を中止すべきことを提議した。此間に獨逸は、數日間竊かに軍事的準備を怠らなかつたのである。

さて埃國塞國及び露國に就ては、伯林駐在英國大使は獨英佛伊に於て平和の爲に其威力を用ひ得べきサー・エドワード・グレイ氏は更に歩を進めた。氏は斯く言明した。

「若し獨逸が何等か條理ある提議をなし之にて獨逸も埃國も共に歐洲の平和を擁護するに汲々たるものが克く分かり且露國及び佛國が若し之を排斥するとすれば兩國は不當なることが克く分かるものであつたならば、余は露都及巴里に於て此提議に賛同するものである。而して萬一露佛が之れを承認せぬやうな場合には如何なる結果にならふとも余は之れに關係せざるべく、若又た然らずして佛國が之れに加入するならば英國も同様加入すべきである」と。

獨逸は露國に對する最後通牒を以て形勢を險惡ならしむ 同日に於て露國と埃匈國とが、露國は暫く「形勢を見るべき態度を持續し、埃匈國は塞爾比に對して此以上に壓迫を爲さず、之と同時に「列國は塞爾比が其君主權と獨立とを傷づくる事無くして埃匈國に満足を與へ得る方法如何を研究すべし」といふ意見に



七月二十七日、維納駐在の英國大使は各國大使と協議の結果、塙國は當初より戰爭を目的とせるものなることの結論に達したるも、尙ほサー・エドワード・グレート氏は（七月二十九日）「自分の提議が採用せられぬとすれば、獨逸に於て何等かの方法を提示するならば、佛伊及び英は喜んで之に従うべし」との意を獨逸に通じた。

獨逸英國の中立を求む 然るに今や獨逸の行動は漸く瞭かなるものとなつた。即ち、獨逸の宰相は皇帝と協議の後、開戦に於ける獨逸の立場を公然言明して佛國の領土は毫も之を併合せぬ事并に和蘭の中立を尊重する事を約して只管英國に中立を守らしむべく努めた。併し佛國殖民地に關しては、何等語る處がなかつた。佛國の殖民地は單に其二箇所を以てしても地中海兩岸の半部を領する龐大なるものである。又た白耳義に就いても獨逸は何等言ふ處がなかつた。

サー・エドワード・グレイ氏の憤れる回答 サー・エドワード・グレイ氏は、其翌日憤れる回答を發し英獨間の好良なる關係を維持し且之を擁護する唯一の途は、兩國が歐洲平和の擁護のために絶へず努力するに在りと告げ尙ほ書するに、

「若し歐洲の平和が擁護せられ此度の危機が無事に經過せんには、余自身が努力せんと欲する處は、歐洲列國間に或協約を進行せしめ獨逸も之に加はるべく、此協約に依つて、佛露并に英は聯合又は單獨を問はず獨逸及び其同盟國に對して何等の侵略的又敵對的政策を行ふこと無かるべしとの保證を獨逸が得べきものである。最近の巴爾幹の危機に際し余は誠に斯の如く希望し之が實現の爲に絶へず苦心したのである。但だ今日迄は之を纏りたる提議の主題と爲さんには餘りに空想であつたが、過去數十年間歐洲に於て危急之れよりも甚だしきものなき現

## サー・エドワード・グレー氏の警告

露國は埃匈國の行動が獨逸の後援の下に戰爭を起すを以て目的としてゐることを指摘した。サー・エドワード・グレー氏は、埃匈國の塞爾比攻撃は恐らく露國をも亦之に關與せしむるに至るべく、斯くならば佛獨二國も亦た之に参加せざるを得ざるべく、其時には英國も傍觀する事難かるべき旨を明らかに通告したのである。之に反して獨逸は、埃匈國の要求は「公平にして又た妥當」であると宣言した。茲に於てサー・エドワード・グレー氏は獨、佛、伊及び英の四ヶ國が協同して維納と露都とに於て、平和の爲に盡さざる可からずと主張した。

## 平和の爲に盡せる露英の努力

七月二十五日、露國は此問題の處置を英佛獨伊の四箇國に一任したしとの希望を表明した。一方塞爾比はサー・エドワード・グレー氏より(七月二十四日)出來得る限り讓歩すべく注意を受けたのである。七月二十五日に於て塞爾比は露國の承認を得て埃匈國に極めて驚くべき讓歩を爲した。塞爾比に對して英國と同じき勸告を爲した露國は(七月二十五日)、塞爾比が埃國の列國に訴へる前、塞爾比の首都の軍事的占領なすを承認せんとするにも元より同意したのである。然るに埃國の回答は(七月二十五日)、塞爾比が、サー・エドワード・グレー氏の「苟も國家が蒙りたる最大の屈辱」とさへ呼べる程の讓歩を爲せるにも係らず其公使を引揚げしめ、塞爾比に告ぐるを其獨立を失ふに至るべきを以てしたのである。

## 平和の提議に對する獨逸の妨害

此日獨逸は、サー・エドワード・グレー氏よりの「獨逸は協商の根底として先づ埃國を動すべし」と云へる提議を斥けた。又た獨逸は、埃獨兩國は暫く積極的行動を見合せ、英獨佛伊の四箇國に於て協議を開くべしとのサー・エドワード・グレート氏の提議(七月二十七八日)をも拒んだのである。

## 第拾九章 歐洲戰爭前後の外交史

### 戰爭を避けんとせるサー・エドワード・グレー氏の苦心

塞爾比に對する最後通牒 一千九百十四年の初夏、奧匈國皇位の世嗣及び其妃がボスニアに於て塞爾比の一熱狂者のために非業の死を遂ぐるに至れる前後の事情は未だ遍く世に知られざる處である。併し此暗殺事件の結果は、塞爾比に對する七月二十三日附の最後通牒であつたが、之は獨逸皇帝及び維納駐在の獨逸大使が、其發送に先ちて披見したものである。此通牒に依つて塞爾比は四十八時間以内に極めて凌辱的なる十箇條の要求を承諾せざるを得なかつたのである。サー・エドワード・グレー氏は（七月二十四日）言明して曰く、余は「未だ曾て荷も獨立國に對して斯の如き要求の發せられたるを聞かず」と。而して氏は須く回答時間の制限を撤回すべしと極力主張したのである。

伊太利の著名なる一著述家グクリエルモ・フェレロ氏は、昨年出版せる其著書中に、此奧國の行爲を以て露國に對する計畫的の挑撥と爲すに憚らなかつた。氏曰く、然も殊に驚くべきは二週間前の奧國は歐洲列國に對して其要求の尙緩和せらるべき餘地あることを言明し乍ら突如として斯る手段に出でたるは其要求の苛酷なる殊に著るしきものがあると。獨逸二國と共に三國同盟を形成せる伊太利すらも抗議して曰く、我同盟國は我に對して「何等の通告も與へず、我政府より提出せる要求緩和に關する意見にも毫も注意を拂ふことなくして」最後通牒を塞爾比に送附せりと。



## 土耳其及び巴爾幹諸邦

土耳其に就いては、由來獨逸は財政上及軍事上の援助を施し、アルメニヤ人

に對する土耳其の虐政に對しては見ぬ振りをなして西歐及び露國を驚かし、土耳其帝に諂ひ高官を買收し、獨帝をして鹵簿を列らねてバレストアインに幸せしむる等の手段を以て其勢力を土耳其に扶植したのである。獨帝のゼルサレムに赴くや、自ら教徒の頭巾を纏うて戯れ、寺院に詣でゝは、中央阿弗利加に僅かに數人の黑人回教徒を臣民として有するに過ぎざるに、厚顔にも自ら「回々教の擁護者」と揚言して憚らなかつた。

土耳其以外の巴爾幹諸邦に至つては、先づ三國同盟の渺たる扈從者たる羅馬尼の王位はホーヘンツォレルン家の一員に依りて占領せられ、勃牙利の統治はハプスブルグ家より出でたるものゝ手中に委ねられ、希臘の皇后は獨帝の皇妹たり、而して塞爾比の主要物産の唯一の市場は實に埃國なるより、塞爾比は經濟上埃國の勢力下に在る有様であつた。

曩に埃國がボスニア、ヘルツェゴヴィナを合併して其領土を更に南方に擴張したる際、獨逸は若し之に露國が不腹ならば開戦すべく威嚇したる次第は既に吾人の知る處である。之と同じ威嚇を以て埃國も亦塞爾比をして、埃國の所爲を強いて承認せしめたのである。巴爾幹諸邦の間の爭奪の結果、スラヴ種族の塞爾比（及び之よりは稍尠い程度に於てスラヴ種族の黒山國）が著しく其領土を擴張せる時埃國と獨逸とが懸念する處ありしも無理ならぬ次第である。夫れは塞爾比は僅にダニュープ河を隔てゝ埃國に面し、黒山國は埃國塞爾比及外海の間に介在せるに依つて、獨逸と埃國とが君斯旦丁堡に向つて進出するに當つては塞爾比が其第一着歩なるがためである。

のにて之は次章に述べる。

### 近東問題概説

併し此事情を知るには、我が極東の讀者は未だ近東問題を細さに研究して居らぬ恐れがあるから、豫め近東問題中の幾分は了解する處がなくてはならぬ。さて所謂近東問題は、異人種に對する土耳其人の失政より起れる問題である。然し又巴爾幹に對する露奥の勢力争ひより由來したる問題でもあつた。往年露土戦争の當時、露軍は既に君斯丁堡の回教寺院の尖塔の見えるまで接近して居たのであるが、英國の爲に僅に支へられて君府を占領せずにとつたのである。英國も後に之は眞實遺憾なりとして居る處である。露國は、第一は君府が曩に大なる基督教の首都であつた感情上の理由より、第二は、露國が一箇所も未だ有せざる不凍港を初めて此處に得るといふ實利上の理由より、多年君斯丁堡を渴望してゐたのである。それと同時に奥匈國は獨逸後援の下にサロニカ州に於て海洋に達せん事を求めてゐたのである。

### 奥匈國の形勢

併かも巴爾幹の將來のみならず、奥匈國の將來も亦近東問題に係はる所がある。

フランツ・ヨーゼフ陛下が即位後幾何もなく、當時普魯西は奥帝の領土の一大區域を奪ひ、獨逸民族の間に奥匈國が振ひつゝあつた勢威を失墜せしめた。奥匈國と呼ばれたる各種の人種の雜然たる一集團が、其類齡の主權者の歿後迄も存在すべしとは何人も信する者が無かつたのである。獨逸は自國こそ之が後繼者であると自認してゐた。奥匈國民中の大部分は獨逸民族又は反スラヴ種族である。獨逸と奥匈國とは既に最も親密なる政治上又は軍事上の同盟を結んでゐた。而して兩國間の關稅同盟の計畫も亦其歩を進めてゐたのである。獨逸が愈々近東の霸權を握るには先づ奥匈國續いては土耳其をも加へたる巴爾幹全部を併吞する順序である。

「吾人は強大の軍備の爲の過重なる負擔多大の犠牲及び緊張したる國際的關係等の壓迫の下に呻吟する結果、戦端を開く事は之を慰藉と考ふる如く萬事を處置して行かねばならぬ。」

尙此文書には埃及及び其他到る處に於て戦亂を起さしむる手段を可なり詳しく述べて居る。

### 一千九百十三年の戦雲

獨逸に於ては軍隊の動員に先ち、準備的處置として何時開戦になるとも差問へなきやう豫備將校及下士卒に用意を警告する事である。此警告は一千九百十二年のアガチール問題切迫の際にも與へられ、又た一千九百十三年の四月にも再び發せられたのである。吾人の既に知る如く、此際も英國は若し佛國に對し理由なき攻撃を加ふるものあらば英國をも同じく相手とする覺悟なかる可からずと通告して鞏固なる態度を示したるがために前後二回とも戦争を避くことが出来たのである。

伊太利の前首相ギオリツチ氏が演説中に爲せる宣言に依つて人の知る如く、同年奥國は伊太利を誘動して塞爾比攻撃の仲間に引入れやうとした、而して此攻撃には獨逸が後援を爲すべき筈であつた。幸ひ伊太利が之れを拒絶したばかりに、此時も亦戦争はものにならずに了つたのである。(君府駐在の伊太利大使は、現戦争の開始後幾何もなく、伊太利外交官の名簿より削除された。それは大使が一千九百十三年中直接土都駐在の獨逸大使より、獨逸は當時戦争を計畫し居たる旨の内談を受けたるに之を本國政府に通報するを怠つたが爲めである。)

併し英國の態度伊太利の拒絶等に頓着なく戦争は飽迄企畫せられてゐたのである。一千九百十三年十一月中、獨逸皇帝は白耳義の國王に對し、佛國との戦争は「到底避け難く且焦眉に迫つてゐる」由を告げた。

さて愈々一千九百十四年となつた。戦争開始に先つ數日間の事情は文書に公けにされたる如く感に耐へたるも



## 第拾八章 獨逸は何故に現時の大戦争を起せしか

### 一千九百十三年中の出來事

「凡そ老練の戰略家は其軍隊の能力と之を指揮する自己の智略とを正確に打算し、而して歴史上に其名を擧げんと思ふのが自然である。(ヘビスマルクの言)

非常なる承認 前二章を通讀せる者は何人も獨逸が豫ねてより佛露二國に對し戦争を企て居たることは深く疑はぬのであらふ。又現戦争の勃發後に發布せられたる獨逸の公文書を精讀したる人々は毫も之を疑ふ處がないのである。

戦争勃發後に發表されたる材料は之を二部に區分する事が出来る。下に掲げたるは第一部に屬すべきものにて一千九百十三年の事項に係はるものである。

一千九百十三年三月十九日附の獨逸陸軍擴張に關する秘密覺書は、擴張準備後一ヶ月に佛國政府の手に入りたるものにて、之は既に本書中に引用したのである。茲には他を摘載する。

「吾人は、我軍備が佛國の軍備と政策とに對する返報であることを獨逸國民の心に深く感銘させやうといふ考を持たなければならぬ。吾人は國民をして、獨逸が自ら進んで攻勢的戦争を企てるのは敵方の挑戦に對抗する爲には止むを得ざる處置である」と考へさせる様に常に之を慣らさなければならぬ。

「吾人は他の猜忌を起さぬやうに極めて慎重に行動せねばならぬ。

ては、ウォルトマンは其「政治的人類學」に於て極めて明瞭に之を説明して居る、曰く、獨逸人種は其主權内に全地球を抱擁するの使命を擔ふ」と。されば吾人は斯かる言語を聞きたる後に於て「フランクフルテル・ツァイツング」紙が「吾人は人道の爲に此戰爭を作す、此戰爭は神慮に出づ」と記るすのを視るとも毫も驚くに足らざる事である。次に掲ぐるは、海牙平和會議に於ける獨逸代表者の一人ミュニツヒ大學教授フォン・シュテンゲル男爵の意見である。

「我等獨逸人は一切の創造物中に獨逸文明の王冠を作る。何れの點より見るも他の在らゆるものに優絶して居る我が統治に歸服するは、何れの國民に取りても其繁榮なる存在に對して唯一且つ最も確實なる方法である。我等が保護の下に在りては、一切の國際法規は全然無用の長物である。其故に我等は自ら直覺的に各人各箇に其固有の權利を與ふるがためである。」

上にも例ふべきものが無い程高慢になつて居る國民」を相手として世界は事を爲すのであることは實際である。

獨逸記者の筆になれる驚くべき論文は既に本書中に引照せるが之と同様のものは猶數多列擧する事が出来る。余は茲に獨逸皇帝の演説より更に二節を抜粹する。

「神は若し我等獨逸國民の將來の爲に偉大なる運命を保留して居らぬならば、自ら獨逸人の祖國の爲に斯くばかり多大の考慮を爲さなかつたであらふ」。(一千九〇五年、タンデールに於て)

「獨逸國民は花崗石の礎石である、神は此礎石の上に世界の文明を建設して之を完成せんとするものである。」(一千九百〇七年、ミュンステルに於て)

獨逸哲學界の最も偉大なる人々の言語は、是等思想家の排斥せんとしたる俗世界に投合せしめんが爲に今や其論文中より破棄せらるゝに至つた。獨逸は國を擧げて軍國主義と侵略思想との裡に生きて居るのである。聞く處に依れば殆ど七百種に餘る戰爭に關する書籍が獨逸に於て一ケ年間に出版されたといふ。獨逸の軍事著述家フオン・ベルンハルデ將軍の著書中其最も廣く讀まれたる一書の卷頭に「戰爭と流血とは善隣の友誼よりも遙に大なる功績を成して居る」といふ題辭が記してある。又トライツユケは曰く「凡そ國際間の條約は、心中に保留する處有りて締結されるものである。唯だ第三位の重要程度の問題のみが仲裁々判に附せらるゝものである」と。ベルンハルデの意見は「全世界の強國とならしむるか或は滅亡せしむるかに一切を賭する」のである。トライツユケは更に曰く、小國の特徴は常に劣等なるに在りと。ベルンハルデは復た公言して曰く「若し當然吾がものとなるべき世界に地歩を得せんと欲せば、須く我が劔に依頼せざるべからず」と。而して所謂世界に於ける地歩に就き



られさうに見えたものは、土耳其帝國及びこれと埃何國との間に在る土地の霸權であつた。而して伯林に於ける政治家は終始一貫之を目指して來たのである。巴爾幹と土耳其帝國とに對してはいざと云はゞ戰ふべく益々準備を固めたのである。

「若し獨逸にして一度是等の領域に霸を唱へんか、其勢力は、獨逸の經濟的發展に必要なものを得べく、其興業と資本とに對して宏大なる部面を展開し、地中海より國を除去し、其第一の敵なる英國に對しては全版圖中の最も傷つき易き部分に於て之を脅迫する事とならふ。

「此場合に於ては言ふ迄もなく露國は之に抵抗すべく又た佛國より應援される事もあらふ。併し獨逸は露國を以て鬼面のみ何んぞ怖るゝに足らんやとし、其内政の疲弊に對して、高を括り佛露の結合をも念としなかつたのである。又た英國に至つては瞞されて餘程油斷をして居たかも知れない、英國政府の平和的態度、又た獨逸と協商を遂げんとして撓まざる努力（前章參照）等は疑ひなく斯る考を助長させたのである。

「佛露兩國に對する攻撃は、眞の目的を蔽へる單に豫備行爲たるに過ぎぬものであつた。眞の目的に至ては此等二國を顛覆せざる限り達すべからざるものである、併し二國を攻撃して勝利を得たとしても之は畢竟目的に對する手段たるに過ぎぬ、露佛何れかの國境が一度び其手中に入れば、獨逸の軍事的、經濟的及び財政的の勢力は、何等の支障なく蕩々として近東及中東に侵入して來るであらう。斯る有利なる地點より夥しく増大せる資源と高進せる威勢とを以つて最後の爭覇戰を容易に英國に向つて挑むに至るであらふ。」

獨逸が自ら視たる獨逸 以上述べたる如く若し獨逸に就て云へば、「其過去に於ける成功が恐く世界史

## 第拾七章 獨逸の更に大なる計畫

### 全世界統治の企圖

一千九百十四年の戦争の後 何が故に獨逸は戦争を計畫したか、乞ふ英國に於ける最も事情に通じ且つ史蹟にも明るく立論苟くもせざる記者にして、英國第一流の評論雜誌「四季評論」の主筆なるジ・ダブリュー・プロテロ博士をして之に答へしめやう。曰く、

「英國の注意は餘りに久しき間獨逸海軍の發達に傾注された處から、過去十五年或はそれ以上に亘りて獨逸が執りたる政策の根本的目的は何物なりしかを竟に看破する事が出来なかつたのである。

吾人が若し巴爾幹に對する塊獨の行動と、獨逸の野心の向ふべき幾多の機會を研究し兼ねて從來發表されたる政治上の著作に現はれたる獨逸の心理を解剖して見たならば、近東と中東とを征服して己れの版圖に之を收めやうとすることこそ、獨逸の外交及び其庞大なる軍備の目的の中心を爲せるものであるといふ結論に到達せざるを得ないのである。

「斯く云へばとて伯林の政治家はそれ以外に狙ふ處がないと云ふ意味ではない、中々以て然らず。獨逸語を談す瑞西及び他の國若くは其一部分と共に和蘭白耳義を嚙て並吞して了ふ事、佛領蘭領白領の各殖民地を征服する事、並に英國の海上に於ける權力を破壊して英帝國を顛覆することは云ふまでもなく、佛國と露國との領土を削減する事等總べて是等は獨逸が最後の目的として書入れて居る處である。併し此内にて相當の期間内には目的が達せ

に、是等の國の進歩發達に對しては常に同情を持つて居たのである、又た英國が是等の國と眞面目なる國交を持したるがために世界を益したることも尠なくはなかつたのである。英國は獨逸に對しても亦た此の如き眞面目なる狀態以上に多きを望まなかつたのである。英國は獨逸との間に於ける競争的海軍擴張を相互に節減する實際的方法に依て如上の望ましき狀態を來たさしめんと苦心したのである。此苦心も永い間且つ忍耐を以てしたのであるが遂に無効に終はつたことは前に述べたる如くである。

獨逸が軍備節減を欲せざる秘密の理由 英獨間の海軍擴張は兩國軋轢の眞の原因にて、之を萬一に防がんとする提議事項を何故獨逸は拒絶したるか。

海軍々備を共同に節減すると云ふ容易なる方法に依つて、英獨間の難問題を根本的に解決せんとする凡ての提議を一々拒絶し乍ら、獨逸二國が佛露二國と交戦する場合に何故獨逸は英國の中立を飽迄も確保するに努めたか。之が答は只だ左の通りである。

之れより以下の章に於いて一目瞭然たる如く、久しき間、戦争を、用意したる獨逸は今や戦争を目論めるのである。（獨逸政府の目的が、喜んで海軍問題の交渉に應ずる如く見せ掛けて英國を瞞着するに在つた事は、フォン・ビュロー公の「獨逸の政策」中に明らさまに承認して居る。



「我等は友誼ある諸國が、他の列國と親和の狀態に在らんことを切望して止まない、我等は之を妬まず却て満足を表するものである。」

### 英國の正當なる態度

一千九百十四年の初夏に於て戰爭は今や將に勃發せんとする頃、サー・エドワード・グレイ氏はバグダット鐵道に關して獨逸と協約を取極めたのである。即ち英國は獨逸の勢力の當然なる擴張に對して之を阻害する者は毫も無いと云ふことが是程よく分かるものはない。實に英國殖民地行政家及び亞弗利加開拓者の最著名なる一人(サー・ハーリー・ヤンストン卿)は主なる某評論誌上に於て、小亞細亞の獨逸同化に關する計畫を概論したのである。

### 政治家及び新聞記者の獨逸訪問

英國から好意上の半官的使節として獨逸に赴いたものは獨りハルデン卿のみではなかつた事も亦注意して置くべきである。ウ井ンストン・チャーナル氏及びロイド・デヨーデ氏の二人も、亦た獨逸の高級官邊の誤解を去り一層好良なる意志の疏通を得んがために獨逸へ赴いたのである。尙又た英國民の誠實なる希望は獨逸と友誼的關係を持續せんとするにあれば、之れに對して獨逸の輿論を喚起すべき目的を以て英國新聞記者の一團は獨逸へ赴き、其後獨逸記者の一團が英國に來たのである。尙は英國の最も勢力ある三四の新聞が、暫くの間絶へず獨逸側の意見を其紙上に掲載した事なども亦た書き添へて置くべき事である。某倫敦日刊新聞の如きは數年間毎日僅かづゝ特に獨逸文の記事を掲載したるほどであつた。

之を要するに以上記述したるが如く、英國は自國と佛國との間に、又た自國と露國との間に存在せる年來の遺恨の愚なることを悟つたのである。英國は戰時に於て佛國又は露國を援くべき何等の拘束も無き協約あるが爲め

更らに尙ほ獨逸に對する英國の提議　斯く兩國の協議が不調に終つた以上は、英國が獨逸との海

軍協定を中止するとも其言譯は立つのであつた、併も英國政府は、英獨兩國が何れも其海軍力を増加せぬといふ眞實なる決定に平和の最善なる保證が存することを悟つたのである。夫故英國は一千九百十二年に再び此事に就て努力し尙ほ一千九百十三年にも亦た之に盡くす處があつた。チャーチル氏は海軍豫算を提出するに當り、「海軍の休暇」に關する提議を申出したのである。氏は言明して曰く、若し一定の年限獨逸が軍艦を建造せぬならば英國も亦た之に倣ふ可しと云ふのであつた。

「此方法によれば、談判も掛引きも入らず、將た又た兩國何れの元首の自由をも毫も拘束することなくして、是迄世界が忍耐して居たる緊張より免れることが出来るかも知れぬのである。」此提議は、「元首の自由を拘束する」と云ふ抗議に適應させる爲めに、獨逸皇帝が主張したる點に注意をしたものであることが察せられるのである、然るに此提議も是迄英國より申出されたる一切の提議と同様の運命に遭ひ之亦た拒絶されたのである、平和擁護に對する獨逸の態度が眞實か如何うかは之れで克く分かるのである。

獨逸と直接談判の道に話を進めて行くことは不可能であることは分かつて居たが、併かもサー・エドワード・グレー氏は、相變らず友誼的態度を以て獨逸に對して其意見を述べたのである、氏は又た曰く、「若し露國（協商國）と奥國（同盟國）とが協約を締結するやうになつたならば余の満足は之に過ぐるものがない。歐洲平和の最善なる希望は、斯る方法を採用する上に存するのである」と。氏は亦た下院に於て（一千九百十一年三月十三日）述べて曰く、

英國は英獨協約を提議す 政治的默契に關して英國政府は下の如く申出でた。

「英獨二國は兩國間に平和と親交とを確保せん事を當然熱望し、英國は茲に獨逸に對して謂れなき戰を構へ若くは之に参加せざるべき事を宣言す、獨逸に對する侵略は英國が現に當事者となれる何れの條約默契若くは聯合の趣旨にも非らず、又た其部分をも爲さず。」

獨逸も亦勿論同一の默契に署名せん事を求められたのであつたが、獨逸は竟に承諾を與へなかつた。

英國の中立を確保せんとする獨逸の企圖 真相を云へば、倫敦駐在の獨逸大使が最後に言明したる如く、獨逸政府の得んと欲する處は、獨逸が他國と戰爭を爲す場合に英國は中立を守るべき其保證であつた。即ち前に引證せる謹嚴且つ權威ある著述家の言を假りて云へば、獨逸の希望は「三國協商は破棄せられ、英國よりは何等干渉を受くべき懸念を免れたる上、獨逸は佛國露國又は白耳義を意の儘に處置したきこと」であつた。

サー・エドワード・グレー氏の淡懷 サー・エドワード・グレー氏は獨逸大使に對して全く打明けて談

つたのである、曰く、「英國の政策中には侵略的計畫はない。佛國は若し自己が獨逸に對して侵略的行動を執るならば英國より何等の援助をも得ぬ事を克く承知して居る。英國は、此等の諸點を包括する協約は何時にても取極める考へであつた。併し今後如何なることが起らうとも中立を維持すべく豫め自ら拘束を受けてしまうことは出来なかつた、獨逸政府が佛國を破砕せんことを欲する日も何時かは必ず來るに違ひない、若し英國が局外に立つべく豫め自ら拘束するならば、佛國が破砕せらるゝを傍觀し聽ては英國も自己が戰はなければならぬ事とならう。獨逸が連りに海陸軍を擴張し且つ近年戰爭を以て佛露兩國を脅迫したことは忘る可からざるものである。」



見るのである。獨逸が佛國に挑める戦は佛國に對して他國が賣付けたる戦争には、英國は之を傍觀して居られぬと宣言したるがため僅に避くる事を得たのである。これがモロッコ問題に就いて獨逸が佛國に高壓手段を用ゐたるに對して英國が口を入れた二回目である。

併し佛獨兩國が終に協定を遂げた時、サー・エドワード・グレー氏は再び獨逸に對して英獨兩國間の關係を改善すべく熱心なる希望を言明し、且つ英國に於ては決して恨みがましき態度なきことを述べたのである。

平和使は如何に迎へられしか 一千九百十二年、獨逸に殊に受けの良いハルデン卿は非公式の全權使として再び獨逸皇帝の許へ差向けられた。然るに此友誼的使節を迎へたるものは、海軍のみならず陸軍も共に軍備大擴張の聲明であつた。海軍の増加のみにても實に一千二百萬磅の支出を計上したのである。

ハルデン卿に對する獨逸政府の要求は豫期したる通り政治上の默契であつた。ハルデン卿は當然の順序として皇帝、宰相並にフォン・テルピッツ提督に向ひ若し獨逸が英國に對する用意として其海軍を擴張し、英國も亦た獨逸に對する當然の用意として其海軍を擴張するとせば、同時に斯く親交を旨として嚴肅なる協約を結ばんと苦心する理由は果して何處にあると訊ねた。之に對して獨逸政府は、「一般の政治的協約が成立したる上でなければ海軍の協定は到底行はれぬ」と云ふ事を主張するのであつた。併かも其口の下から獨逸政府は自己の意に適應する政治的協約が成立したからとて之がために海軍擴張計畫を縮少することは出来ぬ、唯だ一時的に時間を延ばすだけのことであると通告した。併かも此海軍協定とても之を文書に認めるのではなく、「一紙片」すらも無く、口約上の默契に過ぎなかつたのである。

國は露國の同盟國として露國に加擔すべきである。斯くして獨逸二國の非常に發達せる軍事的勢力が露國を屈服したる曉、次には之を佛國に向け來るであらう。佛國も擊破せらるゝに至りて佛國（並に露國）の、中立なる英國に對する好誼は茲に破壞せらるゝのである。愈々最後には、勝ち誇れる獨逸兩國は一舉に英國を攻撃するのである。尙ほ其上、後に、一千九百十四年に發生せる事件に顧みて、之を特筆すべき事であるが、獨逸が英國に提議せる如き默契は、若し獨逸が白耳義を通過して佛蘭西へ侵入するとも、英國は唯徒らに拱手傍觀することゝなるのである。

**獨逸更らに劃策** 英國に對して與ふる處尠く求むる處多き獨逸の斯る提議に對しては、唯だ之を拒絶するの外に途はない。併し英國は一千九百〇九年に於て獨逸と更に圓滿なる關係を希望して特に其意志を表示する處あり就中獨逸が非常に重要視するバグダッド鐵道の如き共通の利害に關する問題に就て協議せんことを欲する旨を表明したのである。

翌一千九百十年、獨逸政府は海軍問題に關し性質極めて曖昧なる交渉を再び開始し、且つ充分意義明白なる政治的默契の提議を再び持出したのである。それより引續き協議は進行したるも多少永引ける其中に於て特に注意すべきは次の點である、即ち一方に於ては獨逸は努めて海軍問題の明確なる協定を避け、而して最後に獨逸議會に於て宰相の口に依り概括的に、「協定は絶対に實行し難きものである」と宣言したのである。

然るに他の一方に於ては、獨逸政府は他日同國が佛國又は露國に謂はれなき攻撃を加へんとするに、他國は兎も角英國だけは獨逸を自由に放任するやう政治的默契を得んとして絶えず英國に迫まつたのである。

**英國の寛大なる態度** 此點に就て獨逸が揮へる手腕の程は既に記述したるアガデール事件に於て之を



てのみ之を有利に扱ふことが出來ると述べた。英國は此提案に、一の僞らざる但書を附けて慇懃に同意したのである。此但書は、英獨間の默契の主意が英國と現在好良なる關係にある列國に對して有害なるものならざるべしと云ふのであつた。(勿論英國は日本を除くの外如何なる國とも條約を結んで居らず、何れも只だ好意ある相互了解の關係であつた。)サー・エドワード・グレー卿曰く「何人も持つ甲斐のある友を作るに舊き友を捨てゝかゝるものはない」と。佛露兩國に有する英國の好意的了解が、獨逸と同様なる好意的了解を作るに妨げとなるべき理由は無いとグレー卿は云つたのである。

然るに獨逸の望む處は、佛露に對する英國の友誼關係を破壊せんとする默契であつたことが忽ち明白になつた。而して獨逸宰相の海軍に關する提案は曖昧なる、内容の貧弱なる、併かも漠然たるものであつた。一千九百十八年迄に建造せらるべき船艦の總數は毫も削減することなく、唯だ一千九百〇九年より一千九百十八年に至る一期間の初頭に於てのみ戰艦建造の數を減じ、後に又初めに控へたる數を補充しやうと云ふだけのことであつた。

英國が承諾する爲に起るべき結果 然れども獨逸は此提議に對して何等か報償を望むべきは毫も疑の無い處である。若し英獨間に默契が成立する曉には左の如き宣言が發表さるべき獨逸の手筈であつた。(一)英國も獨逸も何等侵略の意志を持たぬこと、(二)兩國の何れか一方が攻撃さるゝ場合には攻撃されざる他方は中立を遵守すべきこと即ち之である。第一の條件に就ては英國は勿論異議がない。併し第二の條件に至つては明かに危険である。獨逸は埃匈國と同盟を確かと結んで居る、若し獨逸が露國と戰を希望し其密接の同盟國たる澳匈國を使嗾して露國を攻撃せしめ、さて獨逸は其同盟國の急に赴かねばならぬといふ口實の下に亦た露國を攻撃するとせば、佛



通商上の權利を得たのである。此際若し英國が、歐洲の平和を維持すべき希望により「佛蘭西に對して謂れ無き攻撃を加ふる者あらば英國に於ける一般の意向は佛國を助けずんば止まざるべき」旨を獨逸に通告するを以て其義務なりと感ぜざりしならば、恐く獨帝は此際佛國に對して宣戰をなしたであらう。

獨逸再び戰爭を起さんとす 其後に至り、獨逸は兼て望めるアガチール港には一人の自國商人すら在らざるに芝居らしくも一砲艦を派遣し、更に再びモロッコに足掛りを得んと劃策したのである。而して尙ほも戰爭を脅迫したる後、獨逸は遂に佛蘭西領コンゴの一部にして護謨を豊かに産し且つ獨逸の他の亞弗利加領土との關係上特に獨逸に取りて貴重なるものを譲り受けたのである。

猶も獨逸の脅迫 一千九百〇七年英國は、其英佛との協定に引續いて露國との間に蟠まり居たる一切の異議を調定した。其翌年獨逸は、奥匈國が伯林條約に違反してボスニヤ及びヘルツエゴヴィナを併合せるために巴爾幹の政局に紛擾を來せるに對して、若し露國が何等かの行動に出づるならば、獨逸は同國に對し戰爭をも辭せずと威嚇して憚らなかつた。

三國協商より英國を引離さんとせる獨逸の計略 其翌一千九百〇九年、曩にフォン・ビューロ公の後を襲うて獨逸の宰相の職に就けるフォン・ベートマン・ホルツエヒ卿は自ら主唱して英國と協議を開いた、これは一千九百十四年に起れる事件に取りては非常に重要な意義のあるものであつた。宰相は英國に對して通告して、獨逸は海軍問題協定の爲に提議を爲すべく準備を整へて居る、併し此問題に關する討議は二國の中其一方が他方に對し互に反抗的又は侵略的企圖を有せずといふ信念を基礎とせる一般的默契の一部分と爲すに於

## 第十六章 英國が戰爭を二回防遏したる顛末

獨逸竟に其野心のある處を曝露す

モロッコに於ける獨逸の侵略 是より此期間に於ける獨英兩國の外交狀態に就て述べやう。英國が獨逸にヘリゴランド島を讓渡したる次第は既に述べた。英國は歐洲の平和を愈々安固ならしめんが爲めに一千九百〇四年以後數年間に從來佛國との間に懸案となれる一切の異議を斷然解決した。就中、過去三百年間モロッコに利害關係を有せる英國は佛國の爲めにモロッコに於て同國が自由の行動を執る事を承認した。地中海沿岸の二強國なる西班牙及び伊太利も亦同一の態度に出でた。フォン・ビュロー公は獨逸がモロッコに毫も利害を有して居らぬことと言明した。實際同地に於ける獨逸商人の事業は、之を英佛兩國の商業に比して甚だ微々たるものである。

然るに間もなく、旅順陥落と奉天會戰とは佛國の同盟國たる露國の薄弱なることを世に示した、獨逸は機逸す可からずと爲し突如としてモロッコに從來よりは更に大なる興味を持つに至つた。獨帝は二回の挑戰的演説を爲し、後自らモロッコに赴きモロッコの領土保全の覇者なりと名乗りを擧げたのである。

英國は戰爭を防遏す 此時獨帝は佛國外相が獨逸に都合善からざる殖民政策を持するの故を以て其辭職を要求し事態漸く不穩になつた。佛蘭西には當時開戰の準備なく、且對馬沖の海戰は、終に露國が其同盟國を救ひ得らるべき望みを斷つた、佛國は餘儀なく要求を承諾した、佛國外相は辭職し獨逸はモロッコに於いて同等の

りて英國の輿論は唯だ驚愕の外はないのであつた。

### 英國第五回の提議

一千九百八年に於て英國皇帝は再び獨逸を訪問し協議が復た開かるゝ事となつた。然るに其際獨帝は外國政府と海軍々備の事を議するは余が忍びざる處であると昂然として言ひ切つた。獨帝は先づ戦はん哉と公言したのである。茲に於て曩に述べたる如く其製艦數を著しく縮少したる英國も、自家防衛のため一千九百十年度の海軍豫算を増加することに立到つた。併し此豫算を公表するに當り、英國政府は獨逸との間に誤解を起さしめず、將た又た其猜疑を和ぐる爲に、伯林及び倫敦駐在の兩國大使館附海軍武官をして絶へず實視せしむべく提議した。此提議も亦獨逸の拒絕する處となつたのである。

製艦を相互に制限し以て兩國間の衝突を尠からしめんとしたる英國の誠意ある計畫が、獨逸の斷乎たる拒絕に逢へる次第は以上を以て一先づ擱筆することとする。



議は此英國の提案に賛成を與へた。然るに獨逸の回答は其翌年に於て殆ど當時の海軍力を倍加すべき計畫を具備せる新海軍令を採用すると云ふことであつた。一千九百〇六年には、獨逸は此計畫に大型巡洋艦六隻を増加したのである。

### 英國第二回の提議

之にも拘はらず露國皇帝は、第二回國際會議を召集中なりし故に、英國は同年に於て好模範を示さんと決心した。乃ち其前年既に議會に附議したる製艦計畫を變更して、戰闘艦に於て二割五歩、潛航艇に於て二割三步及び驅逐艇に於て六割の縮少を行つた。獨逸皇帝は伯林駐在の英國大使に向ひ、國際會議に若し軍備縮少の議が提出せらるゝならば、皇帝は代表者を派遣せざるべしとの旨を告げた。茲に於てエドワード皇帝とハルデン卿とは相次で獨逸に赴き、軍備制限問題に就き英國と歩調を共にすべく獨逸皇帝を動かさんとして切りに努めたのであるが竟に其効が無かつたのである。

### 英國第二回及第四回の提議

其翌年英國の首相は尙ほ露帝主催の國際會議の趣旨により、若し他國の政府が同意するに於ては英國は其海軍豫算を猶一層縮少すべきことを宣言した。併かも獨逸は之に對して何等顧る處無く、露帝の第二回國際會議は何の獲る所無くして終つたのである。併も注意すべきことは當時第二回國際會議の席上にて、英國は其海軍豫算を豫め何れの國なりとも、互に示し合ふやうにすれば追つては國際間の海軍費縮少の希望をも達するに至るべしとて、自から進んで之を申し出せる程であつた。

一千九百〇七年に獨逸皇帝は答禮としてエドワード皇帝を訪ふ事となつた。其時獨帝は英國に對して親愛の情を示し盛なる歡迎を受けた、然るに其翌年の獨逸の海軍計畫は最大型軍艦四隻を急造するために變更さるゝに至

「獨逸の境界は大部分陸上の境界である。英國の境界は海上である。英帝國は、セーレー氏の言葉を借りて云へば、街衢を海上に有する世界大のヴェニス」である。今食物供給の點より觀れば、獨逸は大部分自給である、大陸上の給與に俟つのである。若し夫れ英國に至つては、一朝海上に於ける優越權を失は、忽ち饑餓に迫る恐れがある。

「さればサー、エドワート、ド、グレー卿が一九〇九年議會に於て述べたる如く、獨逸海軍の獨逸に於けると英海軍の英國に於けるとは、其重要の程度に於て到底比較になるべき沙汰ではない。我海軍の我に於けるは、獨逸の陸軍の獨逸に於ける如きものである。有力なる海軍を有する事は我に於ける程には獨逸に取りて必らずしも死活問題ではない」と。

「獨逸は已に世界に於て遙に優れたる最強陸軍國である。されば獨逸の海軍に對する野心のために起るべき他國の當然なる憂慮を若し諒察せば、獨逸の執るべき途は其企圖を放擲して既に世界の一等海軍國なる英國が假りに獨逸の有する陸軍に比すべき程大なる常備軍の建設に着手したらんには、歐洲諸國に如何なる感想を抱かしむるかを其心に問ふべきである」と。

更に考ふべき事は、獨逸は其貿易を保護する爲に強大なる海軍を必要とするとして議會及び言論界に於て連りに論じて居る。併かも英國と獨逸との貿易を比較すれば、二十一に對する僅に五の割合に過ぎぬのである。

英國の獨逸に對する第一回の提議　一千八百九十九年英國は、若し他の歐洲列國が同一の方針に出るならば其製艦計畫を縮少すべく提議したのである。當時軍備節減の目的を以て露國皇帝の召集されたる國際會

逸の爲に非常なる價值あるものとなつて、獨逸艦隊は水雷を布設し、其の背後に潜んで危難を避けてゐるのである。

併し之は英國が英獨兩國間の厚誼に完全なる基礎を置かんとして常に計畫したる中の一端に過ぎぬのである。

### 英國に對して挑みたる海軍擴張

開戦前に英國人が獨逸に對して其心に懸念する處もありたる獨逸近世政策の傾向は獨逸商業の發達に由つて表はれたるものでもなく、又た「得意の境遇」と稱はれたる世界に於ける偉大なる地位を希望するに依つて來るものでもないことは今更言ふに及ばぬ。斯る危惧の由て來る處は實に獨逸海軍の間斷なき發達であつた。

何故然るかは容易に之を理解する事が出来る。一千九百年の獨逸海軍令に依て第一回の獨逸海軍の大擴張が行はれたる時、世界は此新たに作らるべき艦隊は若し英國に對して使用するものにあらざるとすれば、果して誰に對して之を用ひんとするかと當然不審したのである。此不審は實に獨逸議會に於てすら持出された。而して之に對する當局者の説明は獨逸は「世界最大の海軍國」すらも尙且勝利の確信を以て我れに挑戦し能はざる程に、海上の雄者たらざるべからずといふのであつた。然も一方英國は從來獨逸に對して挑戦しやうなどは毫も思ひも寄らぬ事は極めて明白である。

### 然らば擴張の理由は奈何

英國著述家中の最も眞摯なるもの、一人（ヘルメルガゼット及びデーリー、ニュー

部書及び其他數種の傳記の著者たるサー、エドワード、クック氏）は獨逸海軍の偉大にして且つ不斷の擴張に對し輿論の認むる處は英國に對する挑戦で

あると指摘して居る。



## 第十五章

英國が獨逸と善良なる關係を持続せんかために爲せる努力及び其努力が間斷なく妨害されたる顛末

### 海軍協商に係はる危怪なる噂

獨逸の爲めにせめてもの辨明　獨逸に取り苟くも有利なるべき議論は何に依らず充分に之を取糾さずして本書を完結せん事は予が最も心苦しとする處である。疑ひもなく獨逸の爲に辯すべき點は只だ是である。曰く、「獨逸は白耳義の中立を破らぬと云ふ條約、又た外交當局者の森嚴なる誓約を破棄して慨歎すべき行動を爲したことは事實である。更に又た獨逸が白耳義に於て言語同斷の振舞をしたことも、毫も疑ひなき明白の事柄である。さり乍ら若し獨逸が佛露英に對する戦争は、他から挑まれたものであるといふ事を、兎も角も言ひ開くことが出来たならば、幾分か申譯の立つ事情があるかも知れないと云ふことである。

悲しい哉茲に至れば獨逸のために不利なる中にも最惡の點に今は來つたのである。曰く、獨逸が此戦争を起したのである。」

何故英國はヘリゴランド島を讓與したるか　過去約三十年間の歐洲外交史は、現戦争の起る數週間の外交史と同様英國、佛國及び露國が獨逸に對して讓歩をなせる長き物語である。

三十世紀の初にあたり、英國は只管獨逸と信交を得んとして亞弗利加に於ける境界問題調停のために、獨逸にヘリゴランド島といふ貴重なる贈物をした。英國の諸新聞は此割讓を烈しく批難したのである。今や該島は獨

第十四章 白耳義侵入の動機に就ての虚偽

更にエシラスの詩集より左の句を引用する。

「偉大なることも、正義を無視する時は、破滅の防禦とはならぬ」。

人の問ふ所に非ず、現下の問題はメロスが生死孰れかを撰ぶやといふにあるのみ。」メロス人は依然として中立たるべきことを主張した。之は言ふ迄もなく拒絶されたのである。兎も角もメロスは服従を欲しなかつた。メロスはアゼンスが兵士、軍艦及軍事的熟練に於て一層優勢なるを知つて居る。されど神は尙は無辜のものを助け給はん（「復讐の危険は吾人に何等の不安を起さしめず、吾人はメロスに均しく全く敬神の念に富む」と使節は云ふ）名譽と血族關係とにありて吾人と結合せるラセデモス人は干涉の義務あるものである。（「吾人は其然らせざるを信ず」）何れにせよメロスは甘じて奴隸たらんよりは戦ひを欲し、又た希望を持つて居た。使節曰く、「之れ頗る遺憾とすべき了見違ひである。」斯くして戦争の慘禍を見るに至つた、アゼンスは見當り次第メロス人を殺戮し、婦人子供は悉く奴隸と爲した。其後アゼンス人は五百人の移民を送り、メロスを我が物となした。其冬アゼンス人は一大艦隊を派遣してシシリを征服せんとした。之れ所謂シシリ遠征にして之がためにアゼンスは遂に滅亡に歸したのである。」

アゼンスが犯せる罪逆は遂に詩人ユーリピデスを生みたるものかと人は問はん、メロス事件の翌年の春ユーリピデスは「トロイの女」を草して堂々たる痛罵を加へて居る。

愚なるかな、市街を蹂躪するものよ、

寺院を破壊し、古の死者を葬る汚れなき

聖殿なる墳墓を荒廢するものよ、

已れも亦た直ちに死せんのみ。



ア及バビロンの諸王によりて採用せられたる移民政策を大規模に實行しなければならぬ。何故に白耳義のワルン族を佛國、アルベリア、モロツコ、ブラジルに放逐し獨逸人を以て其國を占領せざるか。」

聯合軍側が成功せるを以て、獨逸宰相は近來合併に關する或る計畫を否認したやうである。又獨逸に於ける重なる人々の中には「合併狂」に反對して抗議したと云ふことである。されど是等別個の「思想の指導者」すらも、「東部國境の延長と西部に於ける實質的保證」とは之を主張するものである。

歴史上の類例 軍世上勢力ある人種が、小國に對する關係に就て獨逸人が其心に抱く如き觀念を有することとは世界の歴史上決して珍らしい事ではない。白耳義に對する獨逸の態度及行動の全部は、不思議にも往昔希臘が、同國を滅亡に導きたるメロスに對する態度及び行動に似たるものがあることは、既に之を指摘せる人もある通りである。茲にスシデデスの短かき、併かも嚴めしき物語中にある話を掲げる。

「アゼンスの使節等は冷靜にして齊然たる語調にてメロス元老院に説明するに、メロスが希臘帝國に服従すべきことは使節の目的に適合する旨を以てした。使節は聰明なる人々であるゆゑ、メロスがアゼンスに對して惡事を行へりとか、若くはアンゼンスがメロスに對して正當の要求を有せりと主張するものではない。されどアゼンスは或島嶼が獨立の儘に在ることを欲しないのである。之れは他に對して惡しき例である、アゼンスの勢力は實際天下敵なしである。之に服従するか又破壊されるか、メロスの自由である。メロスは出來得るだけ最良の答を爲して曰く、權利に關する凡ての法律を無視することはアンゼンスに取りて充分安全なりや。帝國は不滅のものに非ず、而して斯の如き壓制に對する人類の復讐心は果して如何」と。アンゼンスの使節は更に答へて曰く、「そは吾

は一人として微笑を以て之を迎ふるものがなかつた。

「吾人は地の鹽である。神は吾人に世界を文化に導くことを委ねた。」

此事件はシヨネレル教授の言によりて一層明瞭にせられた。曰く「吾は單に人間では無い、獨逸人で有るが故に人間を超越するものである」と。

## 白耳義の將來に關する獨逸人の觀念

人々の中には、斯くの如き考を有するものは單に皇帝、軍隊及喧嘩數寄の學者のみなりと信するものあらう。されど事實は全く反對である。昨年二通の請願書若くは宣言書が獨逸宰相に提出されたのである。第一は農業者組合、獨逸農民同盟、基督教農民同盟、獨逸中央製造業者組合、獨逸製造業者同盟及獨逸帝國中級者聯合會等多數の會員を有せる六大組合より提出せられ、他の書類は一萬三千人の署名せるものにして「獨逸思想の指導者」より出でたるもので有ると云ふ、先づ所謂「獨逸思想の指導者」なるものゝ言に曰く、

「白耳義に就て吾人は政治上、軍事上及經濟上確實に之を握掌しなければならぬ。白耳義は吾人に對して勢力の非常なる増加を意味するものである。吾人は住民が何等政治的の勢力を許されざる點に殊に重きを置く。」

## 新成吉汗

農業者、工業家及中級者の宣言も亦同様に「白耳義は合併されなければならぬ」と斷定して居る。

同宣言は白耳義及佛國北部に於て鐵鑛の四千萬噸以上を産出する事實に就て注意を促して居る。大小とも凡ての財産を包括する經濟力の全源泉は獨逸人の手に移らなければならぬ。「獨逸雜誌は更に之を布衍して曰く、

「軍隊の集團的運動の場合に於ては、吾人は人民の集團的運動のために畏縮してはならぬ。獨逸皇帝はアツシリ

する場合である。小國に關する形勢は吾人に對して實に重大なる問題である。吾人の目的は最初より大なる優勢を以て攻勢を取らなければならぬ。此目的の爲に大軍を集中し、之れに次ぐに優勢なる國民軍を編成することが必要である。斯くして小國を吾人に服従せしむるか、然らざれば少くとも無能力たらしめ、若し抵抗をなす場合には之を粉碎すべきである。短期日の制限を附せる最後通牒を發し續いて直に侵入を爲せば之にて充分に正當なる理由が立つのである。

以上は獨逸が白耳義の場合に正確に適用した處である。

「潔められたる侵入軍 千九百十二年五月六日伯林よりの來電によれば、フォン、モルトケ將軍は左の如く述べたりと傳へられて居る。

「吾人は侵略者の責任に關する凡ての陳腐説を一方に片附けなければならぬ。戰爭の必要が生じたる場合には凡ての機會をして吾人に有利なる如く之を實行することが肝要である」と。

獨逸軍が白耳義に侵入せる當時の精神に關し、ビステル、フォン、ストラング少佐は其宣言に於て何と云ひたるか。

「而して今汝等不遜なる小國民よ、汝は愚にも我軍を妨げんとす、汝等に對してこそ我軍は、若し我が大事業を汝等が妨げざる限り、平和と保護とを約したれ、而して今や又汝等は吾敵に加擔す。之恰も汝等は聖所を奉戴する僧侶を攻撃せんとせるが如きものなり。我軍は我宿縁の高大なるに依て潔められたるものなり」と。

少佐は只獨逸皇帝の意に雷同せんとするものである。一千九百〇五年に於て獨逸帝が左の如く述べし時、獨逸人



て如何と問ふ人もあつたかも知らない」と。

今有名なる獨逸の一雜誌より一例として左に拔萃する議論の如きは、屢々獨逸人の演説及著書等に於て散見する處である。

「高尚なる獨逸主義は新領土を征服しなければならぬ。アントワープはハンブルヒ及ブレーメンに組し、リエージュはヘッセル伯林及スアーベの兵器廠に組し、コケリールはクルツプと伍し、白耳義及獨逸の鐵、石炭及織物は何れも同一管理に歸し、カレーよりムーズ要塞の彼岸に當れるアントワープ、フランダース、リムブルグ及ブラバンは悉く普魯西の領域である。」

高官の間に於ける承認　　バヅアリアの攝政王の如きも亦其演説に於て獨逸の眞意を洩らして、萊因河口の主權を得るは獨逸に必要なが故に、白耳義及和蘭は之を獨逸に合併せざるべからずと言明して居る。獨逸外相フォン、ヤゴ氏さへも戦争開始前に於て、小國は「大國の軌道中に消失若くは吸引せらる」べき運命を有して居るものであるとまで言明して、白耳義の將來に就て佛國の意向を探ぐらんと試みたのである。同氏は此言明によりて生じたる印象を見るや、直ちに是は單に自己の私見を發表せるに過ぎぬと云つたのである。

### 秘密書類の發覺

白耳義を占領する緊急手段に就ては、獨逸陸軍増加に關する一千九百十三年三月十九日附の「我が國家政策の目的及義務」と題する覺書にして、佛國政府の手に入れるものを一讀すべきである。

「今回の歐洲戦争に於ては、小國は吾人に従ふべく之を強制するか若くは之を征服することが必要である。或場合に於ては小國の軍隊及要害地は急速に征服若くは中立せしめられなければならぬ。此は多分白耳義及和蘭に對

心せること及び、之が一度獨逸の有に歸せば英國は之を獨逸より略取することは容易ならずと信じたるがためである。獨逸が戦争を開始するや襲撃行動の敏活と、優勢兵力及び装具並に軍需品の豊富等よりして、一二日の内に白耳義を陥れ、數週間にして巴里を突かんこと易々たるべしと確信せることは常に記憶せらるべき所である。佛國政府の手に入れる千九百十三年三月十九日附の陸軍秘密覺書中には、「一舉にして」敵を全滅せしめ得べしとの獨逸の確信を言ひ現はして居る。

白耳義に對する批難更に明瞭となる 吾人の知る如く、獨逸は白耳義に對して同國が其中立を嚴正に維持せざりしといふ無根の論辯をなしたのである。是等の批難は輿論の上に非常の印象を與ふるものなるべしと豫期せしめたのである。されど差したることなくして止んだ。實際一千九百十四年度の公表外交文書を精讀したる公平なる人士は必ずや獨逸の政治家及び其政論家が獨逸の白耳義に對する批難を重大視して居たとは信ずることが出來ぬのである。白耳義が其中立に違背したるを理由として同國を獨逸に併合せんとする處置を世界に證明せんことの實に不可能なるは直ちに之を悟るのである。それ故に別の方法を取つたのである。

白耳義の義務に對する獨逸の觀念 獨逸人は過去に於て屢々云へるが如く、白耳義が獨逸に聯合するは其の義務なりと云はんとして居る。尙ほ之に加ふるに白耳義が果して其義務を實行するを見届けるは、獨逸の一大義務なりと今や云はんとして居るのである。

獨逸帝國議會の有名なる一議員ナウマン博士は書して曰く、「併かも若し白耳義が誠實なる中立的態度を維持すべき考へであつたならば、世界の歴史上に新紀元を劃すべき改造の外に超然たる彼の小國の權利の及ぶ處は果し

## 第十四章 白耳義侵入の動機に就ての虚偽

### 獨逸の眞意曝露す

難攻不落と稱する佛國要塞 獨逸に對して他の憎むべき事實を尙ほ茲に擧げる。それは獨逸が白耳義に侵入して條約及び人道を無視せる暴行を犯したるのみならず、白耳義を経て佛國を攻撃せんとするの動機に就て偽つたことである。第四章に述べたる如く獨逸は佛國に對して軍事上の便宜を得んが爲に、白耳義を経て佛國を攻撃したと云つて居る。併し尙ほ他に理由が存在して居たのである。

東京駐在白耳義公使は、リエージュ及びナムールの白耳義要塞を破壊したる巨大なる臼砲は、佛獨國境に於ける佛國の要塞をも同様に破壊することが出来たのであると熱心に指摘した。獨軍が遂に白耳義を経て佛國に到りモープージュの佛國要塞に對して塙軍の臼砲を向けた處が、白耳義の要塞と同様に佛國要塞は忽ちにして粉碎されたことは皆記憶する處である。實に佛國の要塞は一として此砲撃に對抗することが出来なかつた。ヴェルダンが二百日間の防禦を維持し得たのは要塞のためではなく、主として其新に築設されたる土工に依るものであるといふことである。

何故に獨逸は好んで英國と戰を賭したるか 此事に關しては他に理由がある。獨逸は若し白耳義へ侵入せば、英國が戰爭に加はるべき傾向が充分あつたことを熟知して居たのである。何故に獨逸は甘んじて英國をも敵とする一大危険を冒さんとするか、蓋し之に對する唯一の説明は獨逸が、白耳義の占領を確實にすべく決



トが又々捕虜に與へられるといふことである。若し是等の警告が依然として無視せらるゝならば、此非獨逸的行爲を中止せしむる爲めに見せしめの所罰を加ふる手段を取らなければならぬ。」

吾人が斯くして「非獨逸的行爲」なるもの知り得たと同時に、玆に初めて吾人はフォン、ビツシングの所謂眞正なる獨逸的行爲が如何なるものなるやに就て、幾分悟ることを得たのである。

か出来るかと考へたが爲めである。フランダース並に佛國方面に於ける聯合軍の最近成功の報導が白耳義に達して民心を著しく沸騰した、それ故に有名なる一英國婦人を苛酷に扱ひ、且つ之を死刑に處する如きは將軍の意見には好き見せしめと考へたのである。吾人はフォン、ビツシング將軍が如何なる性格の人なるやを記憶しなければならぬ。將軍は千九百十四年八月廿九日第七軍團の爲に一の宣言を發した人である。該宣言中には左の文句が含まれて居る。

「是等の恥べき行爲を抑制するために、人の生命を容赦するは不可能のことにして、又獨立家屋も繁榮なる村落も、將た又た全都市をも之を全滅せしむることは元より遺憾の至りなれども、併し之がために取り違へたる感情主義を起す如き事があつてはならぬ。吾人の目には我れに於て破壊し得べき何物も其價值に於ては吾が勇敢なる軍隊の兵士の生命に劣るのである。之れ自ら明白なることにして又實に之を言ふ必要は當然ないのである。誰にても此際殘忍を口にするものは皆犯則である、嚴肅に其任務を實行することは之れ高等教育の命令に服従する所以である。而して此事に關しては敵國の人民は只だ吾軍隊より教訓を受けるのみである。」

**獨逸的行爲及非獨逸的行爲** 六箇月を経たる後、同將軍は獨逸に於ける俘虜收容所長として更に他の宣言を發して曰く、

「日々命令に於て最近予は公衆が捕虜に對して僞れる、若くは誤れる同情を表すべからざることを求めた、諸士も亦一層獨逸人の良心を發揮すべきである。」

「予は重ねて此訓戒を繰返すべきか、恐くは然らん。予の接手せる報告によれば、各種の珍味、殊にチヨコレー

軍の爲に急遽歸國した。米國公使館は一萬人以上の婦人及小兒に食物及金錢を給與したる後、無事に之を獨逸に歸還せしめたのである。公使館の云ふ所によれば、キャヴェル嬢の生命に對する其哀願は、若し獨逸官憲に於て謝意あるならば、獨逸避難民に盡せる米國公使館の厚意に酬ゆべきものとして申込みたる「唯一の要求」で有つた。併かも獨逸人が米國人より受けたる便宜は單に是等の盡力のみではない。困窮せる白耳義人に食物を供する爲に米國人が多額の義捐を爲したことは、獨逸人の肩から非常の負擔を取り去つたのである。米國公使の病氣のために西班牙公使は個人として又た公式に於て、キャヴェル嬢の救護に加勢したのである。之に對するフォン、ビツシグ男の回答は批評の限りでない。男爵は此事件に關しては公使の辯疏、其他如何なる提議をも拒絶したのである。

**刑の執行** キャヴェル嬢は審問の翌早朝二時、即ち大罪の場合に於ける文明國の慣例に反し、宣告後九時、間以内に於て、逸早く死刑の執行を受けたのである。

米國公使館は最終の要求として私的の埋葬を行ふ爲め、監獄より屍體の引取方を願出でたるも、之また管なく拒絶されたことは徹頭徹尾殘忍の處置である。

死刑執行前にキャヴェル嬢に面會を許されたる僧侶の證言によれば、女史は何等の恐怖も又た畏縮もなく、且つ「誰をも恨まず英雄の如く從容として死に就いた」と云ふことである。

**フォン、ビツシグの性格** フォン、ビツシグ將軍がキャヴェル嬢の處置に苛酷を極めたるに對し、説明を求められる讀者があるとすれば、蓋し同將軍は斯る行爲に依つて獨軍の白耳義占領を鞏固ならしむること



尙ほ米國公使館に對して「事件の發展に就ては詳細に報告すべし」との、確實なる保證が與へられた。其日の夕刻六時三十分「宣告は尙ほ未だ申渡されぬ」といふ通知が再びあつた。併し之れは單に繼續せる秘密の一部分に過ぎないものである。公使が其時刻或私の出所より聞知せし處には、宣告は既に五時に於て申渡され、刑の執行は同夜執行さるゝ筈になつて居たと云ふ。

慈悲に訴ふ　米國公使館書記官は時を移さずフォン、デルランケン男の許に赴き、特別の恩恵として赦免を乞ふた。同書記官は公使より左の感動すべき書簡を携帶したのである。

「予は予の要求を直接貴下に呈することを甚だ不快に感ずるものである、されど予は茲に重ねて貴下の寛仁大度に訴ふ、此不幸なるものに味方して、死より救へ、女史に憐みあらんことを冀ふ。」

此通牒に伴ふにキャヴェル嬢の献身的事業と又た審問の際、女史は各種の報告を提出し、斯くして有罪を申渡されたる其「賞讃すべき卒直」に對して、女史の爲に公式の哀訴を以てした。フォン、デルランケン男は之に對して、フォン、ビツシング男が「凡ての歎願を寛大に受け入るべき自由を有する」旨を答へた。

フォン、ビツシング男に對しても亦病床に在る米國公使より同様の哀願書を送くり書記官が之を持參したのである。

### 米國公使館に對する輕侮

キャヴェル嬢に對する米國公使館の辯疏に就き、同公使館は先きに戦争開始の際、白耳義在留の獨逸人のために盡したる厚意を今茲に云ふ必要無きものに對しても獨逸官憲は米國公使館の今回の哀願には承諾することならんとて念の爲め陳述する處があつたのである。開戦の當時幾千の獨逸人は從

べきである。

裁判官より、避難者を庇護せし理由に就て質問せられたる時、女史は若し然かせざる時は獨軍に依りて射殺せらるべしと信じたる旨を答へた。女史は斯く信じたるによりて其の行爲は之を正當と認むることを得るのである之より先き數ヶ月以前(八月二十五日ナムールに於て)フォン、ビメーロー將軍は左の如き宣言を發表せるに非らざるか。

「四時前に英佛兵は全部捕虜として引渡さるゝ筈である。四時に於て各家屋は嚴重なる検査を行ふ、兵士の發見せられたるものは悉く之を銃殺する。」

### 庇護なき軍法會議

キャヅエル嬢の罪科は何れにしても實際の戰鬪區域内に於て犯されたるものでなく又た審問も戰鬪區域内にて行はれなかつたことを記憶しなければならぬ。

ブルツセル市は戰線から數哩距れて居る、故に女史を軍法會議に附することは國際法上何等の理由をも有せざることは明瞭である。米國南北戰爭に於て同様なる軍法委員は、謀叛被告人の審問をインデアナポリスに於て開始せんことを求めた。併し合衆國高等法院は嚴重に此軍事上專横の處置を非認したのである。

### 宣告を秘密に附せんとする計畫

十月十一日米國公使は始めて該審問の終決せることを聞き、書簡を以て總督(フォン、デルランケン男爵)及び軍政長官(フォン、ビッシング男爵)の「寛大と仁慈」に訴へたのである。審問終決の通知に接せる軍政府政務部長は米國公使に對し、「審問は終決せるも未だ宣告の申渡はなく、多分一兩日間の遅延あるべし」と告げたのである。

此辯護士が、キヤヴエル嬢に對して科せらるべき罪狀に就て、米國公使館に通知すべき約束を守らざりしことは重大視すべきである。

同辯護士が、公使館に對して、審問の際館員を派遣する事は、裁判官が之を嫌忌するの故を以て被告に一大偏見を懷かしめるならんとの理由の下に、之に反對せることは是又輕々に看過すべからざることである。

又審問の翌日迄米國公使館はその事實を知らず、而も審問後に於て局外者より之を聞知せる如きは、辯護士が其職務に對する觀念に於て、是亦た意味ありげのことである。實際米國公使館は今日に至るまで獨逸法廷の此辯護士より何等の通知にも接して居ないのである。

### キヤヴエル嬢の罪科

キヤヴエル嬢が起訴されたる罪科にして、女史も明白に其所爲を承認せる所にあれば、女史は其直接看護せる佛白軍の數名の負傷兵をして獨逸に捕虜として送らるゝ事なく、之を和蘭に遁れしめたりと云ふことであつた。

されど獨逸陸軍々法第九十條に「兵士を敵軍に嚮導するものは死刑に處するを得べしと規定して有る。例へば若し敵兵が農家に逃げ込みたる場合に於て、各方面に達する道路に通曉せる農夫が、該兵士を敵軍に嚮導歸還せしめたりとせんか、其農夫は銃殺に處せらるべき罪を犯したるものである。されどキヤヴエル嬢が其救護せる避難者を援助して和蘭へ歸還する「嚮導」を爲したりと見做さるゝには、此法律を牽強して解釋するより外は無いことは明らかである。加ふるに女史が獨逸負傷兵に對する仁愛的事業、其公共心又た毫も私慾の念なきこと、況んや其女性的なること等に鑑みて、女史の行爲に對しては牽強的よりも、寧ろ温和なる見解を下すを以て當然とす



へた。「吾人は負傷兵を救護し之を回復せしむる爲に全力を盡すべき覺悟である。其看守たらんとするが如きことは斷じて出來ない」と。

又た或る場合に於て、數人の家を喪へる婦人及子供の爲に、獨逸の一旅團長に哀訴せる時、旅團長は女史に答ふるに、ニイチエよりの拔萃を以てして曰く、

「感情を浪費するは憐むべきことである、道德上の寄生動物は健康に有害である」と。女史は夙に侵入軍の殘忍頑強なる意志を感じて居たが、而も之に屈することなく三箇處の病院事業を管理し一週に六回の看護に關する講演を爲して居たのである。」

### 事件を秘密に附せんご努力す

キャヅエル嬢に對する處置を秘密に附せんが爲に特に苦心したるは著しき事實である。女史が獄中に監禁せられてより、一ヶ月を経たる後漸く第二回の審問が開始されたのであるが、其時白耳義在留英國國民の利益保護に任せる米國公使館は初めて女史の逮捕を知つたのであつた。凡て此期間獨逸官憲は秘密主義によりて審問を遅延せしめたのである。

該事件が遂に米國公使の知る所となるや、公使は其噂の果して眞實なるや否やに就き、獨逸知事に質問書を發した。尙も沈黙の陰謀は依然繼續せられ、公使は二週間何等の回答にも接しなかつたのである。

聽て公使の得たる回答にはキャベエル嬢の爲に辨護士を附せんとせる公使の申請が拒絶されて居た。

獨逸官憲の指揮の下に附せられたる辨護士(白耳義に歸化せる獨逸人)すらキャヅエル嬢の審問前に女史と會見することを許されなかつたのである。

キヤヴエル嬢のブルツセルへ行きしこと エヂス、キヤヴエル嬢は陸軍看護事業の開祖なるフロレンス、ナイチンゲールが畢生の事業より奮激したる現代多數の女子の一人である。女史はブルツセルに於て暫く學校生活を送りたる事實よりして白耳義に縁故を生じ、一千九百六年ブルツセル市の看護婦學校長と成つたのである。

歐洲戰爭突發の際、キヤヴエル嬢は英國に於て其母と共に暮して居た、義務に對する慷慨の情に激勵せられ女史は故郷に於ける安固なる境遇を捨て、代るにブルツセルに於ける危險の地點を以てした。女史曰く、  
「妾の任務は白耳義に在り」と。

獨逸の將軍等と最初の邂逅 女史の死狀に關する予の記述の公平なることに就て疑ひなからしめんが爲に、予は主として著名なる米國の一法律家によりて「紐育タイムス」に掲載されたる事實に基きて立論することにした。

「獨軍がブルツセル市に到着せる際、女史はフォン、ルトウ井ツツ知事を訪問し、如何なる國旗の下に戦闘せしを問はず、負傷兵を救護する爲に部下の看護婦を提供した、女史及其部下の致したる勤務は多數の負傷若くは瀕死の状態にある獨兵をして、女史の寛大なる好意を感銘せしめたのである。

「而も之等慈善の勤務に従事早々、女史は最高なる仁愛的精神よりして侵入軍に對抗するの止むなきに至つた。フォン、ルトウ井ツツ知事は女史に對して、部下の看護婦等が佛白軍の負傷兵を救護の際、患者に對して看守として働くことを正式に取極めるやうに要求した。されどキヤヴエル嬢は此不當なる要求に對して只だ次の如く答

を訴へ、且つ豫戒的逮捕及長期監禁の不當なるを述べ、尙ほブルツセル市の法廷が海牙條約の規定に背き、兵舎に使用せられたることを憤慨して居る。且曰く、

「吾人は戒嚴令の下に生存しつゝありと云ふを得べきか、而も我軍隊は遠距離に在りて吾人は最早軍事行動の地帯内に在らず、茲にブルツセル市に於ては獨逸軍隊を脅迫せんとする何物もなく、且つ市民は極めて平穩である。」此抗議は効果なかりしを以て、テオドル氏は全白耳義國辯護士協會の代表者と共に獨逸官憲の前に出頭しただ嘗つて獨逸帝國內に編入せられざりし人民を取扱ふに不正を以てしたることに對し重ねて之を批難して曰く、

「吾人は未だ併合せられず、吾人は未だ征服せられず、併も我軍隊は戦闘しつゝある、我軍旗は佛英露の軍旗と相並んで翻へつて居る。吾國は存在す單に不幸に遭遇せるのみである」と。

此第二回の抗議の後程なく米國記者の報する所によれば、テオドル氏は逮捕の上獨逸に放逐せられたのである。

「而して若し今も尙ほ生存するものとすれば、蓋しダントン、マーラー、ロベスピヤール等革命軍の名士も將さに憤起すべき極めて惡意に充ちたる探偵、軍法會議及び秘密死刑等の制度に苦しめらるゝ人民を辨護したる廉を以て獄中に呻吟しつゝある筈である。」

一千九百十五年八月五日エヂス、キャヴエル嬢が逮捕せられたる時、白耳義の状態は實に斯かる有様であつた

#### 四、其の適例。キャヴエル嬢の慘殺

「エヂス、キャヴエル嬢は我等の中にある最も勇敢なる士に對して勇氣の最高課程を教へたものである。」千九百十五年十一月二日英國首相の言。



白耳義労働者に對して銃劍を擬す 一般の不平を醸したる命令中には労働者は強制的に使役の場所に連れ行かるべきものなることを規定してある。

「多數の労働者は銃劍を擬せられて各自の家より強制的に連れ行かれ、又た労働者の不在中に於て其家族は人質として連れ去らるゝのである。若干の剛情なる労働者は獨逸へ放逐せられ、同地に於て健康に有害なる状態と且つ苛酷なる刑罰との下に森林の開拓若くは塹壕の鑿掘に従事すべく強制されるのである。」(海牙條約第四十四條の規定に曰く、「占領地域の人民に對し、軍事行動に参加すべく占領軍の強制は之を禁ず。」)

極めて最近に於て普魯西陸軍省は「多量の食糧品が占領地より獨逸國內へ輸送せられたること」を承認して居るのである。

### 三、民事裁判の否認せらるゝこと

「敵國市民の權利及訴訟權が法律上消滅、中止若くは無効なりと宣言することは特に之を禁ず。」(海牙條約第二十三條。)

獨逸の白耳義侵入軍が特色とする残忍にして且つ不正なる行爲が、同國占領中繼續したる事實の情況はブルツセル市辨護士協會長テオドル氏が一千九百十五年二月十七日獨逸官憲に向て提出したる活氣ある宣言書に依て之を知ることが出来る。同氏は先づ「白耳義に於ける裁判所構成に關する各事物は悉く法律上の原則に反するものなること」を述べて曰く、

「白耳義國民は未だ發布されざる、從つて之に就ては毫も知る所なき諸法律に違反の廉を以て所罰せらるゝ」と。又た「人民に對して辨護の自由なきこと」及び證言か絶へず「秘密探偵」によりて法廷に提出せらるゝことに就て苦情

もある。ブルツセル市に於ける屠牛場のみにても、獨軍に對して毎週十八噸乃至二十噸の脂肪を納めて居る。然るに一方には大多數の市民は飢餓に瀕して居るのである。又國內に於ける凡ての油質の穀類は徵發せられ、殊に或地方に於ては向日葵の栽培を強制的に施行して居る。

**徵發又徵發** 一千九百十五年九月に於て金屬及銅全部の沒收があり、且白銅貨は回收せられ之に代るに亞鉛鑄造貨を以てした。織物生産品は占領地域到る所に於て徵發せられた。綿花の貿易は停止せられ其貯藏品全部は羊毛及亞麻布と共に之を届出づべく、小銃製造に使用せらるゝ胡桃の樹は凡て之を伐り倒し、其他の樹木も亦切りに之を伐截して居る。(海牙條約第五十五條の規定に曰く、占領國は單に森林の管理者及用益權者たるべく自ら任すべし。)

戰爭前に於て存在せるセメントの全部は徵發された。尙ほ獨軍は各鑄造所、化學工場、石炭礦山、木挽場、セメント製造場、自動車製作場、鐵道工場及造船場等を皆使用して居る。

**尙も救濟事業に干涉** 予が將に此記事を終れる時、英國政府は更に報じて曰く、「フォン、ビツシング將軍が救濟事業に對して干涉を爲せる結果、英國政府は米國救濟委員に與へたる食物輸送の便宜を中止するに至るべきかも知れずと、尙ほブルツセル市駐在米國、西班牙及和蘭公使に宛て提出したる抗議に於て英國政府は曰く「獨逸官憲は救濟事業に對する凡ての干涉を辭すべく嚴肅に約束したのである。而も尙ほ屢々命令を發して公然白耳義人をして其與へられたる扶助により敵國のため勞働せしめ、斯くして其努力に依る白耳義の自由の回復を延引せしめんとして止まぬのである」と。

たのである。尙此外社會の中流と稱する窮乏せる勞働者の上級に位する一階級がある。是等の人々は單に一部の缺乏を感じるのみであるが、併も其面目を忍んで各自食物の補給を得んが爲に毎日長列の間に伍せざるを得ぬのである。」

一斤五十錢の犬肉　白耳義を遍く旅行することの出來たる和蘭の一新聞記者は國內到る所に於て、非常な困難の徵候あることを見出したと云つて居る。

「經濟上より見る時は、白耳義國民の狀態は極めて憐むべきものである。豆及米の如き最も必要なる食糧品の中には全く缺乏を告げて居るものもある。或地方に於ては馬鈴薯は三箇月間之を得ることが出來なかつた。アントワープの郊外に於ては犬肉すら一斤一志の價格に達したのである。」

尙も強奪　併かも獨軍は今尙ほ依然として金錢を絞り取る恐るべき手段を繼續し、絶へず徵發に次ぐに徵發を以てして居る。

「ブルツセル市は今や民有家屋に宿舍を指定されたる獨逸將校の宿泊料及び室内の設備を改良する爲に、毎月二千四百磅を支出すべく強制されて居る。」

「其上獨軍は極めて臆面もなく白耳義人より強奪をなすことを躊躇しない、例へば獨逸の各官衙に供給されたる瓦斯及電氣の計算書が届けば、獨軍は單に規定料金の二割のみを支拂ふ旨を市當局者に通報して居る。」

收穫の行衛　更に他の報告によつて察すれば、白耳義軍政長官は一千九百十五年度收穫全部の登錄、沒收及貯藏を命令して居る。馬匹に對して支拂はれたる現金代價は實際價格以下である。往々其三分の一に過ぎぬこと



るの外には何等用なきものである、之がため救済事業は非常に阻害された。英國外務省の發表する處によれば若し獨逸海軍が白耳義の食糧、生産品は之を沒收せざるべしと先般約束し、尙ほ最近まで之を實行せる處を其儘履行したらんには、困窮せる白耳義人に對して食糧の缺乏を感ぜしむることはなかつた筈である。救済吏員の言明する所によれば、地方住民をして侵入軍の爲めに勞働せしむべく、之を強制するの目的を以て獨逸側に於ては該地方救済委員の事業に干渉を試みんとせる幾多の報導に接して居ると云ふ。

「常用飲食物の二分の一」 米國救済委員の報告によれば白耳義人に食物を給與する爲に義捐金を募集したるに對し、世界各國よりの應募額は驚くべき巨額に達したと云ふことである。併も聯合國政府より財政上の援助に加ふるに前掲の如き寛大なる救助を以てしても、尙且つ救済委員に於ては白耳義人に對し常用飲食物の約三分の二を給するを得たるに過ぎぬのでつた。

二百萬人の窮民 ロックフエラー財團救済會の依頼により救済事業視察の爲に白耳義へ派遣せられたる有名なる米國人エフ、シー、ウアルコット氏が綿密に攻究したる意見によれば、「もし白耳義に食物の輸入が停止せらるゝに於ては、同國は三四時間以内に、一般的飢餓に遭遇するならん」とのことである。

「白耳義七百萬人の人口中其三百萬人は實際上衣食に缺乏し、是等の人々は食物の施與を受ける爲に一時間乃至三時間列を組み立てなければならぬのである。予は幾千の人々が雪中若くは雨に濡れ、寒氣に曝されつゝ、略列せるを目撃したのである。

「白耳義人口の殆ど一半は僅に飢餓を凌ぐに足るだけの給與を受ける爲に、毎日列をなして待つといふ境遇に陥

## 處罰の宣告

フォン、コツホ氏曰く、氏は總督の爲せる數種の宣言を讀むた。是等は餘りに強迫的手段を用ひたるが爲に、勞働者及一般國民より服従を拒絶せられ、總督は遂に之を撤回するの餘儀なきに至つたといふ殊に一千九百十五年六月十日に告示せられたるフォン、ウエスタルプ中將署名の宣言は一讀に値するものがある曰く、

「愛國を口實とし且つ海牙條約の規定を楯に、若干の工場は獨逸陸軍に對して勞役を拒絶した。之れ白耳義國民が獨逸の軍政を困難ならしむることを希望する證據である。それ故に本職は其職權に屬する各手段によりて此種の計畫の全部を抑制すべきことを茲に宣言するのである。」

之より先き勞働者は獨軍の塹壕用として倒鉤の附せる鐵線を製造することを拒絶した。

## 白耳義婦人の同盟罷業

此事に關しては婦人も亦男子と同様の態度を採つた。

「デント地方の婦人等は其勞働が敵の塹壕に對し砂袋を製造する爲に使役せられつゝあることを知るや、同地方の織物工場に於て一般的同盟罷業が起つたのである。」

或る場合に於ては一日二磅と云ふ高き賃銀を以て誘惑せらるゝにも拘らず、鐵道従業員をして其業務に復歸せしめんとせる獨逸の命令は成効しなかつた。

## 食物の沒收

食物の沒收に關しては、最近英國外務省によりて發表せられたる若干の痛歎すべき事實をも附記し得るのである。即ち米國の白耳義救濟委員所屬の汽船都合十一隻は、北海に於て獨逸の敷設せる水雷のために撃沈せられたのである。併かも此海面に水雷を布設することは單に和蘭の通商と白耳義救濟船とに損害を與ふ

部佛蘭西は飢餓より免れたのである。此重大なる事件に關し獨逸が白耳義に對して爲したる點は、獨逸が他國をして侵入軍に對し國際法の定むる義務を果すことを許したるにあるのみである。」

無一文の百五十萬人 フォン、コツホ氏曰く、「絶對無一文の者のみにても少くとも全國人口の二割即ち約百四十萬人に達して居る。」

「食物の給與せらるゝ外更に衣服の贈與があつた。米國人の救助なかりせば白耳義人の大部分は只だ襤褸を纏ひ若くは裸體の儘で居なければならなかつたのである。五十五萬磅の價格に達する丈けの衣服若くは反物の贈與によりて衣服の缺乏は幸にして之を避くることを得た。該救濟委員は最近に於て公衆の同情に訴へて曰く、「此冬期公衆の同情によつて被服の贈與を仰がなければならぬもの無慮三百人の多きに達して居る。」

勞働の強制 フォン、コツホ氏曰く、白耳義人をして仕事を開始せしめんとする獨軍の計畫は全く無効に歸したのである。

「海牙條約の規定に反し、獨軍が白耳義の勞働者をして彈藥製造を手傳はしむる爲に、武力を用ゆるを辭せざりしことは事實である。然れども其計畫は無効に終つた。有ゆる抑壓及脅迫も其効を奏しなかつたゝめに、幾百の勞働者は執業の避忌に對する處罰として強制勞働に使用せらるべく獨逸に送られた。リュットルに於て實行せられたる如きは其一例である。」マリーヌの鐵道に於て勞働者は從業のため數日間工場に閉ぢ込められたるにも拘はらず、何れも拱手して業に服せず、只管自國を防禦せんことを頑強に主張したのである。之がため同市は全國から糧道及凡ての交通を絶たれて仕舞つた。」



今尙ほ依然外國、殊に和蘭及英國に避難民として滞在して居るのである。予が英國を出發せる際多數の友人は各自の家屋内に白耳義人を住居させて居たやうであつた。最近に至り英國に於ける數千の避難民は木造の家屋を建て與られたのである。戰後に於て是等の人々は自國へ還送せらるゝ筈である。昨年中其國に於て其款待を受けたる白耳義人の數は少くとも十萬に達して居る。此等の避難民は「白耳義謝恩錄」と題する一書を發行した。英國及和蘭に於て私人より贈與せられたる食物、食器、衣服及小遣錢の外、巨額の義捐金は白耳義人救濟の爲に特に米國に於て募集せられたのである。白耳義救濟委員と稱する英國の一團體は約二十萬圓を募集し、毎週約三十萬圓は白耳義國內に於ける困苦を軽減する爲に英國側より贈與せられ、ニュージーランド國民は毎一人二圓五十錢の割合を以て義捐し、米國の一週刊新聞は麪粉二萬バレル（一バレルは我二十三貫五百二十匁）を寄贈し、日本に於ても亦約十五萬圓を募集せられたのである。

千九百十六年度に於ける一中立國民の報告 既に引用せられたる一中立國の著述家フォン、コツホ氏の白耳義に於ける現狀に關する報告を左に紹介する。今年（千九百十六年）早々の記述に於て氏は、「吾人（獨逸人）は一大經濟上の苦痛より白耳義を救助せり」と云ふフォン、ビツシング將軍の驚くべき宣言に就て注意を喚起したのである。

フォン、コツホ氏曰く、「若し全狀態が斯く悲惨なるに非ずとすれば、此無稽に對して一笑を禁することは蓋し不可能である。吾人は海牙條約によれば、獨軍は白耳義の人民を扶助すべき義務あることを記憶せねばならぬ。獨軍は此點に關する自己の義務を拋棄し、白耳義救濟委員は毎月小麪粉約十萬噸を輸入し、斯くして白耳義及北

第五十三條、一、地方を占領せる軍隊は、單に通貨、資金、國家專屬の有價物件、兵器、庫輸送機關、糧食及作戰上使用せられ得べき國家の一般動産全部を占領し得べきものとす。

## 二、白耳義人が缺乏に苦しめられたること

荒廢の區域 概算によれば白耳義の約三分の一は獨逸侵入軍のために荒廢に歸せしめられたのである。米國の一僧侶は一千九百十四年十二月紐育「アウトトルック」雜誌に寄書して其光景を描いて曰く、

「白耳義の工業は荒廢に歸せしめられざる地方に於ても尙且つ停止せられ、公衆に對しては列車を運轉せず、電信電話は軍事當局の使用のみに留保せられ、郵便は全く中止の状態にある。凡ての白耳義人は、和蘭の國境を通過するを禁ぜられ、銀貨を見ること極めて稀にして、通貨は主として紙幣及白銅貨のみが流通されて居る。」

慈善によりて食物を給與せらる 獨逸軍侵入の翌年二月獨逸新聞「フォルヴェルツ」は、白耳義國民の四分の一は慈善によりて食物を給與されて居ることを報じて居た。ブルツセル市のみに於ても窮民の數約二十五萬人に達した而して是等の人々が困苦に悩みつゝある所以は單に貧窮のみに非ずといふ。米國ロツクフェラー財團の報告に曰く、

「白耳義問題を充分に了解せんとするには活動的にして且つ健全なる人民に對して急劇なる不景氣を加へたるためであると主張するの必要がある。是れ即ち白耳義をして歴史上類例なき状態を實現せしめた所以である。」

外國に於ける避難民 一般に熟知せらるゝ如く主として年長者、婦人及小兒等白耳義人の五十萬以上は

て居るのである。

「尙は注意すべきは此戰時税は白耳義國內の經費に充てられなかつたことである。此經費のためには特別税が課せられて居る」

「此巨額の課税は之を以て戰時税の終りを告ぐるに至るものなるべしとの希望を以て、白耳義人は非凡の努力により毎月正確に納税するやう出精したのである。然れども此希望は遂に實現されなかつた。一千九百十五年十一月十五日に於て衰頹せる白耳義は、更に新らしき處置が取らるゝ迄は當分毎月二百萬馬克の出金を課せらるべしとの布告に接し、併かも今後は獨逸通貨を以て之も納むることにされた。」

茲に該出金を課するブラッセル市發行の官報の一部分を抄録することとした。

更に十五日後の同官報に於て、白耳義を退去せる同國民に對して、十倍の出金額を課するといふことが發表されたのである。

此頁を印刷に附せんとするに際し和蘭よりの來電によれば、獨軍は白耳義國立銀行より約三億圓を奪ひ從來強制せる巨額の集金も顔色なきに至らしめたと云ふことである。

海牙條約を見れば、

第五十條 科料若くは其他の場合に於て集合的刑罰は個人の行爲に對して之を全住民に要求するを得ず、住民は全體として責に任すべきものと認めらるゝこと能はず。

第五十二條 現品又は勞役の徵發は占領軍に必要な場合を除くの外之を要求することを得ず。



官憲より通知に接したとのことである。又中立國記者の言によれば、

「國外に輸送されざる多量の糧食は封鎖せられたのである。詳言すれば是等の糧食の販賣を禁ぜられ、獨軍の監視に委すべきことを命ぜられたのである。海牙條約の規定に全然違背する是等貨物の輸出は國內の一般商業を沈滞せしむるのみならず、其の國をして益々窮乏に陥らしむること勿論である。何故ならば是等徵發物の大部分に對しては毫も損害を賠償せぬからである。換言すれば世界最富國の一なる白耳義は戰後に於て最貧國の一となり、嘗て獨逸の商工業と競争せる其各方面の商工業は破壊せらるゝに至るべきである」。

**科料** 白耳義國は家畜及農具の掠奪に依て窮乏に頻せるのみならず、尙ほ苛酷なる科料及戰時税の賦課に依つても亦た此窮乏を促したるのである。先づ科料に就て云へば、マリースに於ては市長が大僧正の不在を獨逸官憲に通知することを失念せりとの故を以て同市は科料に處せられ、ブラッセル市に於ては一警官が獨逸民政廳の吏員に對して鄭重を缺きたりとの廉を以て同市は科料に處せられたのである。

**戰時税** 普通戰時税に就て云へば、有名なる瑞典の著述家ジー、エツチ、フォン、コツホ氏はストックホルムの著名なる一日刊新聞に寄書して曰く、

「是等の税はブラッセル市に於ては二百萬磅、アントワープ市に於ては二百五十萬磅、クルトレー市に於ては五十萬磅、トゥルネー市に於ては二百萬磅、リエージュ市に於ては三百五十萬磅に達して居る。然れども是等の諸税は一千九百十四年十二月十日總督によつて課せられたる戰時税に比する時は殆ど言ふに足らざる程の少額である。海牙條約の規定に違背せる此戰時税は一千百十五年には一千九百二十萬磅一ヶ月百六十萬磅の巨額に達し

逸が白耳義を占領するや、是等の馬匹、殊に種馬（牝牡共）及仔馬は、之を一纏にして國境外に運去られたのである、予の所有にかゝる一千九百十五年二月二日發行の「ドイツチエ、ターゲス、ツアイツング」新聞によれば、戦利品なる二百六十頭の馬匹及五十四頭の牝馬は、獨逸に於て賣拂はるゝ廣告が掲載されて居る。

**機械及貨物の捕獲** 獨逸の施政によつて白耳義に加へられたる工業の廢類に就て、白耳義政府の公表せる處によれば、一千九百十五年一月までに捕獲せられたる機械の價格は、六百萬圓を超過して居たといふことである。又た捕獲せられたる棉花、大麻、護謨、羊毛、白銅、銅及皮革の價格は一千萬法に上り、アントワープ商業會議所長の調査せる代價を支拂はれざる捕獲品表は、六千五百萬法に達して居る。玩具類までも捕獲された。時としては證書が徵發物の所有主に與へらるゝことがある、是等證書の價值が極めて僅少であることは、材木商に與へられたる左の通知書によつて之を判斷することが出来る。

「自己若くは他人の計算によると否とに拘らず、凡て所有にかゝるものは如何なるものなるやを論せず、松材の桁に就て云へば、五樞乃至九樞にして成るべく幅廣く、少くとも長さ四米突のもの、若くは成るべく幅廣き同じく松材の板は何れも獨逸軍司令部によりて之を押收若くは徵發し、近々獨逸に向け輸送せらるべく、之に對して充分保存保證若くは保險の責任を負はざる可からず、尙價格に就ては今後伯林陸軍省に於て指定せらるべし。」

**「獨逸商業の援助」** 白耳義國調査委員の報によれば、「國內到る所より原料は運び去られ、若くは抑留され以て獨逸の商業を援助する爲に之を使用せんとす」と云ふ。斯くの如くして某絛皮商店は獨逸官憲に於て其所有する皮類を搬出すべく、尙ほ今後伯林へ向け輸出すべきため毎月二三百枚の皮を貯藏することを強制さるべき旨

ければならないと。」

獨逸が調印したる戰時海牙條約の規定に曰く、

「現品又は勞役の徵發は占領軍に必要な場合を除くの外は之を要求することを得ず」

他方に於て、白耳義國調査委員の第十三回報告によれば、

「家畜諸原料製造用の備具及機械具類は何等の權利もなくして之を獨逸に運び去りたり」と。

ロツクフェラー財團の報告は明瞭である。

「侵入軍は穀物、糧食、家畜、馬匹、綿花、羊毛、原料及製造品、銅器、工場裝置、車輛、石油精及其他武器、軍需品の製造に必要な各種の器具を徵發した。又軍隊が通過したる小村落及若干の大都會に於ても同様に家屋の殘存せるものは皆掠奪された。又是等家屋の中にて運去ることの出來ぬ家具は悉く破壊された。徵發科料の賦課若くは財産の破壊に就て、其總額は莫大なるものである。」

窃取せる家具を獨逸に送ること 掠奪せる家具を獨逸に送ることに關して、數多の新聞論説は是等

の卑劣なる行爲と又た最高級將校等が竊盜に加入せること等を掲載して居る。茲に白耳義より獨逸まで家具を運搬することを申込める某運送業者の廣告を獨逸新聞より轉載する。

馬匹の竊取 世界到る所の輿論は馬匹の竊盜を以て特に誹謗すべきものと見做して居る。馬匹の竊盜とし

ての獨逸の記録は實に不名譽を極めたものである。白耳義の大荷車用馬匹は世界に有明なるものにて、同國に取つては一の富源である。獨逸のみにても毎年二千四百萬法の價格に達する程是等の馬匹を購入し來つて居る。獨



## 第十三章 白耳義國占領中引續き同國人を虐待せること

### 一、白耳義人が窃盜、科料及課税によりて強奪せられたること

獨逸の意見に對する白耳義の主張 吾人は獨逸が引續き一定の目的を以て戰時法規及慣例を無視せるを認めた、而かも最も耻づべき行爲は白耳義に對する取扱の殊に殘忍を極めたことである。

獨逸は白耳義が何等の責むべき咎を獨逸に對して犯さぬにも拘らず、之れに宣戰したことは克く承知して居るのである。獨逸外相フォン、ヤギー氏曰く、「獨逸は白耳義を批難すべき何等の理由を持たない、白耳義の態度は常に全く正鵠を得て居たのである。」獨逸は絶対に無辜なる國に殘忍なる侵入をなすことは、近世に於て之に増す耻辱のないことを熟知し、又た國際法を無視したるのみならず、人道に對して暴行を犯したることをも承知して居るのである。

今も尙ほ獨逸に残れる文明と良心とに對する各本能は、同國をして戰時法規を最も嚴正に遵奉せしむべく、且つ白耳義に加へたる苦痛を制限するに百方努力せしむべく、克く之を誘導したるならんと考へらるゝ處である。併も事實は各人の見る如く全く反對であつた。獨逸は白耳義に於て最も極端なる蠻行を以て、戰爭を指揮したのである。實に獨逸が臆面もなく白耳義人に語つた如く、戰爭は「殘忍性のもの」であつた。

占領後に於て 尙も嫌疑すべき事實は白耳義占領後に於ても、獨逸の殘酷行爲は依然として繼續されたことである。非常に獨逸最負の一瑞典著述家は曰く、「今日白耳義國內を旅行せんとする者は、先づ其心を鬼にした

最も簡易なる條項乃ち「第二十二條敵を負傷せしむる方法に關し、戰鬥員の權限は無制限なるものにあらす」といふ規定を明らかに無視したるものである。

佛國前法相の云へるが如く、「現戰爭に於て獨軍の犯せる罪惡の斬新なることは、其動機にもあらず、又た野蠻なるが故にも非ず、全く犯罪者が戰爭に關する科學的觀念に其犯罪行爲を結合せしめんとする訓誨的努力に在るのである」と。

戰爭に關する獨逸の著書より得たる新事實 右佛國前法相の言は「陸戰の勃發」と題する獨逸著書中の左記數節に於て之を確證して餘りあるのである。

同書二十頁、「砲撃されたる都市に於て病傷の婦人小兒及老人の存在することは、其都市が降服を急がなければならぬものであるといふ事實を利用しないことは愚の至りである。」

四十八頁、「住民は敵の兵力、財源及其他の秘密に就て其知る所を語るべく強制されるものである。各國に於ける多數の著者は此事を批難するけれども吾人は然かせざるを得ないのである。」

五十頁、「敵國民よりの攻撃に對して防禦すべく必要なる恐嚇手段は容赦なく之を採るべきである。」

五十一頁、「嚮導として任務を強制せられたる土民にして不信用なる時は之を犯罪者と認める。土民は其土地を占領せる國に對して服從の義務を負ふものである。斯る犯罪者は死刑に處さなければならぬ。」

五十四頁、「戰爭によつて要求されたる凡ての破壊は、其程度如何に甚しかんとも、之を當然と認むるべきである。」

「敵を失望、敗北、且つ破壊せしむるの目的を以て行はれたる我軍の行動は、如何なる性質のものなるを問はず之を勇敢且つ善良の行爲なりと云ふべきである。……凡ての由緒ある記念碑、有名なる繪畫及建築物等は、若し之を破壊するがために獨逸の勝利を促進せしむるを得ば、委細構はず破壊すべきである。……戦争は戦争である宜しく峻烈に戦はなければならぬ。……世人は吾人を稱して野蠻人と云ふとも何かあらん。吾人は世人及び其誹謗を蔑視する。世人がランスの寺院又た佛國に於て之と同様の運命に遭遇したる各寺院に就て語ることを止めさせなければならぬ。是等の事は吾人に何等の興味をも與へない。吾軍は只だ戦勝を目的とするのみ。其他の事物は何かあらんやである」と。

雜誌「ダス、インテルナシオナール」、ランドスクリーグスレヒト」は曰く、「各住民の行爲に就ては、全市は其所罰を蒙らざるべからず。之に對しては「戦時法規に明かに違反する事」をも爲し得るのである」と。

「ケルニツセ、ツアイツング」新聞は右の意見を正當なりと認めて曰く、

「若し犯罪者が發見されない場合に於ては、無罪のものが科料を負擔しなければならぬ。之は住民が罪を犯した爲めではなく、犯罪の行爲を妨遏するためである。白耳義に於ける開戦第一日の慘害及び滔々たる流血の光景は、我軍が殘留したる微弱なる占領部隊に對して大なる都市が反抗の舉に出でんとするの考をも躊躇するに至らしめたのである。誰か克く白耳義の首府が吾軍の處爲を寛容したるならんと想像するものあらんやである。」

凡ての恐るべき虐殺、殺戮、暴行、殘忍、燒拂及掠奪等に對して獨逸は各種の調査委員會及中立國の立證によつて批難せらるゝのみではない。同國は實に自己の口によつても亦批難せらるゝのである。同國は海牙條約中の



認めて居るので有る。予は茲にビスマルクの愛僕ブツシュの著書ビスマルクの金言中より三節を摘載する。

「十一月十七日ガリバルデーと其部下の義勇兵一萬三千人は捕虜となつたと云ふ風説が行はれた。宰相は之を斯く觀察したのである、「一萬三千人の佛國人にも非ざる自由進撃隊を捕虜とするは實に慨歎の至りである。何故に之を銃殺しなかつたか」と。

「十二月一日フォン、ゾルデン中尉は獨逸の戰勝を記して曰く、「吾軍は一千六百餘を捕虜とした。佛軍の損害合計は四千人乃至五千人の多きに達した。其時長官曰く、「もし是等の捕虜が悉く死骸で有つたならば予は一層喜んだのである。今多數の捕虜を獲ることは吾軍に取りて一大不利益に外ならぬ」と。

六週間を経て更にビスマルクは曰く、

「若し吾に於て軍隊を駐屯せしむることが出来ぬならば、絶へず突撃隊を放つて銃殺し、又た絞殺し且つ焼拂らうのである」と。

慘酷行爲に關するフォン、ヒンデンブルグの意見

以上の如き意見は蓋し過去の人の言であるとも云はれる。併し現に獨逸陸軍參謀總長フォン、ヒンデンブルグ元帥自身は、新聞記者に次の如く語つて居るといふ。

「ロツツは飢餓に迫まれて居る。それは痛嘆に堪へないが併し結構な事である。戦争が慘酷に行はるゝ程それ丈け終局を早めることになるのである」と。

又たフォン、デスフルト將軍は漢堡發行の一新聞に左の如く寄書したといふ。

であると。

一千七百八十年に生れ一千八百三十一年に歿せる獨逸兵學の最有名なる大家、フォン、クラウゼウィッツ氏は其著書に於て述て曰く、

「慘酷に而かも流血を毫も意に介せずして戰ふの士は、若し敵が同様の方法に出づることなくば早晚優位を占めるものである。戰爭に於て慘酷の要素を閑却せんことを希望するは無益にして且つ誤れる傾向である」と。

又參謀本部の一員にして一千八百十七年に生れ、一千八百七十八年に歿せるフォン、ハルトマン將軍は「軍事上の要求と人道」と題する著書に曰く、

「戰爭は過去に於けるよりも一層向ふ見ずに、一層輕卒に、一層猛烈に、且一層慘酷に行はるゝ様になるであらふ。」「戰闘員をして窮屈なる合法の羈絆より全然脱せしむべく軍事上の努力を要す。兇暴と熱情とは凡て軍事上偉大なるべき要素である。」

「戰爭の目的を達するに缺くべからざる各種の手段は之を用ゆるも差支ない。是等の一般に通用する主義よりして、指揮官の自由行爲及獨裁的判斷に對しては廣い制限を附けて居るのである。」

「戰爭の慘害は敵國に對して躊躇するには及ばない。暴虐は軍事上の見地より必要なる主義と成つて來たのである」と。

## 捕虜殺戮に關するビスマルクの主張

フォン、クラウゼウィッツ及びフォン、ハルトマンの何人なるやを知らぬ人は澤山に有る。併しビスマルクの主張する處は之を代表的獨逸人の意見と見做すべきことは皆

である。予は人も知れる如く戦争穩和的に行はるべきものにあらざることを知るのである。米國南北戦争の一大將軍は曰く、「戦争は地獄なり」と、然れども日本人及其他多くの國民は戦時の法規及慣例を勵行して避くべからざる慘禍を軽減せんが爲に、戦争開始に對して慎重の態度を持して居たのである。

獨逸に對する苛酷なる批難は同國が其宰相の言へるが如く、白耳義に對して「不正なる又た文明に對しては犯罪なる『國際法違反』」の行爲を敢てして此戦争を起したるがためのみではない。

獨逸に對する苛酷なる批難は實に最近一千九百〇七年に於て最も明らかに、又た正確に戦時法規及慣例に關する諸條項を規定したる海牙條約書に獨逸が調印したる後、間もなきに凡ての場合に於て是等の法規及慣例を無視し、以て軍事上の利益は斯くして得らるべきものなりと想定したるがためである。

又た戦時法規並に慣例に關し、四拾四個國が嚴肅に同意せる處に對して、之を侮蔑せることは決して偶發的部分的若くは一時的のもので無く、全く熟慮ある政策に基ける固執且つ一貫せる行動によれるものである。

**更に獨逸の自白** 獨逸が歐洲戦争に跳込める明白なる理由は、戦争開始せば同國は直ちに併かも大勝を博すべしと信じたが故である。又た世界の良心が戦争を命じたるに非ず、只だ自己が之を好んだが故に戦争をするに決したのである。

獨逸參謀本部に於て出版されたる一書「陸戰の勃發」に曰く、戦争を猛烈に進行せしむるには武装せる敵及其防備に對して行動するのみに限らるべからず、須く敵の有形無形の財源をも破壊すべきものである。生命及び財産の顧慮の如き凡て人道の命ずる處を何等考究するの必要はない。苛酷に恐嚇手段を用ふることは各指揮官の任務



員男女及小兒を溺死せしめたのである。斯る精神の獨逸人は其行爲を祝せんが爲に勳章を鑄造した。而かもコーン發行の「フォルクスツァイツング」新聞の記する如く、獨軍は之を「喜ぶべき誇」として考へて居るのである。恐怖すべき事實の概要 之を概括するに數人の婦人小兒僧侶及老人等を加へて總計五千人を下らざる白耳義非戰鬥員は殺されたのである。

軍事上の必要なくして二萬の家屋は焼拂はれ尙ほ一萬三千乃至一萬四千の人民は獨逸に放逐されたのである。幾多の婦人を凌辱せること（その中には多數の尼僧を含む）及び驚くべき財産の破壊耻づべき竊盜の行爲等種々な暴行脅迫に就て精細なる統計を茲に擧げることとは不可能である。併し少くとも五百有餘個處に於て放火、掠奪及拿捕を行ひ、又たブラバン北方のみにても一萬六千戸以上の家屋に掠奪を爲したことは確實である。

「白耳義、佛國及英國の諸報告及び既に掲載せられたる立證并に和蘭米國其他中立國の書物の大部分を詳細に點檢したる後、予は最近に發表されたる白耳義公文書により左の辭句を引用せざるを得ないのである。

「正義の念に強き白耳義政府は人間の良心に訴へて其批判に信頼するのみ。」

獨逸皇族の承認 予は茲に他の辭句を附加する、之は白耳義人若くは聯合國何れの住民の手にもなつた

ものではなく、サキリニー王の弟マックス親王なる一獨逸人が記述せる處である。親王は僧侶で有つて同僚なる瑞西國ツウリヒ市に在る天主教の高僧フォンマチース男爵に宛てたものである。

「白耳義に對する苛酷の處置は天に向て復讐を絶叫せしめるものである。」

獨逸に對する酷評 予は此書を著すに細心なる公平を以て筆を執らんことは、既に卷頭に於て述べた處

の一斑を窺ひ知ることが出来る。該指揮官は國會議員にして又た有名なる體育家、且つ獨逸學者である。

「金錢上の事項、男女間の關係、日常生活の經濟に關しては、吾人は宜しく名譽、辨別、禮讓、慇懃及び克己を實踐躬行しなければならぬ」と。

此書簡の文面を尙ほ讀み行けば、其精神に於て本書に引照したる獨軍の宣言書に比べて甚だ相違する處あるを見るのである。即ち

「敵に對する動作に於て若し此戰爭を英國人と獨逸人との個人的差別を以て扱ふ如きは之れ我軍の不面目である  
「否それよりも遙かに美しきものである。乃ち信念の戰である。我等は自由に生くべきもの、愛は終に世より亡びざるものとして戰ふのである。

「多くの事業家は部下に好望なる約束をする。併し予が諸子に約束する處は困難、不愉快、又た負傷は元より死をさへも恐れざることである。正道の爲めに忠義を盡さんことを望む」と。

英獨の潜航艇戰法 英國陸軍の兵士に見ると同様に、海軍の水兵にも亦之を認めるのである。茲に例と

して幾多の好話柄を列記する邊はないが、只だ一青年潜航艇長の美談を左に掲ぐることにする。同艇長は軍需品輸送中の一土耳其汽船を發見して、將に之を撃沈せんとする際、汽船乗組の船員等が短艇引卸の操縦を熟知せざるを見るや、艇長は直ちに該汽船に飛乗り船員を助けて其短艇を引卸さしめたのである。(此行爲は汽船が陸地に接近し土耳其の陸上砲臺よりは何時にても砲撃され得るに於て殊に注意すべきものがある。)斯る武士的精神なき獨逸潜航艇長は、据付ける砲又た据付ざる砲をも有せざる汽船ルシタニア號を撃沈し、一千百九十八人の非戰闘

只だ茲に一言したいことは外でもない、若し文明を維持しやうとするならば、斯の如き非倫背徳の行爲は嚴重に處罰しなければならぬといふことである。(諸調査委員會の報告書のみならず、個人の著述せる白耳義國侵入に關する書籍には此種の記事が澤山に有る。殊にギユスターヴ、ソムヅ井ール氏の「リエージュに達する軍」と題する著書中の二頁には、斯る背徳行爲の最も信憑すべき二の場合を記載し、且つ幾多の唾棄すべき同様な事實は、書中隨處に散見せらるゝのである。)

## 英軍の道德訓

獨逸軍が犯せる暴行の殊に惡虐なることは、雷に慘酷下劣なるが敢て珍らしからぬのみならず、是が常習的となつて士官までも屢々之に與り、一度たりとも暴行者を制止せんと努めたる形跡は毫も認められぬことである。之を英軍が初めて佛國に向て出征する際、キチナー卿は特に兵士に對して婦人に關係することなく、且つ飲酒を戒むるは最肝要なる義務であることを諭せる手紙を送りたる事實に比較する時は果して如何うであらう。尙ほ英軍の嚴肅なる行動に就て、佛國の田舎人が切に之を賞揚せる報道は續々佛國から來て居る。然るに之に反し獨逸に於ては、既に戰爭前より同國民の大多數が婦人に對する標準は甚だ低級なりとの立證歴然たるものが有つたのである。又た予は數名の日本人の敎授より獨逸大學の學生間に於ける微毒患者の高率なることに關する説明を屢々聽いたことがある。

幾千の英國義勇軍が文明の進歩の爲に有害なる軍國主義のみならず而かも劣等なる道德律と奮戦しつゝ之を撃破せんとして如何なる高價をも辭せざる觀念こそは、士氣を鼓舞する上に於て恐く之に優るものはあるまい。

**部下に對する一指揮官** 英軍の一指揮官が部下に對して送りたる左の活躍せる書簡を讀めば、軍隊内



斯かる汚穢物中より逃れんことを感ぜしむる境遇に際會した。此書に初めて筆を執つた時、予は幾多嫌忌すべき暴行を知り又た人よりも能く之を知り抜いて居たのである。予は獨逸軍が白耳義侵入の當初、數週間和蘭に滞在して居つたが、當時避難民は續々として和蘭の厚意を手頼つて來た。其後日本へ來る前に、予は獨逸人の放逐されたる地方に於ける慘狀を極めたる農民に向け、家畜、種子及び農具を發送せんとせる英國農民委員を代表して佛國に赴き、此等の被害者と談話を交へた。予は元より幾多嫌忌すべき暴行の事實を知り居れるも、而かも實際に是程許多にして、且つ嫌忌すべきものなりしとは考へ及ばなかつたのである。千九百〇一年山東省に於てフオン、ファルケンハイン將軍麾下の獨逸軍隊が行へる暴行を記憶する日本の讀者は、同將軍が數週間、獨逸陸軍の參謀長より轉じて、今や東部前線を指揮しつゝあるを知らば思半に過ぎるものがあるであらう。

### 法外なる罪惡

讀者の中に予が引證したる諸種の書籍を參照さるゝ人あらば、實に愕然たらざるを得ざる

べしであらう。單に婦人に對する暴行に就て見るも、女性に對する暴行は不幸にして何れの戦争にも伴ふのである。而かも之が獨逸軍人の面目を失墜せしむる程に、常習的に且つ戰慄すべきものであると云ふのは、近世に於て殆んど稀有のことである。只に道德を無視せるに止まらず、自然に反し且つ動物にも劣らざる破倫の行爲である。

予が此書を編纂するに當り、原稿中より最も信憑すべき此種の實例を幾分削除したる理由は、予の引用せる公刊書類に就て、幾多の恐怖すべき記事を未だ通讀せられざる讀者には、容易に之が信ぜられぬと思ふからである。矢鱈に婦人の胸部を切斷し、屢々糞尿を以て家具、樂器、寢臺及食器類を汚したるが如きは、單に一例に過ぎぬのである。

## 第十二章 若干の事實之に對する獨逸の解釋

### 獨逸の自覺

獨逸陸軍省と兵士の日誌 以上に掲げたる證據の合理的なることは、第一 正式に編成され且つ最も責任ある調査委員、第二 中立國の觀察者、第三 獨逸兵士の日誌等の確實なる根據の下に印刷されて居ると云ふ事實によつて明瞭である。此等の日誌に關しては、獨逸野外要務令第七十五條に、獨逸兵士は斯かる記錄を保存すべしといふ規定がある。「獨逸の證據に基ける獨逸の罪惡」と題する著書は、全然此等獨逸兵士の日誌の自白に基いて編纂されたものであつた。斯の如き日誌の拔萃が右の著書始め、外國新聞にも掲載せらるゝに至つてから、獨逸陸軍官憲は事の發覺によつて生ずべき結果に關し不安の念を感じ、遂に該七十五條の規定を中止するの止むなきに至つたことは特筆するに足る事柄である。

幾多の立證 以上に掲げたる戰慄すべき事實は、此他にも數多印刷に附せんとした中の一小部分に過ぎぬものであるといふことを、讀者は克く察せられんことを希望する。獨逸の暴行に關する英國調査委員の報告は、七百乃至八百件の宣誓陳述にかゝる事項を網羅して居る。又白耳義國政府の新に公表したる報告書の中には、デナン、ルーヴァン及アンダンヌ地方に發生したる事項のみに關し、宣誓陳述したる語數は約十二萬の多きに達して居るのである。予は英國調査委員の報告書又は、白耳義國政府の外交文書を全部通讀したのではないことを茲に告白する。併し之を讀む者は時としては惡感嘔吐を催さしむる場合に遭遇し、或は又萬難を排し一刻も早く

別の法規に關し、白耳義官憲は左のことを記述して居る。

「テルモンドに於て一個中隊の兵は放火液中央貯藏池を有し各兵は空氣帶を携帯して、貯藏池に就て之を充たし此帶より家屋の外部にある薪に放火液を注ぎ掛けるのである、また他の兵は燐の調合物を塗りたる手袋を嵌め、家屋の前に至りて其の手袋を以て液體を注がれたる薪を摩擦する、斯くして火は家屋に燃え移り全都市も僅に十五分間程にて全く焼き拂はるのであつた。」

他の報告に依れば、獨兵は戸の穴よりセルロイドを指し入れて放火したとある。

海牙條約第二十二條に曰く「敵の財産を破壊することは斯る破壊が交戦の必要上缺くべからざる場合の外は特に之を禁ず」と。



巨魁は言ふ迄もなく獨逸政府である、之は「フランクフルテル、ツアイツング」紙に掲載されたる左の奇抜なる記事に依りても明白である。

「敵國領土に於て鹵獲せられたる諸種財貨は其量莫大にして今や其處分に關する困難は日一日と増加せんとす、之に關し全國商業會議所は陸軍大臣の要求により、鹵獲物を一時收藏するに足るべき倉庫及置場の詳細なる調査を依頼されたり。」

茲に只だ海牙條約第二十八條は次の如く規定することを附記すれば足る即ち曰く「都市或は一地方を掠奪すること、之を強襲に依り占領したる場合に於ても之を禁ず」と、又た其第五十二條は左の如く規定して居る「領土を占領したる軍隊は敵國々々に係る貨幣資金其他の有價物のみを鹵獲することを得」と。

## 第六 組織的放火

「獨逸將校は私有財産の燒棄及破壞を命令し且つ之を稱揚し、獨逸軍事官憲は開戰の當初に於て放火の方法に關する規定を制定し、且屢々行はれたる破壞行為は軍事上の必要に依るにあらずして威嚇手段として之を用ひたるものなることを證明せらる。英國調査委員第六論決。

東京駐在白耳義公使の指摘する所に依れば、獨逸陸軍は特別の放火隊を有する世界唯一の軍隊である、「獨逸兵の所持する放火銃なるものに就ては屢々世に傳へらるゝ所があつた、此放火銃に關する報告も夥しくあるが、併し此放火銃以外に、戰時法規から言へば保護せざる可からざる私有財産を破壊する爲に獨逸陸軍が制定したる特

行き銃殺した、同氏の三人の年少の子供も同處に捕へ行かれ其父と兄弟の死刑を見せられた。」

**獨軍士官其窃取せる財貨を獨逸に輸送す** 或る英國記者の言に、獨逸は一千八百七十年普佛戰爭

の折には好んで掛時計を奪つたが現今の獨逸はピアノを奪ふに至つた、獨逸文明は之だけ進歩して來て居る、獨兵は白耳義のピアノを貨車に満載して祖國へ送つて居る、中には之を士官の自宅宛に届けたのもある、又コロニーに於て競賣に付せられたものは國庫の收入になつた」とあるが、此事實に就ては證據が澤山ある。

「ヴィレー、ノートル、ダムの一邸宅に於てはグロナウ侯爵は、皿百四十六枚、エナメル塗匙二百三十六、金側時計三個、酒一千五百罇、雞六十二羽、鷺三十二羽、リンネル及び小兒服若干の搬出を自ら監視した。」

甚しきはカイゼルの二皇子すら、私有財物を獨逸に送つたと稱せられて居る、前に數々引用したる白耳義醫士の言ふ處に依れば、

「民家の却奪は組織的に行はれた、自動貨車、家具輸送車其他種々の車輛は家から家へと移り行きて財貨を積載する様恰も移轉騒ぎの様であつた、苟くも價值あるものは家具、ピアノ、美術品、繪畫其他何物をも問はず持ち去られて軍用列車に依りて獨逸へ送られた。」

「其適例とも見るべきものが獨逸士官の死骸から發見されたる書簡に記載されて居る、此書簡は其妻より士官に宛てたものであるが、中に左の文句がある「御送附下されたる美々しき家具は慥に受取りました、併し客室用のピアノが一つ欲しいと思ひますから宜しく願ひます。」

**商業會議所と強奪品** 併し此強奪に關して其犯行者個人を責むるのは寧ろ無用のことである、掠奪者の

のである。

「吾等は士官下士の命令及び嚮導の下に練兵するが如くに凡て之を實行した。」

「八月十七日、國王の大臣の一人の所有に屬する邸宅に於て、我が兵卒は恰も眞のヴァンダル人の如くに振舞つた、彼等は凡てのものを破壊し投げ散らした、高貴なる室内裝飾品絹製品陶器などが混亂された、是れは兵卒が自己の所要物資の徵發を許されたときに行つた處である、兵卒は單に面白半分に自己に不用の品物迄も持ち去つた。(索遜第百七十八聯隊一將校の書簡より)。

「ハレの國民軍の一個大隊は種々たる物資を運搬して到着した、殊に酒を澤山持つて居た、兵の中には己に亂醉せるものも多くあつた、此大隊は直ちに徵發の名の下に何物をも持ち去るがために手近の家屋に闖入する目的を以て密集して隊伍を組んで居た、士官等は自ら掠奪の例を示すべく先頭に進んだ、酔つて居た兵も多數あつた其日子は心の中に兵等に對する言ふへからざる輕侮の念を抱いた。」(一千九百十四年八月廿九日國民軍第一中隊、ガストン、クラインの書簡より)。

著者は茲に獨逸が爆藥を以て破壊せる銀行の金庫の寫眞を持て居る、デナンに於ても之れと同様なることが起つた、乃ち白耳義調査委員第十一回報告書に左の如く述べられて居る。

「兵士等は市中の家々を掠奪し廻つた、金庫を破壊し、之を開いた、其爲に時としては爆藥を用ひた、兵は中央銀行に闖入し、取締役ワツセイジ氏を捕へ凡ての金庫を開くことを要求した、氏が之を拒絶したので兵は自ら之を破壊して開かんとした、併し無効に了つたので兵は怒つてワツセイジ氏と其子息二人をプラス、ダーム街に連れ



發受領證（之は何等の價值なきもの）を渡して置いたに過ぎない、其時には多數兵士が人面獸心に成つたのを見る  
ことが出來た、獨逸文明といふのはほんの鍍金であるかとの疑問を起す理由があつた、亂暴者が隊を成して何で  
も手當り次第に強奪して廻つたのである、彼等は數々其行爲を下士官から獎勵せられたのである、彼等は野蠻人の  
如く民家を荒した、權利に關する凡ての法規は廢され其結果我軍は非常に評判を落したのである（豫備下士エリ  
ツヒの書簡より）。

「彼等は少しも軍人らしく振舞はなかつた、普通の盜賊、追剝、強盜の如くであつた、之は實に我が聯隊と我が  
陸軍との耻辱である」（國民軍歩兵第六十五聯隊一兵卒の書簡より）。

「軍紀は紊れた、工兵は最早其價值を失つた、砲兵は盜賊の群と化した。」（豫備歩兵第七十七聯隊一中尉の書簡  
より）。

正式命令 左に記すはルーヴァンに於て起りたる出來事である。

「兵士等は群を成して其掠奪せる財物を車輛に積みて運び去り、一方工兵等は五晝夜に涉り組織的に次から次へ  
と家屋に火をかけ最も廣大なる最も殷富なる街區を焼き拂つた、放火が始まると間もなく全市は一の恐るべき火  
爐と化した、街上に横る死骸は空氣を有毒ならしめた、數世紀に亘り吾人に傳へられたる貴重なる美術品、父祖  
の營々辛苦の結果なる財寶は正式命令の下に動ける蠻軍の爲に灰燼に歸した、此破壊滅亡の光景裡に兵士等は酒  
を飲み「光榮」を歌ひ叫び狂つた」。

尙次に記すは獨兵の捕虜及死骸より收容されたる書簡の拔萃である、之には何等の論評を加ふることを要せぬ

「獨逸將校は屢々物資の掠奪を命じ且之を稱揚したり、而してそは軍事上の必要に依るに非ず、單に住民に對する威嚇手段として之を行ひたることを證明せらる。」英國調査委員の第五論決。

驚嘆すべき告白 吾人は先づ獨兵の書簡を拔萃することとする。

「村は上から下まで掠奪され荒らされた、獨軍の蠻行に就て傳へらるゝ所は結局或る點迄は實際である。」(第十軍團第七十八聯隊一兵卒の書簡より)。

「何から何まで悉く掠奪された」(近衛第一歩兵聯隊スピールマンの書簡より)。

「其日吾々は放火用爆彈を家々に投げ込んだ、夜は「今吾等は凡て神に感謝す」と云ふ歌を唱つた。(歩兵第百七十七聯隊モリッツ、グロッツセの書簡より)。

「村から村へと火焰に裏まれた」(第三バヴァリアン歩兵聯隊兵ライシャウプトの書簡より)。

「殆ど凡ての家を掠奪し且つ焼き拂つた」。(一千九百十四年八月二十三日第八師團歩兵第十聯隊下士ヘルマン、レヴィットの書簡より)。

「一千九百十四年十月十一日、吾々は一日に五六罐のシャンペンを飲んだ、下着は絹ばかりにした、下着の欲しい時は何の家へでも這入つて代へるばかりだ、家の中に誰か居ると必ず「ア、モシ最早何物もありません」といふ、けれども吾々には何物もないといふ言葉は通用しない、尤も憐れなる人々を見ると氣の毒の感が起るが、併し戦争である、致方がない」(騎兵フリッツ、ホールマンの書簡より)。

「メリエーに於ては暫くの間は何をも代價を拂つたことはなかつた、ビールは樽で運び込んだけれども之には徴

發見した、其上服の前部を引き裂かれ胃部は明かに銃劍を以て刺された、内臓は創口より露出して居つた。」

他の白耳義捕虜の嘗めたる辛酸 左に述ぶる如き事實は殆ど枚舉に暇あらずである。

「野戰第二十五聯隊の兵卒ブルムは獨兵に或る情報を告げることを強いられ熱湯中に手を入れられた。又た傍らに居た一兵は其首を徐々に曲げられて遂に首の骨が折るゝに至つた。」

「野戰第十八聯隊のボンサン中尉は其手を鐵線にて縛せられ銃殺された。」

「八月二十四日ルーヴァンに於て一兵卒は街燈の柱に吊られて銃殺された。」

「九月六日騎兵バーケラントは縛せられて銃劍を以て内臓を刳り出された、之れと同様のことは二人の輕騎兵に對しても爲された。」

「タミースに於て一士官は木に縛せられて其足に馬を繋ぎ、斯くして眞二つに引き裂かれた。」

「海牙條約第四條には「捕虜は人道を以て之を遇せざるからず」と規定してある、其第二十三條には「降服したる敵を殺し又は傷ぐることは特に之を禁ず」とある。

既に述べる如き幾多の恐るべき暴行の外に、尙ほ病院、衛生隊に加へたる攻撃、又た赤十字旗並に白旗を無視したること等に關しては、單に英國調査委員の報告中に現はれたる其證據事實の摘要（證據其物にあらず）のみにても二頁半に亘ることを云へば足ると思ふ。

## 第五 奪掠及放縱なる破壊



海牙條約第二十三條に曰く「敵の降服を承認せずとの宣言を爲すことは特に禁ず」と、然るに右の如き命令の發せられたるは確かなる事實として之を疑ふべくも無い、ステンゲル旅團（バーデン歩兵第百十二聯隊及第百四十二聯隊）より捕はれたる約三十人の獨兵捕虜が宣誓の上供述したる所に依れば、八月廿六日に右の日々命令が出されたのは事實であつて一部隊にはモーゼバッハ少佐之を傳へ又他の一部隊にはクルチウス中尉之を傳へた、是等捕虜の多數は該命令が果して實行されたるや否やは知らなかつた、併し其中三人は該命令がチアヴィユの森に於て實行されたのを見たと陳述して居る、此森にては獨軍の一大隊が助命したる負傷せる佛兵十一二人が殺されたのである。又他の二人は該命令がチアヴィユ道路に於て實行され、溝に陥り居たる若干の負傷兵は獨軍の一部隊に依つて發見され皆殺されて了つたことを陳述した。

**白耳義軍隊の戰慄すべき發見** 左の事實は白耳義調査委員報告書より拔萃せるものである。

「一人の自轉車狙撃兵の死體はオルスマエルに於て垣根に吊り下げられてあつた」

「八月廿三日、ナムールに於て獨兵はブリボシア博士の私立病院より自己の負傷者を運び去つたが、同時に入院中の白耳義兵二人と佛兵二人とを殺し且つ同病院に放火した。」

「パールベック附近の森の中に白耳義兵二十二人の死體が發見されたが、其中十八人は顔面に銃劍の創を負つて居た、併し此創は致命傷ではなく只逃走させぬだけの程度であつた、他の四人の白耳義兵の死體には致命的銃創があつたが、併し銃劍の創はなかつた」

「八月二十五日、野戰第二十四聯隊の兵卒ルーテンスは二人の白耳義兵が全武裝のまゝ木に縛せられて居るのを

「十二月二日、バザアリヤ軍は毫も敵を捕虜とせざることゝなつた」(近衛歩兵第二中隊軍、カー、バルテルの書簡より)

「八月廿四日、エルムトン村にて、少くも五百の捕虜は殺戮せられた、村は焼拂はれた、吾々は、麵麩、酒、牛酪及貯藏せる果實を見付けた、吾々は身に着いた血を洗い、又銃劍の血をも洗つた」(近衛第一聯隊附一兵卒の書簡より)

前に數々引明したる白耳義の大醫の報告中にも左の一節がある。

「自分が介抱した負傷者の中に非常に教育ある索遜の法學生が居た、此學生の話に依れば、其中隊では降服した英兵を悉く殺して了つた、そして獨逸士官は英兵の捕虜は一人もこしらへてはならぬと申渡した。」

**將軍の命令** 併し獨逸陸軍の行動を證する最も著るしき一例は一千九百十四年八月廿六日ステンゲル將軍が下したる左の命令が之を示すのである。

「今日以後我軍は敵を捕虜とすべからず、捕虜となりたる敵は全部之を殺すべし、負傷者は其武器を有すると否とに拘らず之を殺すべし、輸送の爲既に護送中にある捕虜をも之を殺すべし、我軍の後方には一人の敵なりとも生かし置くべからず。」

(自署) 中隊長中尉 ス ト イ

聯 隊 長 大 佐 ノイパウエル

第五十八旅團長少將 ステンゲル

## 驚くべき犯罪の自白

次に挙げたるは獨兵より收容せる書簡の拔萃であるが是に依つて獨兵の行爲の何たるかを知ることが出来る。

「負傷者を斬り苛むことは日々の行事となつて了つた(第九軍團工兵第九大隊ポール、ゴードの書簡より)(挿圖寫眞參照)

「吾々は捕虜の中自ら歩行し得るものは全部同行を命じた、併し頭部、肺等に負傷し起立すること能はざるものには尙一發の銃丸を與へて生命を縮めて遣つた(一千九百十四年八月廿八日第十一軍團第三十四狙撃兵聯隊フアーレンシュタインの書簡より)

「九月八日、日曜日、佛兵は負傷者の外は其降服せんとするものと雖も凡て之を殺すべしとの命令が下つた(第十八軍團歩兵第百十七聯隊下士ハインリヒ、フローチツヒの書簡より)

「敵兵の降服は許すべからず(第十六軍團歩兵第百四十四聯隊伍長ブフマン書簡より)

「大尉は我等をして圓陣を作らしめ、曰く、今吾々が攻め取らんとする砲壘には恐く英兵も居ると思はる、併し予は我が中隊に一人たりとも英兵の捕虜を見ることを好まぬ(第九軍團歩兵第八十五聯隊下士ゴエツチエの書簡より)

「吾々が敵に接近した時に敵は兩手を舉げて叫んだ、友よ我等を許せと、併し吾々は之を如何うすればよかつたか、吾々は敵を捕虜とすることを禁せられて居た。」(一千九百十四年十月五日、「コンスタンツェル、ツアイツング」紙に掲載せられたる獨兵の書簡より)



#### 第四 負傷兵及捕虜の殺戮

「獨軍は負傷兵及び捕虜を虐殺し、又た數々明らかに赤十字旗及徽章を無視し、且白旗の使用をも顧みざりしことを證明せらる」英國調査委員第四論決。

#### 勇壯なる事件

挿圖の中にはシレジャのヤウエルに於て發行せる獨逸新聞を復寫したるものがある、其表面の頁には第五百五十四聯隊第一中隊の一下士の書簡が載せてある、其文面は佛兵が樹上に隠れて獨兵に對し奇襲を行つたことで、元より此行爲は恰なく知らるゝ充分正當なる軍事上の處置であるが、獨兵は佛兵が負傷して倒るゝや皆之を殺したことを記してある、其一節に曰く、

「佛兵は醫者の手に掛けるまでもない吾々は毫も之を容赦せぬ吾々は負傷者を皆突き殺した、一人の佛兵は命を乞ふた、併し其身體は地に突き刺された、又予は物の壞れる如き音を耳にしたが、そは我一兵が銃床を以て切りに佛兵の禿頭を目掛けて打壞いて居るのであつた、我兵は賢くも自分の銃の損するを恐れて佛兵の銃を用ひて居た、佛兵等は苦しみ叫んで命を乞ふた、併し其負傷の輕重に拘らず、我勇敢なる射手は祖國をして多數の敵兵を養ふの費用を節せしめた。」

「夜に入りて」此等の獨兵の勇者は「感謝の祈禱を捧げたる後熟睡した」。右の書簡の終りには左の如き證明がある。

「正確なるを證明す、中隊長中尉デ、ニーム」

吾人は海牙條約第四十六條に規定せる「家族の名譽之を尊敬せざるべからず」と云ふ條項を再言せざるを得ない。

### 第二 人間の楯

「獨軍は往々戰時法規及び慣例を侵し、殊に住民をして婦人小兒をも加へて住民を軍の前面に立たしめ楯となりて進ましめたることを證明せらる」英國調査委員第三論決。

恐愕すべき事實 エッペゲムに於ては住民の男子殆ど全部は獨軍戰線の前面に立ちて進ませられた、次に示す所は他の方面に於ける同様の事例である。

「八月廿五日リヴェスの橋梁に於て獨軍は多數の婦人を其部隊の前面に立たしめた」

「八月廿九日ヘルートに於ては約五百の婦人小兒及二人の僧侶は獨軍に對する敵の攻撃を防禦すべく其前面に追ひ立てられた。」

「テルモンド攻撃の際獨軍は五人の婦女を合せて住民凡て十五人を戰線の前面に置いた。」

「ホフスタットに於ては獨軍は一婦人を裸體となし、銃劍を以て威喝しつゝ、白耳義軍の前線に向つて先頭に進ましめた。」

「八月十六日獨軍は一少女を裸體となし追撃に際し此娘の父と共に相並んで隊の前面に歩ましめた。」

海牙條約第二十三條に曰く、敵國に屬する個人を不法に殺戮し又は負傷せしむることは特に之を禁ず」と。

酔して居たる彼は胸と腕とに黄色の參謀肩章を掛けて居た、他の士官は尙も飲み且つ歌ひ、主婦の殺されたことなどは少しも氣にも止めぬ様子であつた、主婦を殺した士官は主人を呼び出し墓を堀つて埋めて遣れと命じた、そこで主人と其士官とは庭へ出掛けて行つた、士官は主人に拳銃を向けて喝して居た、主人は止むを得ず穴を掘り主婦を埋めた、主婦が殺される前に兵士等は拳銃を鏡や窓硝子に向けて放つて居た、何故に主婦が殺されたかは予には分らぬ、主婦を殺した士官は只だ歌つてばかり居た。

### 米國一女醫の調査の結果

紐育婦人病院の女醫エリザベス、ジーヴァン、スライク女史の記述する所

に依れば、女史が始め米國赤十字隊と共に歐洲に渡航せんとするときは、獨兵慘虐の報告は全然之を信用することが出来なかつたが併し女史は自ら之を調査することに決した、而して女史が報告する所は左の如くである。

「自分は、獨兵の爲に恐るべき凌辱を受けたる幾多の婦人に會つた、一人は四十歳の女であるが實に筆紙に盡し難き状態に在つた、又此婦人の二人の娘は虐殺された、自分は米國の婦人が此事の眞想を知られんことを望むのである、佛國及白耳義の領土内に於て、獨兵に侵入せられたる部分にては凌辱を免れたる婦人は眞に稀である、慘虐に關する報道は事實である、自分は親しく調査して之を知つたのである、此問題に關しては自分は如何に之を特筆大書しても尙及ばざるを恐るゝのである。」

右の傍點を附せる事實は眞に驚くべきであつて始めて之を聞いても容易に信せられぬ程である、併し此事實は只だタツクイン博士の記述せる所を確むるに過ぎぬのである。



のである。」

「予の親友の一人に、今軍隊に居る佛語を談す人がある、予はウィツツシェートに行つた時、食物を料理する爲めに此友人と一所に村の或る家に這入つた、其家には三十五歳ばかりの女が居つた、此女の語る所に依れば其夫と一人の子とは戦死し、其一家は獨逸のウーラン兵が這入り込んで金子から所持品悉皆を奪ひ取り、家具を破壊し、剩へ此女を辱しめたと云ふことである、吾々が此家に居る處へ同じ棟續きに住んで居る他の二婦人も來會して吾々に語つた處に依れば、村中の婦人は殆ど一人残らず辱しめられたと云ふ。」

士官の犯罪の數々　士官も亦た是等犯罪者の中にあるといふ事例は左の如くである。

「男子が皆殺されたる後予は軍隊が大學街の家々から婦人や少女を連れ出すのを見た、約二十人計りを連れ出された、婦人等は皆腕を捉へられて居た、皆逃れやうと悶搔いた、其時此中の十五人程が辱しめられた、一人が約十二人程の兵に辱められたのである、此行爲を約七十人の兵が周圍から見物して居たが其中には五人の青年士官が居た、元と此士官が卒先して此行爲を始めたのである、其間は約一時間半に亘つた、婦人等の多くは氣絶して、全く死んだやうで有つた、赤十字團が之を介抱して病院に送つた。

「士官は予にシャンペン酒を持ち來れと命じた、予は十罐を差出した、その後で今少し差出せと命じて、尙五六人の士官と三四人の兵を招いた、彼等は罐の口を打ち破つて飲んだ、其内に一同は全く泥酔して最早飲むことは出来ないのに罐の口を打破つては次の代りを差出させた、丁度其處へ主婦が顔を出した、之を見て、床に酔ひ仆れ居たる一士官は猛然と起き上りピストルを取出して主婦の鬢に當て、一發の下に撃ち殺した、此士官は全然泥

て居る、吾々は娘を附近の半は破壊されたる家屋に運び身體を少し洗ひなどして漸く生氣附かした、娘が語る所に依れば、此森から約八百碼程距たれる燒拂はれたる一村から拉し來られ、森の中にて六人か七人の獨兵に辱められたのである、娘の身體の下部は抓傷其他の痕跡にて蔽はれて居た。」

「彼處にては住民は皆教會堂に閉ぢ込められた、其中に予は某婦人を見たが此女は狂暴の狀態にあつた、吾々が教會堂に集まつて居る處へ數人の獨兵がやつて來た、女は獨兵を見るや否や高聲で言つた、其罵詈の中に自身か五人の獨兵に森の中へ連れ行かれ其五人の爲に辱められたことを明言した、之を聞いた獨兵は大に怒つて女を捕へ手足を縛して動けぬやうにした、獨兵が茲を立去つた後に女はルーヴァンの一療養院に送られた。」

「トレメル附近に於ては予は一婦人が四人の獨兵に捕へられたのを見た、獨兵は此婦人を藪の中へ連れ行き之れを辱めた、自分は之れを目撃せるも手に何等の武器を持たざりしゆゑ兵の爲すがまゝに任すの外はなかつた、女は悶躁き悲鳴を擧げた、最後に獨兵は立去つたので自分は近寄つたが、此婦人は見るも無慘の狀態にあつた、婦人は叫び悶へ悲しんだ、婦人は其爪を可成り深く一獨兵の身體に突き立てたと余に語つた、實際婦人の爪には獨兵の皮膚や血が澤山着いて居た、余は出来る丈け婦人を慰めて此場を立去つた、婦人は此土地のものであると云ふ。」

「九月十七日に予はブラッセルからゲントに行く路上にてアントワープの某貴婦人に會つた、予はアントワープに在る予の母に一通の手紙を届けるやうに此婦人に頼んだので婦人は之を届けて呉れた、後に余の母から聞く所に依れば、此貴婦人は獨兵に辱められた話を母にしたとのことであるが、此話は予も亦た前に婦人から聞いて居

「ハインに行く道にて予は二人の婦人に逢ふた、二人共予の知己である、其一人は其家にて獨兵に辱められたと予に語つた、他の一人も亦た同じことを語つた、三人は辱めを受けた時一處に居たのである、そして多數の獨兵に辱められたのである、又た其夫は二人が辱められた後に銃殺されたとのことである。」

「又余が歸路に就いた時に隣人たる某夫人に會つた、其語る處に依れば獨兵數人は此夫人の一人の娘を姦する爲に之を屋根裏へ追ひ上げた、此娘は妊娠八ヶ月半であつたのに拘らず二人の獨兵に辱められた、翌日子供は生れた當時母なる夫人も續いて屋根裏へ上らうとしたけれども獨兵は銃劍を突き付けて上らせなかつた、同じ日に十六歳の某少女が余に語つた處に依れば此娘は二人の獨兵に辱められたとのことである、又予がアンスに於けるリエージュ郊外の飛行場を通過中二十八歳か三十歳と思はるゝ一婦人が赤裸にて木に縛り着けられ、其足下には三四歳と思しき二人の小供が倒れて居るのを見た、三人共に慘殺せられて居た、女の胸は血だらけに成つて居り身體には黒き痕跡があつた、小供の方は銃劍で突き殺されたりしき創痕が見へた、又女の衣服はあたりに散亂して居た。」

「夜半に四人の兵士は歸り來つた、其中の二人は男子が居るか否かを確むる爲に厩の方を搜索した、其後四人は自分の姑と嫂とを辱めた、兵士は二人の婦人を辱める前に拳銃を突き附けて喝した、嫂は生後四ヶ月の嬰兒を抱いて居たのである。」

「我々は苦悶の聲を聞き、次で數人の獨兵が走り去るのを見た、そこで苦悶の聲の聞える森の中に這入て見ると一人の若い娘が赤裸にて地に仆れて居て身體は抓傷だらけに成つて居た、娘は氣絶して居り、衣服は其下になつ



南米僧侶ガマル氏の記す所に依れば、コルベック、ルーに於ては「獨兵は男女を裸體となし相對して立たしめ、然る後之を走らせ、其走る間に銃殺した」とある。

士官も兵卒と同様に悪虐　タックイン博士は左の如く記して居る。

「獸行の例は頻々たるもので、恐く之を免れたる處は、あるまい。暴れ狂つて意に従はざる婦人少女等は兵士が之を組伏せて居て士官等の慰みに供した場合も多い、又た辱められたる婦人の夫、母、子供等の家族は手足を縛られて面前に行はるゝ獸行を見せ付けられたのも屢々のことであつた。」

「ブラッセルに於ては市長マックス氏自ら料理店に赴いて獨逸士官の見るに忍びざる亂醉騒ぎを止め廻はつたのである、シャルロアに於ても亦た同様の状態であつた、甚しきは獨逸士官は窓掛を閉づる事さへもせず平氣で醜態を演じて居たことである。

「妊娠して居る婦人さへも見免されなかつた、而して其夫や子女の面前にて此憂目に逢ふと云ふ一層の苦痛を受けることも稀ではなかつたのである。レームスドンクに近きオブデンベルグに於ては一人の父は十人の獨兵が其娘等に對し交るゝ辱むるを目撃するの外はなかつた。」

「又アントワープ附近の田舎の或る家にては獨兵の言ふなりに何事をも爲した、食事の時には主人は椅子に縛り着けられ、其娘二人は赤裸にされ、裸のまゝ給仕をさせられた、士官等が此娘等を辱めた後、可憐なる娘等は兵士等の方へ追ひ遣られた、此娘の一人は自殺し、一人は發狂した。」

恐ろしき事例の數々　左の八度の事例は英國調査委員報告書の處々より拔萃したるものである。

「リソンジ附近に於てマルブルグと稱ぶ一斥候兵は「三人の婦女を縦隊に立たせて置いて只一發に之を銃殺した」とある。

又た次の事實は白耳義調査委員が其報告書に採録せる處である。

「八月三十日に、獨逸輕騎兵の斥候隊は七十四歳の老婦人カザリン、ヴァン、ケルコーヴなるものを試みに其生命を絶たずに、出來得る丈多く射撃を加へて樂んだ。

「八月廿六日に、獨逸豫備步兵第四十八聯隊はエレウエイトを占領した、同地の若い娘の殆ど全部は其兩親等の面前にて姦された。

「ペイゲムに於ては、クーメル中尉の指揮下にある兵は妙齡の一婦人を拉し來り教會堂に赴き其僧侶と其妹との面前にて殊に恐るべき狀態の下に右の婦人を辱めた。

「佛軍の到着したる第一國境村落の某處にては戰鬪の第一日に於て五十人の婦人が裸體のまゝ農舎の長き壁に縛されて居たのを佛兵が發見した、獨兵等は此等の婦人の足の方から徐々に上部に撃ち上げて遂に死に至らしめたのである。

「レツフェーの教會堂には多數の婦人が捕虜となつて居た、其三日目に婦人等は何程の金を出せば解放さるべきやを尋ねた、獨軍は之に答へて三萬法を要求した、そこで此等の婦人は一萬五千法を集金して差出し憐みを乞ふた獨軍は此金を取り上げた上、婦人等全部を銃殺すべしと宣言した、結局婦人等は皆解放されたが、大部分は言ふに忍びざる凌辱を蒙つたのである」

胸に擬して居た。」(書簡の寫眞參照)

海牙平和條約第四十六條に家族の名譽及權利、個人の生命及私有財産は之を尊重せざるべからず」と規定してある。

## 第二 婦人に對する狼藉

獨兵は婦女を姦したることを證明せらる。英國調査委員第二論決。

最早人にあらず野獸なり 獨兵の無名の一手帳(書簡寫眞の内に挿入)には其の第一頁に左の如く記す。

「ランゲヴィレラ(獨兵は恐らく此地名を誤記せるらし、ロンゲヴィルの事ならん)にて、八月廿二日、此村は工兵第十一大隊によりて破壊された、三名の婦人は木に吊り下げられた。(書簡寫眞參照)

此手帳の最後の第十頁には尙ほ左の如き戰慄すべき事實が記載されて居る。

「斯の如く我等は八軒の家を破壊し、居住者を殺したのである、其中の一軒にては、二人の男と其妻と十八歳の處女とを銃劍で突き殺した、此娘の無邪氣なる顔色を見ては自分も憐れに思はざるを得なかつたが併し逆ても多數兵士を制することが出来なかつた、兵士は實際興憤して居た、斯る場合には最早人間ではなく猛獸であつたからである」と。

第百十八索遜聯隊の一士官の報告に



「家屋の焼却せられざるものは掠奪を蒙り、殊に残虐なる狼藉を加へらるゝのが常であつた、家具の中にて他へ運び去ることの出来ぬものは皆破壊された、廣間階段及庭園には酒の空罎が散亂して居た、寢臺の藁布團は切り裂かれ敷布は汚されずたゞに切り散らされた、食堂の火爐の邊りには硝子コップの破片が散亂して居る、ピヤノは踏み壊され居た、目星し家は何處も同様の亂暴狼籍を蒙つた、獨兵は到る所嫌惡すべき逸樂と不潔との痕跡を止めた。」

### 見様見真似

予は次の如き事實は茲に語るに忍びないと思ふ、併し是れは一中立國人の實見談である。

「千九百十四年十月九日、ランデン停車場に於て重傷を負ひたる三人の英兵が畜類輸送用貨車に横臥して居るのを二三百人の獨兵が周圍から取巻いて居た、此英兵は暫く食事を取らぬので餓へて居た、獨兵は交々湯氣の立つて居る肉溫汁を此餓にたる英兵の鼻の先に差し出しては「食いたいだらう豚め」と叫び、又「何か呉れやう、英兵には死を呉れやう、殺して仕舞へ」などと、連呼して遂に銃を以て擲り殺した、又或る兵は英兵の衣服や顔に唾を吐き掛けた。」とは白耳義に止ること四ヶ月にして其見聞記を著して居る蘭人モクヅエルド氏の言である。

次に示す書簡は、豫備歩兵第十二聯隊(第一豫備軍團)の一兵卒の懷中より收容たれたるものである、

「予は起る可らざる事實の遂に起るに至りしことを茲に記述するの止むを得ざるを遺憾とする、併し我軍の中にも最早人間でなく、全く敬虔の念なき畜生に等しき暴漢が存在するのである、是等の暴漢の一人は閉されたる聖壇に闖入し排泄物を以て聖餐品を汚した、何たる罰當りであらふ、又昨夜は三十五歳の有妻者なる國民軍の兵は其營舎せる家の娘を姦せんとした、此娘はまだ子供であつた、其父は之を妨げんとしたので此兵は銃劍の尖を父の

「又一僧侶は其教會の婦人等の面前にて赤裸にて大砲に縛り附けられた儘大砲は發射された。」

又々市長の虐殺 茲に予は白耳義人が受けたる苛酷の好適例として遭難者の親戚より直接耳にせる事實

を述ぶることとする。或一小村に於て獨軍は住民に午後七時後の外出を禁止したが、同時に多量の食料發發を行つた。市長たるエム、ビルメー氏は其發發の爲に最善を盡さんと終日奔走して村民を説き廻つたが其終日の劇務に忙殺され、七時を稍後れて家に歸りたる爲め、其家の戸口に於て銃殺された。其子息の十四五歳なるが父を扶けん爲に出て來たので、是れ亦撃たれた。併し即死はしなかつた。此少年の母が少年を扶け入れんが爲に出で來つたのを見て、獨兵は慘酷にも夫人が家より出づることを許さず、朝に及んだので少年は遂に死して夫人は終夜其子の苦悶と救を求むる叫びとを聞いて居たのである。」

更らに獨兵の自白 右の外左の二節は獨兵の書簡より拔萃せるものである。

「村落の外にも少數の住民が居た、中尉と予とは住民を少し射殺した後、シャンペン二三罇を飲み干した。(第八豫備輕騎兵グスタフ、シヨツバーの書簡より)」

「我等は富有なる一住民の家屋に侵入し幾多の室を通り抜けた處、主人の死骸が床上に倒れて居た、我兵は室内にてヴァンダル人の暴れたる如く、手當り次第に種々の物品を破壊し、又た戸外に於ては、村の中にて銃殺される住民の光景其慘狀筆紙の盡す所ではなかつた。(一千九百十四年八月廿三日第百七十八聯隊索遜の一士官の書簡より)」

士官の行爲 殺人行爲以外の暴行に關してはタツクイン博士の認識する左の適例がある。

骸は尙針と絲とを手につつまゝであつた。又其傍に一婦人と其子なる十六歳の少年とが銃劍の創を受けて死んで居た。又縊り殺されたる男子の死骸も其傍にあつた。

「センプストに於ては膝から下を兩足共切り離したる死骸及兩腕と兩足とを切り離したる死骸を發見した。双方共半ばは焼けて居た、又他の一職工は石油の中に浸されたる後火炎の中へ投げ込まれた。

「八月廿六日、マリーヌより程遠からぬ所にて一老人が兩手を縛られて其農舎の梁に釣下げられて居るのが發見されたが、身體は殆ど黒焦けになつて居た。又十五歳の少年が後手に縛られ銃劍にて突き殺されて居た。」

**獨逸一士官の惡虐なる行爲** 白耳義國王の侍醫なるタックイン博士が自己の見聞より採録せる處は左の如くである。

「怖ろしき有様に死骸を積み重ね、斯くて獨軍の一士官は併かも生ける一小兒を連れ來りて、其頂上に載せ小兒の兩足を死骸の間に挟み、而して此恐るべき光景を寫眞に撮影した。

「一人の母は小兒を抱きて街上へ遁げ出した、然るに其小兒は遂に母の目前にて殺され、獨兵等は此母をして其子を埋葬せしめて其周圍より之を見物して喜んで居た。

「ペトリツクスに於ては獨兵等は一青年と一少女とを其親の目前にて銃殺し、其後双方の死骸を裸體となして結び付け、藁に包みて焼き棄てた。

「クアレニヨン及びブルージに於ては砲兵等は住民を捕へ來りて其巨大なる攻城砲に縛り附け頓て遠距離より電力發火により發射した。其振動の爲に此等の不幸なる住民等は鼓膜を破られ非常の痛苦を嘗めた。



く銃殺されたのである。

醫師の物語れる慘事の模様 前にも述べた白耳義の醫師は獨兵の一般的暴行の適例なりとして、次の

事件を擧げて居る。

「獨兵等は無慈悲にも老人等を捕へて銃劍を以て突いたり切つたりした。

「子は一老人が獨兵の乞を容れず其牝牛を差出すのを吝んだ廉を以て身體三箇所に銃彈を受けて苦んで居るのを手當したことがある。

「又予が手當した一少年は獨兵の爲に言ふに忍びざる目に逢つたのである。

「或る貧しき老婦人は抱て居る子供を殺されたことを泣て予に語つた。」

焚殺されたる白耳義人 白耳義調査委員は次の事實を記録して居る。

「モーレンステッド附近に於て其娘を極力保護せんとしたる廉にて九十歳になる一老人は獨兵の爲に木に縛り附けられ生ながら藁にて焼かれた。

「ピンに於て二人の少年は獨軍ウーラン兵が行進するのを路傍にて見て居たる處、ウーラン兵は之に近寄つて二人を其馬に縛り附け、少年が死するまで早駈けをやつた。

「センプストに於ては獨兵は一少年を捕へ、初めに腕を切り取り、後に首を刎ね残りの死體を焼け居る家の中へ投げ込んだ。

「八月二十五日ホーフスタードに於て白耳義軍隊は一老婦人が銃劍にて突き殺されて居る死骸を發見した。此死

書簡より)

僧侶に對する暴行 僧侶を殺戮したる場合は前章に於て數々記述した所である。茲には前にも引用した

ことがある南米の僧侶の認識せる暴行の實例二三を舉げる。

「コルベック、ルーに於ては老牧師と他の二三の僧侶及信徒とを裸體にして豚小屋に縛り附け獨兵等は『豚は豚づれ』と囃し立て、嘲弄した。

「ブーケンの僧侶は鼻と耳とを切り取られ、後に銃殺された。

「シャツフェルの一僧侶は綱を以て高き木に縛り付けられ、そして其綱を切つて落されたること三回に及んだ。

「又ボーヴェン、ルーに於ては獨兵等は寺の高塔に攀登り其處から住民を銃殺した。獨兵は塔より下り來つて僧侶に塔から住民を銃殺したるは自分なりと明言せよと迫つたが、僧侶は之を拒んだので銃殺された。」

信ぜられざる蠻行 英國調査委員の報告書には左の一節がある。

「エーヤシヨットに於ては一僧侶は兩手を頭上に高く差し上げつゝ壁の前に立たされ、疲勞して其手を少しにても下けるときは、獨兵は銃床を以て脚を打ち叩いた。僧侶は此狀態に於て數時間立たされたが、獨兵の此處を通過するものは、此僧侶の身體を便所と心得、連りに大小便を掛けた。後遂に之を銃殺してしまつた。」

右と同様なる報告は僧侶のガマルラ氏からも來て居るのである。

白耳義の一教授も天主教派一僧侶の死に關してガマルラ氏と同様の報告を爲して居る。此僧侶は其懷中せる手帳にルーヴァン大學圖書館の燒拂に關し、「比較的穩當」なる意見を記してあつたのが分かつて、何等の訊問もな

## 第十一章 論決の根據となれる實證

### 第一 慎重に且組織的に企圖されたる虐殺、殺戮及暴行

「白耳義の各所に於て獨軍は住民の虐殺を豫定計畫に依り組織的に行ひ加之其他多數の殺人行爲及個々の暴行を行ひ、且又戰鬪の一般行爲に於て獨軍は多數無辜の住民男女を殺戮したることを證明せらる。」英國調査委員第一論決。

獨兵の書簡より ルーヴアン、タミース、デナン、アンデンヌ、ヌエーヤシヨット及ナムールの場合に於て豫定計畫に依り組織的に企圖されたる虐殺の充分なる證據は既に舉がつて居る。故に茲には其他の殺人行爲及個々の暴行を舉ぐれば足るのである。今獨兵の死骸より發見されたるもの、又は捕虜より得たる獨兵の書簡の一節を左に拔萃する。

「恐るべき殺戮。村は焼き盡されて佛人等は焼けて居る家に投げ込まれた。」(千九百十四年九月三日附第八軍團ハツセマールの書簡より)

「町の住民三百人は銃殺せられた。生き残つたものは墓穴を掘る役目を命ぜられた。」(千九百十四年八月二十五日野戰砲兵第四聯隊第三中隊豫備隊シュラウテルの書簡より)

「住民は皆村を逃げ出した、其光景たるや眞に恐るべきものであつた。死人の中には多數の老人男女があつた、又た妊娠せる婦人と三人の子供とは一處になつて押し潰されて居た。」(近衛歩兵第一旅團ポールス、ビールマンの



「左の事實に關しては、絶對的な確證あり、乃ち

「殺人行爲、悖德行爲及掠奪は過去三世紀間、文明國人の間に起れる戰爭に於て未曾有の程度を以て白耳義の各所に行はれたり、殊に

第一、「白耳義の各所に於て獨軍は住民の虐殺を豫定計畫に依り組織的に行ひ加之其他多數の殺人行爲及び個々の暴行を行ひ、且又戰鬪の一般行爲に於て多數無辜の住民男女を殺戮したることを證明せらる。

第二、「獨軍は婦女を姦したることを證明せらる。

第三、「獨軍は往々戰時法規及び慣例を侵し、殊に婦女小兒をも加へて住民を軍の前面に立たしめ楯と爲りて進ましめたることを證明せらる。

第四、「獨軍は負傷せる捕虜を虐殺し又屢々明らさまに赤十字旗及徽章を無視し且白旗の使用をも顧みざりしことを證明せらる。

第五、「獨軍將校は屢々物質の掠奪を命じ且之を稱揚したり、而してそは軍事上の必要に依るに非ず單に住民に對する威嚇手段として之を行ひたることを證明せらる。

第六、「獨軍將校は放火及私有財産の破壊を命じ又は之を稱揚し、獨逸軍事官憲は開戰の當初に於て放火の方法に關する規定を制定し、且屢々行はれたる破壊行爲は軍事上の必要に依るに非ずして威嚇手段として之を用ひたるものなることを證明せらる。」

次章に於て、此等の六箇條の論決と之が適例たる事件とを並記することとする。

## 第十章 英國調査委員の戰慄すべき論決、「絶對的確證ある」七件の戰時法規侵害

犯罪の申立と處罰の現状 今假りに土民蜂起に對する正當防壓手段なりと云ふ獨逸側の論據を、是認するのではなく只だ、想定として一時考へて見たい。

ナムールの僧正が昨年起述せる處に、

「都市或は村落の破壊に於て其個々の場合を詳細に調査し、又は住民を訊問したる結果、處罰の度が獨軍の主張する罪狀に比し甚だしく重きに失して居ることが分かつて、其爲めに獨軍の言分は逆も正當と云はれないことになつた」とある。

吾人にはルーヴァン、タミース、デナン、アンデンヌ、エーヤシヨット及ナムールの六箇市に起つた事件は既に分かつたが、併し是等は獨逸が白耳義侵入に依て起つた慘劇の僅に一部分に過ぎぬのである。

調査委員の論決 本書にても又は他の書籍にても、白耳義調査委員の二十二卷に亘る報告書、英國及佛國

調査委員の報告書及び中立國の觀察者が送りたる多數の書簡と記録等に現はれたる悲惨なる事項を悉く掲載することは不可能である、只だ吾人に爲し得ることは英國調査委員が研究したる七箇條の論決を採録すれば足りると思ふ、右の英國調査委員の主任としては英國に於て最も公明なりと稱せられ、嘗ては駐米英國大使たり、又英國内閣員たり、加之卓絶せる歴史家たるブライス子爵を委員長として調査を行ふたのである。吾人は是等の七箇條の論決と此論決の根據とされたる二三の事例を各論決に對して附記することゝする、左に掲ぐるは此論決である。

人の小兒が之に取絶つて泣いて居るのがあつた。男女を合して五六十人が斯の如くにして命を取られた。

或る獨逸士官は言つた、「爾等は凡て銃殺される筈である、何となれば十五歳の一少女が獨軍に發銃したからだ、けれども、軍法會議の結果男子のみ銃殺さるゝことゝなつたのだ」と、それで男子十八人が一列に立たせられた、其中には十六歳と十七歳の少年二人があつた。一人の若い獨兵は流石に此光景の慘たるに感動して涙を流して居た、婦女子等は口々に「妾をも打ち殺せ、夫と共に打ち殺せ」と叫んだ、又年少のアンリ、ジャックと呼ぶものは力なげに僧侶の一人に身を扶けられて居た（此一群中には四人の僧侶と一人の醫師があつた）、右の若者は泣乍ら「僕はまだ若いから、逆ても勇敢に死に着くことは出來ぬ」と語りつゝけて居た。やがて兵士等が發銃すると此等の人々は押し重なつて仆れた、其中の數名は銃床で頭骸骨を打ち碎かれて漸く息絶へた、此一群の中にスリスの僧侶も居た。此虐殺の後獨兵は死骸から所持品を掠奪した、乃ち時計、指環、錢入、財布等を取つたのである。

此村は「残る限なく掠奪された。」百三十一戸の民家の中破壊を免れたるは僅に八戸であつた。



た後に、ナムール市及び其附近十七個の自治團は三千二百萬法の罰金を課せられた。

### 亂酔せる獨逸將校

ナムール全州に亘りて男子、婦女、小兒を合して虐殺せられたるもの二千人に達し

たとのことである、同州内のハステールと稱する一村落に於ては、獨兵の侵入に際し赤十字社に屬する一醫員は捕縛され銃殺せられた、斯くして獨兵等は

「街路を横りて一屠獸者の家に至り、主人と妻子を家より逐ひ出し、且つ主人と其長男とを銃殺した、次に獨兵はジュール、リフオンなるもの、農舍に赴き此農夫が其娘と共に隠れ居たる地下室より引き出して之を銃殺し、更にボドソンなる農夫と其二子と他に十人を銃殺した、獨兵は次に其村を暴らし廻つて家屋の大部分を焼き拂つた、其教區の僧侶と其義弟にして大學教授なるものと其妻と娘、學校長と其妻と家族及び其他の住民は教會堂の地下室内に隠れ居たるを、獨軍は之に對し窓より射撃し一同を止むを得ず地下室より出て來らしめた、一同は獨逸將校の面前に引き出されたが將校の中には亂酔せるものもあつた、婦女は男子より引き離され、僧侶、教授、學校長及他の男子は銃殺された、其死骸は路上に仆れた儘であつた。」

妾をも打ち殺せ 同州のスリースと稱する一村落に起りし事柄は左の如くである。

極めて從順なる若干の人々は銃殺された。シャル、コロと呼ぶ八十八歳の老人は家から出て來る所を撃たれた、獨兵等は此老人の死骸を毛布に包みて之に火を附けた。又ビエローと呼ぶ人は其家の焼くる中より其繼母を救ひ出した處を近距離から銃殺された。又ブルニオーと呼ぶ一書記（此人の子息の一人は此の少し前に僧侶となつた）と此人の子息とはブルニオー夫人の目前で銃殺された。又或る庭園内には一人の婦人が殺されて二

の多きに達し、其の中の七個は婦人であつたことである。

## 第六 ナムールに於ける二千人の虐殺

事實の主張と其辯解 ナムール市は砲撃の後獨軍の手に歸した、古領の翌日軍隊は市公會堂に放火し、其蒐集せる名畫と共に此建物は灰燼に歸した、市の消防隊長は消火に盡力せんとして捕縛された、獨軍側の口實とする所は、獨軍に對し發銃したものがあつたとのことであつた、但し此件に關し白耳義政府の言ふ所は單に左の如くである。

「市民は十五日前に於て已に其有する銃器を官憲に引き渡した、市民は官憲の揭示に依り、戰時法規の何物なるかを知らしめられ、又民政及軍政官憲、牧師、又た新聞紙の記事により、戰鬪に参加すべからざるを告げられた、白耳義軍隊は放火の始まれる三十六時間以前に市街を撤退した、人民の中若し二三武器を有するものありしとするも、其狂者に非ざる限りは市街及び市の附近に集合し其要路を扼せる軍隊に發銃する如きことは有り得べからざる處である、然るに市民が發銃を企てたと稱せらるゝ五個の地點には獨兵が已に同市を燒くに必要なる放火用の材料を手にして居た事實は何事を語るか。ナムール市に於ける出來事は獨逸軍隊が習慣的に行ひ來つた大規模の蠻行の一端を示すに過ぎない。」

數日間に亘りて民家は掠奪され、一市民は其所有の家具が獨軍の車輛に依りて獨逸に運ばるゝを見た、多數の婦人少女等は凌辱せられた、七十五人の者は燃燒する家屋内にて銃殺され又は燒死した、そして斯種の慘害を蒙つ

は如何なる手段を以てしても之に敬禮を爲さしむべきことを豫期せざるべからず」と。

## 第五 エーヤシヨットの死體發掘

塹壕に連れ行がれ銃殺せらる エーヤシヨットの虐殺に關しては和蘭人エル、エチ、グロンデス教授が其實地に臨みて調査を行つて居る。此調査の結果次の事實が判明した、乃ち此地を占領したる獨軍の司令官は市長の邸宅の椽側に出で、歡待を受くる間に、市場方面には獨兵が充滿して居た、此時の兵士の状態は如何であつたかと云へば其後獨兵の死骸から收容された書簡（其寫しは著者の手にあり）の中にエーヤシヨットの事件を記してあるに依りて之を推測することが出来る、即ち、「予の生涯の中で茲で飲んだ程多量の酒を飲むことは又と出来まい」と書いて居る。此時不意に何の理由もなく銃を發射したものがあつた、忽ち兵士等は精神を失つて民家に對し射撃を始めた、所が其銃彈が市長宅の椽側に居た司令官に命中して其場に仆れた。此時地下室に隠れて居た市長、妻、弟及子息は直ちに引き出され捕縛された。又一僧侶も共に捕縛された。此等を合せて「何等罪なきもの三十人の一團は塹壕に連れ行かれ銃殺された、只一人モンメムスなる人は死骸を埋むる手傳をする爲に助けられた。手傳が濟んだ後、モンメムスはルーヴァンに赴き其目撃したる慘事を同地の人に語り聞かせよと命ぜられた。乃ち此人の話に依つてルーヴァン市を震駭させやうと計つたことは疑ふの餘地がない。」

但し是れはほんの序幕であつて、其他に如何なる慘事が演ぜられたかに關しては左の一事を記せば足る、乃ち前に述べた如き慘事が續々演ぜられて、後日に至りエーヤシヨットに於て掘出された市民の死骸の數は百五十五個



等かの騷擾起りたる時は銃殺せらるべし。獨逸國軍隊に對して犯せる罪はナムール全市（其中の各住民）を擧げて之を償ふべきものとすと云ふのである。」

併し此宣言書は決して獨軍に取りて奇とすべきものではない、フォン、ニーベル中將は八月廿七日にワーブルの市長に對し、即時に二百萬法の出金を命じ、若し此金額にして支拂はれざるときは、市街は破壊せられ焼却せらるべく、無辜の住民も罪あるものと共に苦まざるべからず」と宣言した（ワーブルに於ては五十戸焼却せられた獨軍の口實は市民が獨軍に發銃したりといふにあるも醫師の調査に依れば獨兵の負傷は獨兵の發射せる彈丸に依るものなること證明せられた）ではないか。又フォン、デル、ゴルツ元帥は十月五日附を以てブラッセルに於て發したる宣言書に於て、若し電信又は鐵道の交通に妨害を加ふるものあるときは、凡ての住民は「容赦なく罰せられ、無辜のものも罪あるものと同じく苦しまざるべからず」と言つて居るではないか。

**獨軍に對する敬禮** 獨兵の横暴は單に之のみではない、獨兵は恣に住民を銃殺し、事の細大を問はず凡て死の刑罰を下した、例へば一千九百十四年八月八日グリヴェニエーに於て大隊長ビークマン中佐は宣言書を發し石油の存在を届出でざるもの、其家屋に點燈せざるもの、又人質にして二十四時間の交代時間を終はるも其次の二十四時間人質たるべき交代者の來らざるときは凡て死刑に處すべしと威嚇した、此宣言書の條項は皆著書の手許にあるが、殊に其第八條は是非共茲に引用しなければならぬのである。

「凡ての市民は脱帽、又は舉手に依つて獨逸將校に對し敬意を表すべきことを予は命ずるものなり、將校なるか兵卒なるかに就き疑はしきときは獨逸兵卒に對しても皆敬禮すべし、若し此規定を無視するものある時は、軍隊

(白耳義の歩兵聯隊は橋梁を破壊した)、附近の墜道の閉塞、白耳義軍隊が爲せる抵抗等が此虐殺の原因となつたのであると云ふ人もあるが、只だ何れも抗議する處は、獨逸が斯る行爲に出づる口實となるやうなことは何も起らなかつたことである。

**慘死の状態** 「後に死骸を發掘し其人名の判明したるもの、第一表」には百三名の姓名が記されて居る、其中の數名は若年者である、十四歳の一少女に關して記されたる處は、此少女は、二十人の獨兵の爲に姦せられたる後に、殺されたと云ふことである。

此等の殺戮されたる若年者に對し獨兵の慘酷極まりき一例として左の如く記されて居る、曰く  
「ヴレール、ギレットなる一醫學生は獨兵に強られて其父と叔父との死骸を地下室から搬出した。」  
又ジョセフ、ワルグラフなる人は其首を刎ねられ、首は「今燃へて居る我家の中に投げ込まれた。」  
斯る悲慘なる運命に際しても勇敢なる態度を持して居た光景が思ひ浮べらるゝは次の一例である。

「フェルデナン、フロアドビスと云へる八十六歳になる獨立して生計を營める者國歌を歌ひ乍ら殺された。」

**獨軍司令官の心理** 元來アンデンヌを燒棄し、「其住民百餘名」を銃殺せることはフォン、ビュロー將軍の承諾を経て行つたものであることは將軍が其宣言書に於て之を是認して居るに徴しても明である、茲に此將軍の性格の一端を知るに足るものとしては、アンデンヌ虐殺後數日を経て將軍がナムールに於て發したる宣言書の中に述べて居る處は、

「街路は獨逸守備兵之を支持すべく、該守備兵は一街毎に十名の人質を有すべし、此等の人質は若し其街路に何

て居るものは一人もなかつた、或る一人は獨軍や白耳義軍の使用した空虛の彈藥莢を懷中して居たので、直に別にされた、又手に負傷をして居た靴直職人も別にされた、而かも此傷は一ヶ月も前の傷である、或る器械技師は其衣囊に螺旋拔を所持して居た爲め之も武器と見做されて別にされた、又中には此等の光景を見て如何にも獨兵を侮辱する如き顔付きに見ゆるとの理由にて捕へられたのもあつたやうである、此等のものは皆群集の面前で銃殺されたが何れも勇敢なる最期を遂げた。

「其後、獨兵は將校の命令に依り、群集の中より尙四五十人を撰び出して銃殺した。

「他の獨兵等は引き續き暴行掠奪放火を恣にした、或る家では家族八人其家屋より約五十碼の距離なる牧場に連れ行かれ、其中の或ものは銃殺され、然らざるものは、斧を以て打ち殺された。顔に傷跡のある、丈の高い髪の赤い一獨兵が斧を振つて慘虐の行爲を演じたのは殊に甚しかつた。男の子と婦人とは銃殺された。」

「午前十時になつて、獨逸將校等は死屍を集めることゝ街や家屋を汚した血を洗ひ去ることを婦人等に命じた。」

「**猛惡性と殘酷性**」 英國調査委員の報告書に依れば、アンデンヌに於ては獨兵の掠奪を蒙らざる家なく、

掠奪は八日に亘りて續けられた。獨兵の猛惡性と殘酷性が斯の如く發揮されたるは、白耳義の他の市街にては見られざる處なり」と記されて居る。

吾人が訊問したる多數住民は何れも獨兵に對し一人も發銃したるものなしといふに一致して居る、是等住民の口供に依ればアンデンヌ及び其附近に於て獨兵の殺されたるものは一人も無しとのことである。それで、アンデンヌは獨逸が人を恐怖させやうとする目的の犠牲に供されたものであると考へて居る人もある。又た、橋梁の破壊



ある、又兵士等は家屋に對し機關砲を發射し初めた、市中へは砲彈が落ちて來た、或る家では兵士の闖入に逢ひ數名の家人は立ろに殺された、之に續いて重なる街の掠奪は始まり、家具は破壊され路上に投げ出され、兵士等は狂奔して地下室に入り、運び去る能はざる酒罐は之を破つて思ひのまゝに飲み盡くし、最後に掠奪を爲せる家屋に放火した。」

### 市長の慘殺

翌朝四時に至り、獨兵等は市の住民は男女老幼共に悉く之を街上に追ひ出し、兩手を上に差し上げて先頭に歩かせた。」

「少しにても躊躇して之に従はざるもの、若くは獨逸語を解せざるものは打擲され、又遁げ去らんと企てたものは銃殺された。」

「老市長は小銃にて射撃され、負傷したる後、遂に斧を以て打ち殺された、其死屍は若干の距離を足を持つて引き摺られた。」

「一人の時計師は獨兵の命に依り八十歳の老齡なる其父を扶けつゝ家を出て來たが、父を扶けて居る爲に兩手を差し上げることが出来なかつた、獨兵は歩み寄つて斧を以て打ち据へた、時計師は致命傷を負ひて其家の戸口に仆れた。」

「擧つて勇敢なる死を遂ぐ」斯くて間もなく住民全部はプラス、デ、チルールの方面に追はれた。

「老人も病者も全身不隨者も皆同地に送られた、或ものは乳母車にて、或るものは手車にて、又或ものは其の親戚知己の肩に倚つて運ばれた、そこで男子は婦人から別けられた、先づ身體検査が行はれたが、武器を身に着け

た、又老婦人は祈禱書と眼鏡入とを手につけて居たが、丁度自分の祖母も祈禱書と眼鏡入とを手につけて居た、老婦人は全く息絶へて居つたが而かも尙此兵士を見詰めて居たのである。」

此の老婦人の目色は其後常に此兵士を睨まして居たが、彌々此兵士は自分の臨終の際に、「予は地獄に行くだらうか」と傍の者に問を發したのである。

**秩序と精確** 右の兵士は又其死に臨みてデナンの虐殺に關し左の如く大體の状況を述べて居る。

「事は皆秩序と精確とにて行はれた、將校等は破壊事業が適當に實行され、又た何等の妨害もなく行はれるやうに監視をして居た、兵士等は寧ろ酒に酔ひ過ぎて將校の命を餘り奉じなかつた、一兵卒は無援の群集に發銃を命ぜられたが、之に従はず銃を投げ出したために將校から銃殺された。」

#### 第四 アンデヌに於て獨兵斧を振て殺戮を行ふ

##### 獨兵の亂醉

アンデヌに於て行はれた悲惨事の一は齡七十を超へたる老市長が受けたる悲惨極まる待遇であつた、而かも此老市長は獨軍到着の數日前より、人民をして敵對行爲を爲さしめざるが爲に「細心の注意」を拂つたのである、「市長は各處に掲示をなして、獨軍に對する抵抗を禁じ、凡ての武器を取り上げて之を市役所に集め、各地方の官憲は住民の一部を親しく訪ね住民に對する官の責任に就て説明した」獨兵が亂醉狀態に關しては確かな事實がある、乃ち之に依れば、翌日の夜に至り

「市中に一發の銃聲聞へ、之に續きて俄然大爆音が起つた、之は兵士等が秩序を失ひ、勝手次第に射撃したので

り掃蕩するにあることを我が出發點とせざるべからず、此目的に直接反對の行動に出づる住民の反抗を防遏することは有らゆる手段を以て遂行せざる可からず。人質は各處にて射殺されたり、此處置は充分に理由あり」と記述してある。

幻影に煩まざる、獨兵の談 「充分に理由ありとして」、一千九百十四年に白耳義に於て種々の慘虐を行へる獨兵の多くは今頃は西部若くは東部の前線にて戦死したか或は負傷のために死歿したと思はるゝのである所では等の獨兵が最期の際に白耳義にて自分等が犯したる慘虐を廻想し、其行爲は「充分に理由あり」と衷心から思つたものが果して幾人あつたか、恐らくあるまい。

(一獨兵の言に、「軍隊は兵士の行爲が彌々慘酷であればあるだけ早く勝利が得らるゝものである」と申し渡されたと云ふ、又た死に瀕する一兵卒は曰く、「吾々は實に宜しからぬ振舞をした、併しそれでもまだ命せられたる四分の一程も遣つては居ないのである」と)。

「之に就て英國の一醫師が書いた書物の中に、獨兵の臨終の感想が集めてある、之に依つて其一班を窺ふことが出来る。茲に記する處はデナンに於て或る老婦人が獨兵から逃れんとして走り行く處を一兵士が之を突殺した話であるが、此兵の談に依れば此婦人は非常の高齡であつた。

「獨兵は此老婦人が其家に遁げ込まんとする處を突殺した、老婦人は入口の敷居の上に仆れた、兵士は老婦人が果して死したであらうかと其顔を覗込んだ時に老婦人は眼を開いて兵士を見詰めた、其目色は恰も自分が出征する際に村の教會堂にて留別した時自分を見詰めた祖母の目色と少しも異らなかつた、悲しげな、やさしき目色であつ



直ぐに與へたが、併し戒むるに獨軍の戦線へ再び歸することは甚だ危険でもあり、又た歸つた所で恐らく同郷人に何等の利益ともならぬであらうからとて佛軍の方に其儘止まることを勧めた、けれども此勸告には毫も耳を傾けず、我が運命を豫想し乍らも、同郷人を救はんと一念から再び漕ぎ戻つた。

「獨兵等は裁判官が尙河を漕ぎ戻つて居るのに、之に發銃した、漸く岸に着いた時には既に兩脚を彈丸が貫通して居たので自分の二人の子息に助けられて漸く上陸した。佛軍將校から貰つて來た證明書を取り出して獨兵に渡した時に、獨兵は之を讀みもせず、すだ／＼に引き裂いてしまつた。」

之に引續いて起つた虐殺に關しては已に記述されたる所である、此裁判官のみならず其妻、子息、娘も皆練兵場の牆壁の下にて機關銃にて射殺されたる八十四名の中であつた。虐殺の數時間後ブルドン裁判官の十五歳になる末の子息が死屍の中に血に染つて生きて居るのが發見された。

### 獨軍と死亡者數

住民にして獨軍に殺戮せられたるものは八百を下らすと信ぜられて居る、而して六百十二人迄の姓名は死亡者の表に現はれて居る、獨軍官憲は此表の存在を知つて始めて多少憂色を現し、此等の表を即坐に塊集すべく其提出を諾せざるものは嚴罰に處すべしとの命令を發した。ヂナンの戸數は一千四百戸であつたが、獨軍が其破壊事業を終つた時に残つて居たものは僅に二百戸であつた。

### 有罪を自認す

獨軍官憲は其行動を辯護するが爲に、却て假面を脱ぎ來たつたが、世に是程奇妙なることはあるまい、獨逸の一將軍が書いたものゝ中に左の一節がある。

「今獨逸軍隊の取りたる態度を判斷するに當つて、我が戰略上の目的は速にムーズ河を渡り、敵をムーズの左岸よ

「又た前夜から、ヒンメル氏の工場に出で居る労働者の一群は其妻子と共に工場の地下室に隠れて居つたが、其中に近隣の人々や雇主の家族等も此處へ集まつた、夕方六時頃に一同は、白旗を眞先に立て、地下室から出て來たが、皆其場で銃殺された。

「其近郊のド、ルフエ村の住民は殆ど一人残らず殺戮せられた。

「町の他の方面では十二人穴藏の中に銃殺せられ、又た一人の全身不隨の病人は腕掛椅子に椅つたまゝで殺された、獨兵は十四歳の少年をも殺した、一人の老婦人と其小供等は皆地下室にて殺された、六十五歳の老人と其妻、子息及娘は壁の前にて立たせられたまゝ殺された、此の住民は、小舟に乘せられて銃殺されたが、其中には八十三歳の老婦人と其夫とがあつた。

「男女若干名は監獄署の廣場に閉ぢ込められ、傍の小山の上には機關銃を据へ附けて之を射撃した、老婦人一人と他に三人程射殺せられた。」

エドモン、ブルドンの殉難　ヂナンの慘劇中之に越すものなき悲慘なる事件は此地の裁判官が住民の爲を計らんとして遂に殉難したことである、此人は獨軍から蜂起せる土民が獨軍を射撃したるがため住民は處罰を受くべきである旨を告げられた、併し此人は發銃したのは蜂起せる土民でなく實は佛軍が發銃したものならんと想像して獨軍に抗議し、自ら河を渡つて關係佛軍將校の證明書を得んことを申出でた、此の事件の結果に就き、東京に在る白耳義公使が著者に語れる所は左の如くのである。

「エドモン、ブルドンは其庭園内に繋留してあつた古き短艇に乗つて河を渡つた、佛國將校は求むる處の證明を

男子五十人を銃殺した、七時から九時の間に獨兵等は掠奪と放火を慾まゝにして家より家へ狂ひ廻り住民を屋外に追ひ出した、強て逃げ隠んとするものは皆銃殺された」と書いてある。

訊問も裁判の形式もなく 九時頃に至り兵士等は「男子、婦人、小兒等を銃床を以て打擲しつゝ練兵場に追ひ込み、夕方になるまで其儘拘禁して置いた」、「番兵等は幾度も御前等は間もなく銃殺せられるぞと威喝して喜んで居つた。」

「夕方の六時頃になつて獨軍の大尉が來て男子を婦人と小兒から引分け、婦人等は兵士の列の前面に置かれ、男子は皆塙壁に沿ふて立たされた、兵の前列は跪射の構へを命せられた、此等の不幸なる男子等の前に射手の一人は今や方に發射の命を待つた、目の當り此の光景を見たる婦人等は聲を擧げて其夫なり、子なり兄弟なりの爲に助命を乞ふたが、凡て無駄であつた、士官は遂に發射を命じた。」

「訊問もなければ又た何等裁判の形式さへもなかつた、住民の中其二十名程は只だ負傷したのみであつたから、兵士等は此等負傷者に對し更に第二の一齊射撃をなした、それでも此前後二回の射撃にも拘らず死を逃れたものが數名あつた、是等は死を裝ふて二時間以上も少しも動かずに死屍の中に横はり、其内夜になつてから漸く山中へ逃れて助かることが出來た。」

「練兵場に殘つて居た死骸は八十四個であつた。」

茲にも機關銃の虐殺 更に此外にも「續々虐殺が行はれて其日は全く血腥くなつた」、「兵士等は住民が幾人か醸造所の穴藏に隠れ居ることを發見して之を銃殺した。」



まゝ死屍の中に交つて横つて居るものも少からずあつた、其呻き苦しむ聲、助けを求むる叫びを累々たる死屍の中から聞いた兵士等は度々之に近寄つて銃剣を刺し通しては苦悶の叫びを止めて居つた。夜に入つてから這ひ出して遁げ終せたものもあつた。或は又た自分から河流に轉げ込んで苦悶を遁れて死に就いたものもあつた、水中には百ばかりの死屍があつた。」

獨兵は總計二百六十四の家屋を焼き拂つた、多數の婦人小兒は其家にありて焼死し或は窒息して死んだ。又野外に銃殺されたのも多つた、殉難者の總數は六百五十人を下らなかつたのである。

### 第三　ヂナンに於ける八百人の殺戮

「婦人を隔離し男子五十名を銃殺す」　左に記するはヂナンに起りし慘劇の物語である。乃ち調査委員の報告中に

「金曜日の夜九時頃、獨軍はヂナンに侵入した、獨軍は先づ民家の窓に向つて射撃して一人の勞働者を殺し、他に一人の住民を傷け、之に強て獨逸皇帝萬歲を叫ばしめた、三人目には銃剣を以て住民の一人の胃部を刺し之を殺した、更に獨兵は珈琲店に入り手當り次第に酒を飲み若干の家屋に放火し或は戸を壊ち或は窓を破り廻つた」と書いてある。

眞の大兇行は此後に起つた。即ち

「日曜日の午前六時半頃、第百八聯隊の兵は教會堂を襲ひ禮拜者を追ひ散らし、其中の婦人と男子とを隔離し、

ルーヴァンに居つた瑞西人の一技師も同市に加へられたる暴虐は全然正當の理由なきものであると證言して居る。

又和蘭人ビー、エム、メッツ氏も記述して、「予は予の目撃せる處を記述する、獨兵はルーヴァンに於て實に野蠻人の如くに行動した」と曰つて居る。和蘭人の證言はまだ此他にもある。ルーヴァンにて發行されたる「白耳義の驚愕」の著者たるモクヴェルド氏も亦當時ルーヴァンに滞在したる一人であつて、「何人か射撃せり」といふ獨逸側の口實を等しく嘲つて居るのである。

## 第二 タミースに於ける六百五十の殉難者

機關銃に依る虐殺 更にタミースの市の場合はどうであるかと云ふに、白耳義調査委員の記述する處に依れば、同委員は住民が獨軍に發銃したるや否やに就て之を確むる爲に特別の注意を加へた、然るに「證人は皆異口同音に其事なしと宣言して居る、其説明する處に依れば、獨軍は佛軍の斥候隊が爲したる射撃を以て同市の住民が爲したるものなりと強辯し、以て住民を虐殺したのであると云つて居る、」或る證人は左の如き證據を擧げて居る。

「四百人乃至四百五十人より成る住民の一群は河岸に近き教會堂の前面に集められ、獨軍の一分隊は之を射撃した、併し射撃では手間が取れるので士官は機關銃で射撃することを命じた、夫が爲に、まだ撃られずに居た百姓等全部は塵殺せられた。其中になゞ負傷して一旦仆れたものも多かつたが立ち上ると直にまた撃れた、又負傷した

る二百十名の姓名、年齢、職業等が記録されて居るが、之に依れば其中八名は十五歳以下、又十一名は七十歳乃至八十歳の老人である。

### 獨逸軍の口實及其真相

前章に其言を引用してある白耳義の醫師は此ルーヴアンの暴虐を目撃したのである、其言ふ處に依れば、獨逸軍の口實とする處は其兵士の中に或は殺され或は負傷したものであるといふ、そして其主張する處は拳銃の音と銃聲とは聞き分けられた、夫故市民が發銃したのであると云ふ結論である、が右の醫師は之に關し述べて曰く、「獨軍の證明する處或は眞であるかも知れぬ、予は其事實を全部承認することゝする、併し其結論には同意し難い、其理由としては

「第一、ルー、ド、チルモンル・ド・チルモンの歩兵營舎を占領した獨兵が予に明かに語つて居る所に依れば、數分間といふものは獨兵は身方の銃火を浴びなければならなかつた、自分等は切りに叫んだり嘯鳴つたりして漸く自分等も獨兵であることを他の部隊に知らせることが出來たのであると云ふ。

「第二、二人の獨兵は大學の一教授の宅に侵入し、市街に一人も市民が居なかつた時に其家の窓から外へ向けて銃を發射した。

「第三、獨逸士官は皆拳銃を渡されて居るから、單に獨兵の銃聲と異なる銃聲があつたといふのみでは市民が發銃した證據とはならぬ」と。

白耳義の醫師は結論して曰く

「多數の市民は訊問された、而かも其中の一人たりとも咎の認めらるべきものがなかつた。」



## 一 中立國人の恐怖すべき經驗

右に述べたる大學の圖書館員の記する所に依れば「獨兵等は夜陰に亂醉殺戮の狂態を演じ何等容赦する所なく婦人、老幼、病者、瘋癲院より連れ出せる發狂者、僧侶、尼僧等は野獸の如き獨兵に追ひ廻はされ到る處獨兵や士官に會へば其都度跪きて兩手を舉げ其憐みを乞はざるを得なかつたのである。」

次ぎに中立國人にして實見したる者の證言を舉げて見ればバラグエー國人でガマルラといふ僧侶が當時學生としてルーヴァンに居たのであるが、其實見した事實のまゝを南米に通信して居る、其一節に

「フォン、クルツク軍の前衛部隊は、何等の攻撃をも加へず、ルーヴァンを占領した、戰鬪はなつたのである。其後彌々放火に依て市を破壊し始めた、四方八方へ燃え擴がつて居る間に、獨兵は火の中から逃げ出して來る市民を、どし／＼銃殺した、停車場の廊下の上にも銃殺された市民の死骸が十五か二十倒れて居るのを見た。」

「最初に捕虜となつたのは七八十の一團であつたが、其中には著名な人物、辯護士、醫師なども居た、其中吾々五人は外國人であつたが、獨兵の吾々に對する取扱は慘酷を極めた、自分は國籍を證明する旅行免狀を持つて居たが、自分が幾度も外國人たるを證明しやうとする度毎に士官等は自分を威嚇して打擲を加へた、そこで自分は最早言ふても無益と思ひ諦めて死を待つことに決心した、他の連中も同じ決心をした、自分等は劍や銃床や、銃槍などで打たれ乍ら、走つたり、停止したり、徐行したりした、又た蹴られたり唾を掛けられもした」と記述して居る。

此ガマルラ氏と他の四名の外國人は其後は解放された。白耳義の官報にはルーヴァン及其地方にて殺戮された

## 第九章 六箇の都市の悲慘事

### 第一 ルーヴァン市の學理的なる又た熟慮ある破壊

#### 大學の燒棄

マリーヌやイープルに於て中世紀建築の最も名高い例であつた建物が、如何に無慈悲に砲撃せられ又た燒き拂はれたるかは、誰れも聞いて居る所である。併し最も甚しき暴行はルーヴァンに於て行はれた。乃ちルーヴァンに於ける大學の燒棄に依つて五世紀に涉れる知識上、歴史上及美術上の富の集積は灰燼に歸したのである、其圖書館には實に二十五萬卷の書を藏して居たのである。市の損害に關してはメルシエー大僧正の言に據れば、一千七十四戸の住宅は其形を失ひ一千八百二十三戸は燒却せられたのである。併し此等は單に無生物に對する暴行であつたが、尙ほ此外に虐殺が又た行はれたのである。

#### 「高等軍事官憲」と「豫定計畫」 第一に吾人は英國調査委員の報告を一讀すべきである、曰く

「ルーヴァン市に關する供述は多様になつて居るが併し同市の住民が、獨逸軍隊に發砲したと考へらるゝ様な根據は何も無いのである。公平無私なる法衙ならば是より外の決定を下すことは出来ない筈である。

「ルーヴァン市の大部分を燒棄せることや、住民の虐殺、又た市民が果して不法の行爲を犯したるや否やを克く訊問もせず之を捕へ、或は獨逸に輸送し又は殺戮したること、是等は學理的にして又た熟慮ある豫定計畫の實行であつて、是が實行に就ては單に高等軍事官憲が認許を與へたのみならず、自ら指揮したのである。決して市民が進んで獨軍に挑戰し又は抵抗を企てたためではない。」

併し是まで記述せる處に依るも、獨軍の白耳義人批難は、獨軍が既に斯程の不正を働いて居りながら尙ほも罪を白耳義人に歸せんとする全然無根のものであることを讀んだ公平なる讀者は、既に他人の權利を侵害しながら更に此被害者に向つて自己の立場を辯護せんがために無實の罪を強ゆる獨軍は、實に二重の罪を犯したものであると宣言せる白耳義司法大臣及び外務大臣の意見に厚き同情を拂ふべしと思はる。



兵のために殺されたる僧侶の靈魂のため、追悼式を羅馬に舉行したことがある。其中予の手許にある順序書の只だ一回の追悼人名のみにても、四十餘人の僧侶を列して居る。メルシャ大僧正の報告するところによれば、同僧正の教區のみにても各派の僧侶十三人迄銃殺されて居る。斯くの如く獨人の白耳義僧侶を遇する甚だ慘酷を極めたるため、ウインナの大僧正(奧國人)は是れが事情の調査を開始したのであつたが、同大僧正は其報告中に次の如くに述べて居る。

「獨軍は五十人の僧侶を殺した。然るに其内一人も國際法に反する行爲は絶體に犯して居らぬのである。

「獨軍は各派の僧侶數百人に對し、實に侮辱したる取扱ひをなし、或場合の如きは精神的に又た肉體的に眞に獸類の如く之を遇した」と。

**獨逸の目的如何** 前にも引照したる白耳義の醫師は、獨軍に於て批難する自由進撃隊並に僧侶の惡行其

他に就て調査せる結果を報告し、其結論に於て此等獨軍の批難は全然無根であることを宣明して居る。併し同時に右の醫師の問ふ處は、抑も斯くの如き事實無根の風説を流布したる獨軍の目的は、果して何處にあるかと云ふのである。而して醫師は此目的たるや、獨軍が白耳義に於ける己の其峻嚴なる軍政を辨護せんがためにあると解釋して居る。醫師は曰く、「白耳義人民を恐怖せしめ、白耳義軍の勇氣を挫き、反亂を豫め防遏し、而して最少限の兵力を以て占領せる土地を維持するためには斯る手段は必要なり」と。

白耳義醫師のなせる此驚くべき言明は果して當を得たるや否や、公平なる讀者は以下の諸章に於て之が判斷を下すことが出来る。

兵の死體が発見された。其後グランドス教授と云ふ和蘭陀人が、其著「白耳義」に於ける獨逸軍の中に次の話を記して居る。スタインと呼ぶ一人の獨逸將校は、部下の一兵士の背囊の中に、指環の附いた手の指數本を所有するを発見し、終に之を銃殺するに至つた、此兵士の自白によれば、此手の指は獨兵の死體より切り取れるものであると云ふ、然るに附近の村落に於ては、獨兵の死體にて其手の指を切斷されたるものが発見されたる爲め、家は焼き拂はれ、住民の或者は銃殺されたのである。

**獨人側にも反證** 戦争が開始されてから八ヶ月の後、獨逸の新聞紙は獨兵の眼球が屢々白耳義の自由進撃隊のために刳り取られと云ふ卑劣極まる批難を數回掲載したことがあつた。當時自重心の強い獨逸のローテンベルグ教授は、事の真相を調査して居たが、其結果氏は獨逸新聞紙に表はれたる批難に對しては、何等の證據が擧げなかつたことを報告して居る。

**僧侶虐殺と獨逸の確認** 獨軍が白耳義に於ける暴行に關聯して取りたる行動の中、最も擯斥すべきものの一つは、獨逸が一千九百十五年五月に發表せる報告書中に、白耳義の僧侶が人民を煽動して獨軍を襲撃せしめたことを再三非難して居ることである。然るに該報告書の未だ發表されざる五ヶ月以前に、獨國政府自身は此非難を事實無根なるものとして公然認めて居るのである。尙ほそれよりも以前に獨逸の評論雜誌「デルフェルス」に、ミュレルなる人は、僧侶が教會堂の中から射撃したとか、或は他人に之を許可したとかの「事實は未だ曾て確證されて居らぬ」と正直に告白して、獨逸新聞の記事は「全然虚偽妄想」であると言つて居る。然るに獨軍は何れの戦争にも其例を見ざる程多數の教會堂を破壊し、多數の僧侶を銃殺したのである。例へば曾て白耳義に於て獨

クセムブルグの有名なる或住民は、「獨軍は自由進撃隊なりと云ふ口實を以て、數千の男子、女子、子供などを虐殺して居るが、今日に至る迄一人たりとも、現行のまゝ捕へられたる白耳義人の姓名を擧げることが出来ぬのである」と指摘して居る。

### 自轉車護謨輪の破裂

白耳義調査委員の第十二回の報告に述べたる如く、所謂復讐行爲に出でたる獨軍は瞞着的口實に依るものなりと推定するまでも無いのである。

獨軍は白耳義人民が蜂起して獨軍の暗殺を謀るならんとは、屢々言つて居た處であるが、遂には是れを信實としてしまふに至つた。獨軍は戰線を遠く離れて居ても、少しの物音に驚きて立ち騒ぎ、自轉車の護謨輪の爆發、鐵道の濃霧用爆發物、(ジョールヂースに起りし如き)瓦斯發動機の爆發、(アロストに於ける如き)、又獨軍の砲撃に依つて起つた化學試験所に於ける藥品燃焼の閃光(ルーヴァンに於ける如き)等は、皆獨軍を恐怖せしむる原因となり『何者が發銃せり』と絶叫しつゝ、掠奪放火の蠻行を敢てせしむるに至つたのである。シカルトに於ける弓術俱樂部の備品は、其矢に毒藥を附けて敵兵狙撃に使用するならんとの口實に依つて、一切獨軍の手に沒收されたのである。獨軍の心狀は既に斯くの如く到的處伏兵を恐れたる結果、遂に時としてルーヴァン、エールシヨット、グイセー、アンデンヌ其他に起れる獨兵同士間の發銃、又將校に對して射撃したることなどは、敢て怪しむに足らぬのである。

### 戰慄すべき事件

獨兵は其手足を切斷されて慘殺されたりなど、實に陋劣極まる批難をして居るが、此批難に關聯して、ハーレンと云ふ村に起つた珍奇なる出來事がある。此村で或時手の指を切斷されて居る一人の獨



ば戰慄し、又た路の曲り角に來れば自由進撃隊の幻影を見ると云ふ有様であつた。

「充分の支給を受けて居りながら、掠奪慾の強き獨兵等は夜中小銃の發射は掠奪の合圖であり、且後日掠奪を爲せる言譯となることを好く知つて居たのであるから、毎も此合圖があればよいと待ち構へて居たのである、時には所謂自由進撃隊の襲撃を待ち兼ねて、自ら都合の好き頃を計つて發銃し、是れを合圖に掠奪を開始したのである此合圖の發砲を聞くや否や、兵士等はそれ『何者か發砲したぞ』と叫びながら、市中に駆け出し、激しき一齊射撃が始まる。又た市中に放火をする。次いて其混雜中に住民を虐殺し、其家を掠奪すると云ふ有様であつた。

「獨逸側の報告殊に口述の報告には何れも白耳義に於ける獨軍の損害は、全く自由進撃隊の攻撃を受けた結果であるとして居る。一人たりとも獨兵の死體が偶々通りかゝれる獨軍の目に觸るゝ時は、之れ何よりの幸である敵國內に於て獨兵が殺されて居れば、敵兵のために殺されたとするのが自然的、且理論的な推測である。併し白耳義に於ては、獨軍は暗殺されるものと思ひ込んで、充分に用心して居たのである。或るサクソンの兵は予に語つて、一人の獨軍將校がホテルに入つて行くのを認めた者があつたが、其儘行衛不明になつて何等手掛りとなるべきものが無い。之は必ず白耳義人に殺されたに相違ない、住民等を嚴罰に處すべしと云ふので、アロンの牧師及び同市の住民百人は、獨兵のために銃殺されたのである」と云つた。

今尙確言なし ナムールの僧正は、其教區の位置に依つて此自由進撃隊問題の事情を知るに甚だ好都合であつたが、同僧正は「自由進撃隊は唯の一隊も白耳義には存在して居らぬことを獨軍に向つて烈しく抗辯して居る」。此僧正は又「普通人民が一度たりとも軍隊に發銃したと云ふことは全く知れて居らぬ」と斷言して居る。又ル

は想つて居たらしい。それは兎も角もととして、此三人の兵の證言と佛軍が遺棄したる機關銃及び鐵條網等とを證據として獨軍はデナンの住民の十分の一を、毫も容赦する處なく殺戮せる兇行の、凡て正當なるを證する辯解の辭と爲したのである。白耳義公使曰く「殺戮されたる者の中には婦人が六十人以上もあつて、其中には七十五歳以上の老年であつた。又十六歳以下の少年が三十六人、五歳以下の幼兒が十人あつた。而して十七戸の家族は是れがため全然滅亡してしまつたのである」と。

中立國人の證言 ルーヅアン、アンデンス、エールショット其他の各地に於て獨兵が行へる暴行の恐怖すべき狀況は追つて後段に大略述ぶるつもりであるが、之に對して獨逸は直接暴行を行へる軍人等の薄弱なる證言を基礎として正當なるを主張して居る。白耳義公使の指摘せるが如く、獨兵等の證言は之を「中立國人も其中に多數に居る數百人の人民が白耳義及び英國の調査委員の前に於て述べたる絶對に正確にして、信するに足るべき證言に比較するときは、全然反對して居るのである。」若し夫れ中立國に就ては、獨逸政府は西班牙と好關係を持續したき考から、エリージュに於て住民と共に獨兵のために理由なく銃殺されたる五人の西班牙人に對しては充分なる賠償を拂つて居る。

「何者か發銃せり」獨逸の負傷兵と語る機會を多く有つて居た前にも云へる白耳義の醫師は曰く、「獨軍が白耳義に侵入の間同國に滯留せる人々は、日夜殊に夜に於て獨兵の銃が連りに自ら發射せることを克く知つて居たのである」と。

「酩酊したる獨兵等は、酩酊を獨逸の軍隊に於ては極めて些細なる罪として見られて居るが、木の葉が風に動け

度に之に向つて、村落を罰として焼き拂ふ前に先づ白耳義人の小銃又は拳銃に依つて射殺されたりと云ふ獨兵の身體より其彈丸を抜取りて検査せんことを依頼したのであるが、併し獨軍將校は凡て公明なる處置を嫌つたのであると云ふ。

獨軍の顯著なる自白 併し獨逸將校が是れとは全く相違せる行動に出でた場合がある。一千九百十四年八月廿四日リエージュ附近のヒュイと云ふ所より發せる「昨夜一齊射撃を受けたり」と云ふ報告の中に、フォンバツセウイツツ少佐は次の如く記述して居る。

「一般住民が此射撃に加はつたと云ふ證據は更がない、反つて凡ての狀況より判斷すれば、兵士は酩酊して敵軍の襲撃を恐るゝの餘り自ら發銃したものである。

「少數の例外はあつたが、當夜の兵士等の行動は耻づべきものであつた。

「將校下士官等は何等指令官の許可もなく、又た命令もなきに民家を焼き、又兵を教唆して掠奪を爲さしめたることは遺憾の至りである。本官は一般住民の生命財産に對して取るべき態度に就き、訓令が與へらるべきことを期待する。本官は何人も將校の命令を待たずして市内に於て發銃することを禁止した。

軍隊の此悲しむべき行動の結果として、下士一人、卒一人は我獨兵の彈丸のために重傷を負ふに至つた」と。

デナンに於ける恐怖すべき光景 デナンに於て獨軍は明かに佛國狙撃隊の攻撃を人民の攻撃と誤認したのである。其數ヶ月後三人の獨兵は當時攻撃中に人民は上着を脱いで窓から射撃して居たのを目撃したと明言して居るのは事實である。併し八月の半ばに於て兵士が屋内から射撃して居るのに、上着を脱がぬものと獨兵



の白耳義兵は特有の精神と考慮とを以て突然或地點に現はれて敵を射撃し、後白耳義の田舎には克く有る間道より秘かに退却して其所在を暗ましたのである。

其後佛軍も亦非常な熟練と勇氣とを以て同様の戰鬪法を行つたのである。而して此戰鬪法は常に不安の心を持ち未知の外國に侵入せるを敵軍を惱ますためには極めて有効なるものであることがわかつた。實に獨兵の多數は白耳義侵入後間もなく神經過敏になつたやうである。予は先に引照したる白耳義の醫師を再び茲に引照する。

「世の中に何が危険であると云つて、小銃と銃劍とを持つ恐怖せる人の如きものはあるまい。一人の大男の獨兵は笑ひながら予に語つて、「此兵が白耳義に出征せんとする時に、其友人等は食卓用の小刀を一挺持つて行けばよいと勧めたのである。併し自分は白耳義に侵入して戦ふことを非常に怖れて居る。獨逸の新聞紙は凡て白耳義人の怖るべき記事のみを掲げて居る」と自白して居るのである。

**酩酊と虐殺** 白耳義侵入の獨軍が其占領各地の村落に於て、葡萄酒其他の酒類を盛んに飲んだと云ふことは中立國の軍事通信員其他からの報告に依つて充分證明されて居るのである。此等通信員等の證明以外にも、此事は獨兵が其親戚に宛てたる手紙にて、戰場に其死骸と共に發見されたるもの、中に之を知ることが出来るそれで獨軍が其憎むべき蠻行の辯解として主張する、白耳義人が各個に獨兵に對して發銃したと云ふ彈丸は、佛國又は白耳義の斥候兵が發したのではなく、却つて酩酊したる獨兵が誤つて發銃したるものが、又は亂暴に發射したものであることは疑ふべき處がないのである。

東京駐劄の白耳義公使が自己の見聞に依つて屢々語る如く、白耳義の地方官憲は、獨兵が復讐戰を爲すと脅す

令を受けて居たのである。

此事に關しては、ワックスウエラーの著書に左の如き好適例が載せてある。此書は東京の諸所の圖書館にもある。「獨逸列車がジャピスに接近せる際線路上に信號用として設置せる爆發裝置が汽車の近づくと共に破裂した、車中の獨兵は之を自由進撃隊の所爲として其附近に働き居たる農民を捕えて直ちに銃殺した。併し後に爆發の原因が判明して獨軍は自己の爲せる處置を遺憾なりとする旨を述べて再び列車を進めた。」

更に獨逸第拾二師團第拾七聯隊附の某將校は其日記に次の如く誌るして居る。

「立派なるグ、ド、ホッスの村は自分には全く無辜の様に想はれたが、遂に八月廿六日焼き拂はれた。聞く處によれば獨軍自轉車隊は自轉車より落ち其時兵の所持せる銃が獨りで發した。これがために村内の男子は悉皆火中に投せられたのである。此様な恐ろしき事の再び起らざることを望む」と。

斯くの如き次第であるから、此上同様なる事實を記載せずとも讀者は之によつて獨軍は白耳義に侵入して其豫期せる如き自由進撃隊なるものを一人も發見せずとも、尙ほ努めて之を白耳義に存在せしめんとするに全力を盡くしたことが分かるのである。

### 遊撃隊の戰鬪法と其精神的効果

獨軍は時々不意に射撃を受けることがあつたが、併し是れは決して非戰鬪員たる住民からではなくて、白耳義の自轉車斥候隊若くは白耳義軍の小部隊からであつた。白耳義は陸軍が少ないから是れを補ふために、小數の兵を以て部隊を編成したことは、小部隊の攻撃に依つて侵入軍を脅かさんとする方略を立てたからである。獨軍は暫くの間は此白耳義軍の方略を發見することが出来なかつた。少數

きものと思はれるのである。此醫師は今日までハリファックス卿と共に英國に滞在して居た。一千九百十四年八月から九月迄此醫師は獨白兩軍の負傷兵等を介抱した爲めに、常に此等の負傷兵並に一般白耳義人等と話を交ふる機會を得たのであるから、當時の事情を知るに最も便利の地位にあつたのである。此醫師は白耳義の中央政府、地方官、自治體當局者及び教會の牧師等が發したる資格なき者は戰鬪に参加するを避くべしと云へる命令に對して、國民は克く之を遵奉して居たと斷言して居る。醫師の言は次の如くである。

「自由進撃隊なるものは決して存在して居なかつた。勿論一二單獨の場合に、熱心なる愛國者中には獨兵に對して拳銃を發したと云ふことは有り得べきである。予は一人の白耳義青年が獨兵が我妹に暴行を加えんとするを見て該獨兵を殺したと云ふ談を聞いて居る。

然し之は有り得べきこととしても、予が一千九百十四年十一月迄毎日熱心に讀める獨逸の新聞紙には、此種の事件に對する確乎たる證據は毫も發見されなかつたのである。」

**獨軍の神經過敏** 然し獨兵の書ける手紙並に其他の證據が極めて明瞭になつて居る一事がある。それは獨軍は白耳義人の如き勇敢にして又た愛國心深き國民は、古今比類なき外寇に對して抵抗をなすことが有り得べきであると豫期して居たことである。將た又彼等獨軍は白耳義に侵入せば農民の間に非常なる憤怒を起すに至らんと云ふことも亦た豫知して居たのである。獨軍の將校が神經過敏になつて居て獨軍が國境を越えて白耳義に侵入する前既に其部下に警告をなし、それがため兵も亦神經過敏になつて居たと云ふことは有り得べきである。獨軍は絶へず白耳義國民の襲撃を豫期し、何時にても正當と認むる場合には直ちに白耳義人に對して復讐すべき命



銃したりと敵が主張することの出来ざるためである。」

此心得書の最後には假令「一人たりとも人民が行ふ犯罪的暴舉」より生ずる結果は其係はる處實に重大なるものがあることを力説して結んで居るのである。

銃器に對する政府の注意 以上の布達の外に、更に各地方の當局者は附加告示を以て、人民は假令小銃又は拳銃等の武器を所有し居るとも、決して敵に對して之を使用してはならぬことを注意して居る。又此等の武器は直に地方の役場に提出して戦争の終局まで保管を托すべしと命令して居る。其爲め武器を提出する際には悉く所有者の姓名を附記せしめたのである。予はリエージュ(八月五日)ナムール(八月七日)及びフリュラ(八月十四日)の都市に掲出されたる告示の寫を所有して居る、茲にフリュラ市の告示を轉載する。

打明けたる承認 予は打明けたる承認をなすに毫も躊躇しないのである。白耳義農民等の硬骨又た其決心を知つて居るから、其中の無智なる者等は獨軍が自國內に侵入して、何等正當の理由なきに殆んど信じられぬやうな暴行を農民に加へたること、又其家屋田畑を破壊して國內全く荒廢に歸せることを見て爲す處を知らず、場合に依りては敵軍を襲撃したることもあらうと思ふのである。若し日本が敵の侵入を受けたならば日本人も亦必ずや同一のことをするに違ひない。然し予は今日迄随分種々の方面から材料を集めて讀んだが、未だ白耳義の人民が獨軍に對して斯くの如き襲撃を行たと云ふ信すべき事實は毫も見當らなかつたことを茲に附記しなければならぬのである。

醫師の證言 自由進撃隊の問題に關して或著名なる白耳義醫師の言は實に感情に走らず、價值ある信すべ

を越えて白耳義に侵入せる當日、白耳義政府は更に第二回の布達を全國二千七百の地方自治團に發したのであるが此自治團と中央政府との通信組織は極めて敏活であるから、該布達は直に各自自治團に達した筈である。此第二回の布達には政府は人民に對して實に次の如く注意して居る。

「戰爭の法規に依れば、敵軍を防禦し又は之を攻撃し或は孤立せる兵士に對して武器を用ひ、又爭鬪及び衝突に直接干渉することは（一）正規軍（二）義勇民團（三）軍規を遵守し責任ある將校に統率され特殊の徽章を帶ぶる義勇隊の外には絶対に許可されない。未だ敵軍が占領せざる地方の住民が敵兵の接近と共に任意に武器を取り、未だ軍隊組織を作る時間が無かつたとしても、既に住民が公然武器を携帶し戰爭の法規によつて行動したる上は、敵軍は之を戦闘員と見倣すのである。併し單獨に行動する個人は戦闘員と見倣されぬのであるが若し敵に捕へられた場合には殺さるゝかも知れぬのである。戰爭法規に禁止されて居る行爲は毒藥又は有毒武器の使用、軍人又は人民の詭計的殺戮又は加傷、武器を捨てたる敵兵の殺戮又は加傷等である。」

**内務省の採りたる處置** 政府の布達の外に、同じく八月四日から白耳義新聞は毎日大活字を以て其第一面に、内務大臣より一般に當てたる心得書を連載して居たのである。該心得書中に内務大臣は實に左の如く諭示して居た。

「敵兵が現われたならば一般人民は是れに對して戦ふべからず、又敵を侮辱し脅嚇する如き言語を用ふべからず屋内に止まり室を閉づべし、こは敵をして一般人民が敵兵を怒らしめたと主張することを不可能ならしむるためである。又軍隊が防戦上の必要より家屋小舎等を占領する場合には人民は皆立退くべし。これは人民が敵軍に發

白耳義義勇民團に對する非難　白耳義に對する獨逸の一の言分は、白耳義政府が軍籍にない一般人民に兵器を持たせて獨軍に當らしめたと云ふことである。併し是れは絶対に虛妄である。又獨軍は自由進撃隊から抵抗を受けたと言つて居るが、併し斯る軍隊が白耳義に存在し居ると云ふことは、今日迄未だ何等の確證がなのである。多分或場合に獨軍は有名なる白耳義の一制度なる義勇民團と云ふ團體、之は一千八百三十年から存在して居るものであるが、此團體を權限を有せざる戰闘員と誤認したかも知れない。然し獨逸は白耳義政府の使用したる此豫備兵のことを聞知しなかつたからとて、夫れは決して言譯にはならない。何故なれば獨軍の白耳義侵入後四日、白耳義政府は獨逸政府に向つて此民團を召集することを極めて明瞭に言明して居たからである。

問題の法理的解決　併し白耳義政府は此民團を召集するに就て何等遠慮の必要はないのである。既に前にも引照したる獨逸にて編纂されたる有名なる國際法書中には、明かに次の如く記載されてある。「一國の民衆に對して其祖國の防禦に任する權利を拒絶すると云ふ理由は決してない、小弱國が自己を防禦し得るは唯此方あるのみである」と。又た此書物の中に婦人を召集するさへも國家の權限内にあると論じてある。更に海牙公法第三條には次の如く規定してある。「交戰國の武裝軍隊は戰闘員及非戰闘員より成るべし、兩者は共に俘虜として待遇を受ける權利を有す」と。

白耳義政府再度の布達を地方官に發す　若し白耳義政府が戰時法規に反して、非戰闘員を使用せんと欲せしならば、同國政府の行動は更らに異なつた方針に出でたかも知れないのである。予は白耳義政府が各地方官に發したる八月二日附の注意事項は既に引照した。(三十二頁參照)八月四日即ち獨軍が初めて白耳義國境



なければ白耳義にある此人々の所有地へは獨軍中の最も亂暴なる軍隊を宿伯せしめて、一切の家具を燒棄させる命令を下すべしと通告したとのことである。

此等の事實は公平なる讀者には決して意味のないことではない。

**獨逸の辯解** 白耳義に於て獨軍が犯したる恐怖すべき暴行に付いて、英佛白三國にて發表された報告のみを集めても、優に此書の三倍にもなる書物が出来る。此等の暴行の僅か一小部分さへも之れを檢查することは、讀者にとつては苦しい仕事である。然し暴行を檢查する前に獨軍が自己の蠻行を辯解するために、其適切なりと思考せる種々なる言譯から記るして見やう。

此等の辯解は獨逸の諸新聞及び三百頁からある獨逸政府の公刊書物に載つて居る。之に對して、五百頁からある白耳義政府の公刊書物は一々辯駁を加へて完膚ない様子である。此白耳義政府の公刊書物は二三ヶ月前に發行されたもので、各種の行政文書諸種の證據統計其他今日迄未だ發表されざる夥多の文書、及び白耳義の外務大臣、司法大臣の宣言等を集録して居る。

獨逸は特に白耳義人に讀ませるために其公刊書物の別版を出版して居るが、其れには原版には載せてある二百の聞取書が全然載せて無い。併しこれは決して意味のない事ではないのである。又同じく獨逸は昨年三月に於ける英國外相サー、エドワード、グレー氏の演説に對する同國の辯駁書も、特に白耳義人に讀ませる目的を以て別版を出して居るが、其中には原版に特筆大書してある、白耳義人が獨軍の負傷兵を慘酷に扱つたと云ふ非難を全然省いて居る。

告書は英佛兩國語にて發表され、何人も之を手に入れることが出来るのである。(同調査委員は一千九百十四年八月七日に於て既に調査を開始して居る)

人は恐らく、何故中立調査委員會、即ち中立國及び獨逸をも之に加へたる調査委員會を組織しなかつたのであらうかと問ふであらう、是れに對する答は次の如くである。

一、白耳義政府は先きに白耳義獨逸及び中立國より成る調査委員會を組織するつもりであつた。然し獨逸は之を拒絶したのである。

二、白耳義の牧師等は聯合牧師會組織の目的で獨逸の牧師等に、又白耳義の社會黨は聯合社會黨委員會組織の目的で獨逸社會黨に、又有名なる世界的共濟組合の白耳義會員等は聯合共濟會委員會組織の目的で同組合の獨逸會員に各々交渉したが、彼等の提議は何れも拒絶されてしまつた。

三、和蘭陀の社會黨員は獨逸の社會黨員と共に調査を行ふべしと提議したが、之れも亦拒絶されたのである。

四、此種の調査委員會の組織が提議されたこと八回に及び、其内の二回は和蘭陀人の提議であつたが、何れも獨逸の拒絶するところとなつたのである。

五、白耳義政府は同國が其領土を再び領有するに至れば直に國際調査委員會を組織すると公表して居る。

斯くの如き國際調査委員を任命することは、四百人の西班牙人が署名して發表された白耳義耳民に對する同情の宣言中にも是れを要求して居る。此西班牙人の宣言は獨帝を非常に激怒せしめた、「朝日新聞」着の電報によれば獨逸は白耳義に地所を所有して居る西班牙の某々貴族等に向つて、若し此人々が該宣言書から其署名を撤回し

## 第八章 白耳義に起れる蠻行

讒謗に依て其度を高めたる驚くべき暴行

非文明なる敵

白耳義が獨軍の侵入に對し是れに抵抗すべく勇敢に決心した時には東京駐在の白耳義公使デラ、フュー、ド、ラヴエグム伯爵は偶々ブラツセルに歸還して居つた。氏は信憑すべき某々白耳義人が當時強大なる獨軍は今や將に白耳義に侵入せんとすることを考慮せる其感想に就て次の如く之を記述して居る。

「吾等は此恐ろしき敵軍の第一撃が、白耳義の様な殆んど天然の要害を有せざる小國（白耳義は大部分平地より成る）にとりては、實に恐るべきものであらうとは兼て承知して居た處である。又た吾等は非常な艱苦に遭ふことも覺悟して居た。然し吾等は文明なる敵と戦ふものと思ひ居たところが、豈に計らんや戦争の始めより如何なる罪惡をも平氣で犯して、毫も怖るゝ處のない匪徒の群と戦ふのであつたから、吾等の驚愕は非常なるものであつた。若しも前以つて此事が知れて居たならば、婦人、娘、子供、老人及び貴重品の物は悉く安全なる場所に移して置くのであつた。西部白耳義地方では、敵軍の侵入が晚かつたから、斯くすることが出来たのである。」

立證されたる事實

獨逸人が白耳義で行つた暴行に就いては何等疑ひのあらう筈がない、凡て明瞭になつて居る。彼等の暴行の事實は、白耳義の裁判官、法律家、其他證據物の價值に付いて公平なる判斷を下すことの出来る又斯くの如き經驗を有する人々をもつて組織したる調査委員の發表せる回数廿二回を下らざる調査報告、又同じ組織になれる英佛兩國の調査委員の報告書に、絶體に疑ふ餘地のない程立證されて居るのである。此等の報



したる日本刀を常に所持して居られる。之れには次の文句が刻である。

「此最も悲惨なる國難に際し、人道及び文明擁護の爲めに陛下の不撓なる御忍耐と白耳義國民の比類なき愛國心とに感じたる日本國民の深厚なる敬意と誠實なる感情の微表」

操縦するものであるが、露國參謀本部の要求により露軍に派遣せられ行動に参加して居る。又た白耳義武裝軍用自働車隊四中隊は各軍二門若しくは三門の機關砲及び一門の大砲を備へ、之はイーゼル方面よりもポーランド及びガリシヤの大平原に於て更らに有用なるものとなつて居る。

### 白耳義の徵募兵

獨逸は兵役年齡に達したる白耳義青年の退去を防ぎ、並に獨兵の逃走者を防がなために、白耳義和蘭の國境に鐵條網を張り電流を通じたことは著名の事實である。此他歩哨兵及び警備隊は常に國境を警戒し、若し國外に出でんとする者あれば、直ちに之を射撃することを嚴命されて居る。是等の手配あるにもかゝわらず、二萬の白耳義青年は生命を賭して自國を脱し、佛國に來りてアルバート國王の軍に投じた。又外國に居住し又は避難して居る數萬の白耳義國民の中からも、是等戰鬥員の多數の徵募兵を得たのである。是等戰鬥員の外に、軍需品並に軍用材料の製造に従事して居る一部隊がある。之は全部比較的老年者から編成されて居る。

### 白耳義に與へたる聯合國の新保證

佛國の厚意により白耳義政府は其行政諸廳を目下ハーヴルに置いて居る、白耳義國王は佛國政府から同市の壯麗なる邸宅を棒呈されたのであるが、併し陛下は自己の軍隊に近き質素なる田舎家に好んで住居されるのである。著者が聞く所によれば、アルバート王は開戰以來一度も故國の土地を離れられたことがないと云ふ。國王陛下、白耳義政府及び白耳義軍隊は日本をも加へたる聯合諸國より、聯合諸國は「白耳義が其政治上並に經濟上の獨立を回復し、且同國が今日まで蒙りたる戰爭の損害を充分に贖ひ、迄は斷じて戰爭を中止せざるべし」と云ふ保證を得て大に意を強ふして居るのである。

### アルバート國王の日本刀

白耳義王アルバート陛下は、東京朝日新聞社主を代表して杉村氏より献上

壊したる要塞の石材の下に埋もれ、司令官自身も人事不省に陥つて遂に捕虜となつたのである。

拾六日間（八月四日より八月廿日まで）敵軍に比して非常に少數なる白耳義軍は、即ち其の總數は僅かに拾貳萬五千人のみであつたが、克く敵軍を支持して敵が迅速に佛國に前進せんとする計畫を全然破壊し終はり、之れがために英佛兩軍は其到着の時日を得たのである。此期間白耳義軍は巧妙なる處置に依つて敵軍よりの包圍並に破壊を免るゝことが出来た。又八月廿日から十月六日に至る永い期間、白耳義軍は獨軍の後方を惱まし、敵の兵站線を脅迫したゝめに、獨軍は巴里進撃軍の大部分を割つて白耳義軍に當らしめたのである。十月六日以後は白耳義軍はフランダース及び佛國に於ける長き戰線を英佛兩軍と提携して一區域の防禦に任じて居たのである。白耳義軍の常に勇壯なる戰鬪振りは、イーゼルの會戰に於ても之を見るのである。其時聯合軍は白耳義軍に四十八時間或地點の支持を頼んだ。然るに救援軍の到着が十日間も遅延したのであつたが、白耳義軍は克く支へて一步も引かなかつたのである。戰爭開始以來白耳義軍の蒙つた損害は少くとも拾萬を下らぬと信せられて居る。

**白軍現今の地位** 獨軍の決心的努力にも係はらず白耳義軍は今日尙約八百キロメートル平方の國土を領有し長さ三十五キロメートルの戰線を支持して居る。

一千九百十四年の大敗にも係らず、白耳義は今尙六師團の軍隊をもつて敵に當つて居る。今日では一千九百十四年に有して居なかつた重砲及び多數の機關砲を有つて居る。又た手擲榴彈を所有し、尙ほ此他に白耳義の一將校が發明したる數回爆發する新式の榴彈をも持つて居て、之は獨軍に對して恐るべき破壊力を示したのである、其飛行隊、騎兵隊及び自働砲の如きも亦進歩して居る、白耳義の飛行機、自働砲は全然白耳義將校及び兵卒が之を



## 第七章 今次の戦争に於ける白耳義の軍事上の功績

### 人命の犠牲

白耳義再び獨逸の提議を拒絶す 獨逸の戦報に所謂「非常に優勢なる軍に對し勇敢に防戦し」リエーヂュは遂に陷落するに至り、獨逸は再び白耳義に對して無法なる要求を提出し白耳義は再び之を拒絶したのである。

奥匈國の宣戦 八月廿九日に奥匈國は白耳義に對して宣戦を布告した。奥匈國が獨逸同様に白耳義の中立維持を保證したことは既に述べた通りである。白耳義政府は奥匈國の宣戦を承認すると同時に、斷乎として中外に對し「如何に弱國なりと雖も、其國家としての義務を果さず其名譽を犠牲にして他の武力に降服する如きことは出来難し」と宣言した。

等しく白耳義中立の保證者である奥匈國の宣戦布告は、奥匈國の軍隊が奥匈國に於て製造の大砲を用ゐて、幾多の戦争寫真を見ても明かなるが如く、ナムールの砲臺を粉碎して一週間後迄發布されなかつたと云ふことは偶々獨逸側の心理状態を示すものとして強ち興味の無いことでもあるまい。勿論白耳義は、當時重砲は奥匈國製であつて是れを操縦して居た軍隊も亦奥匈國兵であつたと云ふことは、ずつと後になるまで知らなかつたのである。

白耳義軍の支持 白耳義軍が今まで友邦とのみ思ひ居たる奥匈國の臼砲や、又雲霞の如き獨逸の大軍に對抗して、勇敢にリエージュを死守したことは、後世の史上に特筆大書すべきことである。守兵の五分の四は崩

なる希望が最高の試験に遭遇して果して實現せらるゝは如何うか、今之を審判すべき地位に立つものである。又白耳義の側から見れば中立の賜は自己に取り歸着する處利益なるものか如何うかと言ひたい處である。」

而して茲に記憶しなければならぬことは、最初の白耳義國王がヴィクトリヤ女皇に書を寄せられた通り、一千八百卅一年に白耳義國民は中立國たることを希望して居なかつたことである。中立は實に列國が白耳義に強請したのであつた。

信を以て考へ得らるゝことは、

第一、此等の批難中唯の一も未だ曾て實證されたことがない。

第二、此等の批難は何れも明かに後に案出されたものであると云ふことである。獨逸は又其政治家論評家等が當然來るべき成行として嘗て切りに唱導したる白耳義の永久的併合の目的に對して此際下地を造つて置くの必要なるを悟つたのである。其後聯合軍側が海陸兩面に戰勝を收めたる結果、獨逸の政治家等が白耳義併合を主張する度が追々弱くなつて來たらしいのは事實である。然し一千九百十四年から一千九百十五年にかけて形勢が獨逸側に有利であると思はれた時分には、白耳義を併合するの必要を唱へた意見が獨逸に於て眞面目に行はれて居たことは當時の新聞紙の記事に依つても之を證するのである。

白耳義が降服して居たならば如何 此章に於て上來述べた白耳義に對する獨逸の種々なる譏諷に

付いて公平なる讀者は一つの問を自分にするに至るであらう。即ち假りに白耳義が獨逸の要求を容れて自國內に獨軍の通過を許したとしたならば、白耳義の中立に對する獨逸の態度は果て如何と云ふことである。併し之は云はずとも知れて居る。獨逸の政治家並に政治記者は直に斯く言ふであらう、「白耳義は自國の要塞を獨軍の占領に任せて自ら其中立を放棄したのである。若し白耳義が其中立を維持することが出來たならば、獨軍に對抗することも出來た筈である。故に白耳義の中立を廢して之を獨逸に併合するのが正當である」と。

或白耳義の政治家が言へる如く「世界は白耳義が自己の中立を保證するものとして之に對して期待したる種々



臣は之を「驚くべき要求」なりとして感動すべき且つ勇氣ある回答を送りたる其文中の一言一句までが悉く眞實であることを保證するのである。

「白耳義は其國際上の義務に對しては、常に忠實であつた。眞實公平なる精神をもつて義務を果し、又た其中立を維持し、且つ之を尊重せしむるためには、凡ての手段を講じたのである。若し白耳義政府が獨逸より申來りたる此提議を承容せしならば、是れ實に白耳義國民の名譽を犠牲にし、且白耳義政府が歐洲列國に負ふ義務を賣るに外ならぬのである。

米國に喩れば 白耳義の中立を破壊したる獨逸の罪科については上來種々述べたが、猶茲に記憶すべき一事實がある。假に獨逸が白耳義の中立を保證して居なかつたとしても、獨逸は白耳義を攻撃する何等の權利をも持つて居らぬのである。自分が別に怒るべき處あらざる國民に對して蠻行を慾まゝにする謂はれない。米國の一記者が指摘せる如く、獨逸は此筆法を以てすれば、米國を經由して加奈陀を侵害せんと要求しても差支へないことになる。

獨逸は白耳義侵入に對して只だ一の口實を主張することが出来る、即ち獨逸の參謀本部は佛國と戰ふに自國內に於て爲さず佛國內に於て戰はんとことを希望したと云ふ刻薄無道なる言ひ分である。獨逸の參謀官は「白耳義を通過して突進せば」(フオン、ベートマン、ホルウエツグ氏の言)獨逸は自國軍に有利なる陣地を占めることが出来るかと考へたのである。

## 凡て是れ無稽の批難

白耳義侵入後案出したる白耳義に對する幾多の批難攻撃はその何れをも深き確

危機に際する白耳義の行動 戦争開始の一二日前、時局は最も緊張し危機は白耳義に迫つた其時ほ

ど白耳義が自國の中立に對する忠良なる民心を發現したことは未だ曾てないのである。獨軍は八月四日既に國境に押寄たのである。併し白耳義政府は早く既に八月一日に於て全國地方官に布達を發して、各地の自治體當事者をして「一國若くは他の國に對して反感を表明する如き」目的に於ては、凡て集會目的又は饗宴を嚴禁すべしと命令したのである。

八月三日に及んで即ち獨逸の最後通牒の期限が切れて後、白耳義國王は英國皇帝に向つて單に白耳義の保全のために「陛下の外交的干涉」を請ふと依頼して來たのであつた。

敵軍の侵入 其翌日は既に敵軍が白耳義に侵入し白耳義軍隊は對敵行動を開始した後に白耳義は初めて武裝的援助を求めたのである。此間の消息に善く通じて居る記者(ワックスウエラー)は記述して「自分が信ずべき筋より聞く處に依れば、此時ブラツセルの政府部内には倫敦よりの回答が果して如何なるものなるかに就て甚しき憂慮があつた」と云つて居る。

後世の歴史家は今度の大戦争に於ける白耳義の蒙つた被害の大部分は、白耳義が自國の國境を現に敵兵に侵さるゝ迄は、國家存在の法度を侵害するに均しき他國の援助を求むることを絶體に爲さなかつたと云ふ斷乎たる名譽ある決心の然らしめた結果であることが分かつたであらう。

白耳義の忠實 一千八百三十年に白耳義の中立が初めて建てられてから今度の獨逸の侵入に至るまで、白耳義が爲し來つた凡ての事實は、獨逸が白耳義に其中立を侵害することを許可せよと頼み來りて白耳義外務大

義公使の言に依れば、ブラッセル市居住の身分高き某獨逸人の家の屋根には、無線電信の裝置が秘密にしてあつて此裝置は日中は取り去り夜になると再び取付けて居たと云ふことである。又白耳義の各都市が獨軍の侵入掠奪を受けた時に、曾て其地に居住して居た獨逸人等が獨軍の案内をして居るのを認めたと云ふことである。

### コンゴ問題

白耳義の中立に對する法外の議論は白耳義の亞弗利加コンゴ國併合に對する非難である。然し此事に關しては唯だ白耳義の中立を保證した列國は又た白耳義のコンゴ併合をも承認したのであると言へば足るのである。

### 白耳義の防戰

獨逸の一記者は、白耳義は國防が不充分であつたから其中立を破壊されたのであると公言して憚らぬのであるが、然し事實としては白耳義は國民皆兵制度を實行し、而して總人口七百萬人の一國として軍事實費は年額參千五百萬圓であつた。而して開戰の少し前から更に參千五百萬圓の特別軍事實費を賦課して居たのである。更に注目すべきは獨逸の侵入軍は獨逸政府が突然最後通牒を白耳義に送つてから十二時間以内に現はれたであるが、白耳義軍は直に是れに對して當時「勇猛なる抵抗」と獨逸官憲が認めた程の應戰をしたのである。

### 無稽の非難

然し獨逸が其場當りに言ふ皮肉を一々取上げて眞面目に辯駁して行くのは讀者の高明を侮辱する所以である。元來此等獨逸の言分に對しては今日まで未だ曾て何等の證據があつたことがない。而して茲に吾等が記憶すべきことは、斯くの如き皮肉を言ふ獨逸は其約束を破る如きことを何とも思はず、又世界の公法及び白耳義に對する自己の罪狀を他より責られて漸く承認する如き國であると云ふことである。(フォン、ベトマン、ホルウエツグ氏及びフォン、ヤーゴー氏の言述參照)



更に白耳義の國王が前崩御の少し前に「朕が國にも獨逸人のやうな教育を受けた青年が欲しいものだ」と仰らせれことは白耳義に於ける恐獨病者に對して述べられたものとは受取れないのである。或米國人が最近に出版した著書の中に言つて居る處は實際である、

「獨逸人が居住し、商賈を營んで居る外國の都市の中で、アントワープ程親切に尊敬を表して獨逸人を優遇する所はない。同市では獨逸人は撰擧權免許權又た各種の特權を得て居た。勳章又たは名譽の頌表は盛に獨逸人に與へられた。事ある時には毎も獨逸人は賓客として歡迎され、又た同市の市街中には著名なる居住獨逸人の名に因んで名づけられたのもあつた。而して居住獨逸人は毎も公開の席に於て自己の故郷とも云ふべきアントワープ市に對する其誠忠心を言明して居たのである。

**獨逸人の背信** 併し斯くもアントワープ市民より特別の優遇を受けたる獨逸人も、一度び機會來るや自己の恩主に對して直ちに背信の行爲を敢てして顧みなかつたのである、

「白耳義の警官が、極めて著名なる居住獨逸人の家の地下室より多量の彈藥と數百の小銃及び獨逸の軍服を發見したのである。某裕福なる獨逸人は地所を所有し、其庭園は要塞の壕に臨んで居たのである、有所獨逸人は陸軍官憲に向つて、若し許可を得ば壕より水を引き自分の庭園内に游泳池を設けて、兵士等に公開したいと申込んでた、官憲は此厚意ある申出を疑はずに承諾したのであつたが、彌々大事と云ふ場合になつて水は悉く固渇して居たのである。又た郊外の或る地面には獨逸の野砲を据付けるために混凝土の砲座が出來て居たのが分つた。

斯くアントワープ市中及び其附近に起つたと同様の事は、白耳義の他の處にも起つたのである。東京駐劄白耳

す」といふことであつた。

獨逸の著述家中殊にベルンハルデー將軍は「白耳義の中立は我軍を阻止するを得ず、中立は單に紙製の牆壁に過ぎぬ」と公然自白して居る。

最後に、一千九百十三年三月附の、後に佛國の手に入りたる獨逸陸軍秘密報告には、「次の戦争に於ては小國は之を皆獨逸の味方としてしまふが然らざれば之を征服しまふのである」と記述してある。

白耳義と瑞西　斯くの如く獨逸は佛國侵入を敏活ならしむるために、其優勢なる兵力をもつて白耳義を粉碎すべしとは世界が或程度まで獨逸に對して覺悟した處であらう。然し世界が全く期待して居なかつた事は他でもない、獨逸が白耳義に侵入した其同じ日に、獨逸政府は同じく中立國なる瑞西に向つて「全瑞西人民の抑へ難き意志に依つて」獨逸は「瑞西の中立を侵害する如き行爲に對しては悉く之を擊退すべき」希望を申出したことである。併かも其時獨逸政府は、佛軍を瑞西國境に誘致して、その勢力を裂き、以て其大部分を破壊することが出来る」と云ふ考案をも廻らしたのである。獨逸は又た、瑞西人口の三分の一は獨逸語を話す人種であると云ふ事實をも其胸算に入れたのである。

白耳義人は恐獨病者なりしや　或一派の獨逸人は得意氣に、白耳義人が獨軍に反抗したるは自國の中立を愛好するがためにあらず、全く恐獨病に罹つて居たからであると言觸らして居る。然し六萬の獨逸人が白耳義に居住して居た其上に、貳萬人の旅行者が年々白耳義の海岸地に遊びに行つて居た事實に徴して見ても、白耳義國內に強度の排獨感情があつたとは如何しても想はれない。

ると定めて居たとしても別に之に不思議はないのである。何故なれば、是迄で將來の獨佛戰爭を論じた軍事評論家は、大抵獨逸は機先を制して必ず白耳義を通過して佛國に達するならんと、公然豫想して居たからである。(一例として開戦數ヶ月前に、巴里に於て出版されたる佛國某上院議員と同一某陸軍中佐の共著にかゝる或書物に著者は明確に決論して「獨逸が佛國に侵入する場合には、白耳義を通過すべし」と述べて居る。

而して此等軍事評論家が斯る説をなせる理由となるべき事實は實際にあつたのである。

獨逸皇帝とは親戚關係があつて、獨逸の情況に通じて居る羅馬尼のチャールス王は一千九百十二年に次の如きことを言つて居る、「一千八百七十年に行はれたる如き奇蹟は今度は繰り返されまい。白耳義は其中立を侵害さるゝ大なる危険がある」と。

更に、開戦の一年前に、白耳義國王が獨逸を訪ねた際、獨帝は參謀總長フォン・モルトケ元帥列席の上で、極めて慎重に非公式的の意見の交換を爲し、其結果に就ては何等疑はるべき處がなかつた。獨帝は、白耳義國王が自國の中立防禦力の不足なるに想到して「深刻なる印象」を受ける様に痛切に獨逸の佛國に對する感情を表示したのである。

更に又諸外國の觀察者は「獨逸が白耳義國境に布設したる多數の軍用鐵道は經濟上の必要に比例しては多過ぎることを認めて居たのである。」

而してドエツチ、クリーゲ、ツアイツング紙(一千九百十四年九月六日)が認て居る通り「獨逸の佛國侵入方略は久しき以前から完全に出來上つて居る、而して是れが成功を期するには白耳義を通過して北方よりするに如か



置くが、白耳義は今爾の戦争に和蘭が動員するまでは動員しなかつたのであるが、第一師團は英國に對して、第四師團及び第五師團は佛國に對して、而して第參師團は獨逸に對して動員する計畫であつた。(第二師團及び第六師團は豫備としてあつた。) 然るに白耳義が、其各師團の位置を變更したのは、實に獨逸の最後通牒を受取てから、二十四時間後のことであつた。語を換へて言へば、白耳義は戦争前屢々中外に宣明したる如く、何れの國なりとも、白耳義の中立を侵害するものに對しては、斷乎として戰ふために充分の戰備を整へて居た證跡は歴然たるものがあつたのである。

(白耳義の外務次官は數ヶ月前に、白耳義は其隣邦何れの國よりの侵入に對しても、之に對抗すべき方法は充分に研究してあることを明かに述べて居る。又一千九百十三年の初めに當つて白耳義外務大臣は「敵國軍隊が將來オストエンド其他に上陸した場合」を顧慮する必要に對して、特に陸軍大臣の注意を促したことがある。)

又一千九百十四年九月卅日に於ける白耳義陸軍大臣の演説に依つて此事實が確證されて居る。

「英國が若し白耳義に其軍隊の防遏の上陸を行ふに於ては白耳義陸軍は必ず強硬に之に反抗すべきことは夙に知る所であつた。アガシル事件の當時(本書十六章參照)白耳義政府は同國駐在各國大使に向つて、毫も誤解の恐れなき言辭に於て、白耳義政府は列國に對して自己の及ぶ限りあらゆる方法を盡して白耳義の中立を尊重せしむべく、又た如何なる方面を問はず白耳義の中立に害を及ぼさんとするものに對しては、斷乎たる決心を有するものなることを警告して憚らなかつたのである。」

**獨逸の白耳義に對する強迫** 併し有體に言へば、白耳義が其隣邦中、獨逸を以て最も怖るべき國であ

相は「未だ白耳義が既に某國と妥協して居たと云ふことを知ることが出来なかつたのである」而して白耳義の「責むべき咎」は「それ以來論證」されたのであると外相は述べて居る。曾て或有名な政治家が、内閣會議で或事項が決定されてから後で同僚の閣員に向つて、「偕て、此行爲は價值を引き上げやうとするのか、又は引き下げやうとするのか、何方と言つたところで別にかまわぬが、只だ人に話す場合には、何方か一方を言ふことに決めやう」と言つたことがあるが、獨逸の宰相も外相も他山の石として此談を聞いて置くが宜からう。

クルツプ會社に問へ 獨逸が白耳義に加へたる行爲は元來白耳義が愚かにも英佛兩國と結んで自國の中立を危險ならしむるに至つたのであるから、獨逸にはそれだけの言譯が立つと云ふ卑劣なる言分に對して、尙ほ之れを抗論するの必要があるとすれば、只だ次の事實に於て分るのである。白耳義の武器は皆外國製であるが、英國や佛國で使用するものとは製式が同じでない、皆獨逸で製造したものである。開戰當時白耳義政府とクルツプ其他の獨逸の軍器製造會社との間に未決濟の注文が夥しくあつたのである。實を言へば、白耳義の軍器と、同國の中立援護の嘆願に應じて同國救助に赴いた諸國の軍器との間に此相違があつたのと、又た一方に於て白耳義は其陸軍改造の中途に開戰になつて、獨逸の攻撃を受けたことは白耳義に取つて容易ならざる不利益であつた。

二方面を目的としたる防禦計畫 實際各國の軍事界に知れて居る通り、白耳義の防禦計畫は英國、佛國及び獨逸の三國に等しく對抗して畫策されたのである。即ちアントワープの要塞は英國に對し、ナムールは佛國に對し而してリエージュは獨逸に對して設備されたわけである。平時に於ける白耳義陸軍の演習は交互に英國、佛國、又獨逸の萬一の侵入を假定して舉行されたのである。實際、戰爭前白耳義陸軍の動員は、序に斷つて

獨逸人が英國に對する種々の非難攻撃の中、一つの事實を等閑に附して居る、之が爲めに獨逸の英國に對する批難攻撃も全く無意味のものとなつてしまつた、即ち一千九百十三年に英國は白耳義に向つて、始めは口頭をもつて、次には文書をもつて、英國政府は「白耳義中立の最初の破壊者たらざるべし」と云ふ保證を與へて居ることである。

### 獨逸宰相の虚言

白耳義の不誠實を攻撃して居る獨逸の政治家等は、反つて自己の誠實に對する觀念は果してどんなものであらうかと人に不審を起させるのである。戦争前には、獨逸政府は白耳義に對して、如何なる場合に於ても中立國として白耳義が其義務を果す上に獨逸は何等抗辨すべきことがなかつたことを吾人は知つて居るのである。又吾人は獨逸が白耳義に送つた最後通牒中に「兩國を結合する友誼的關係」に就て述べて居ることも知つて居る、又た吾人は宰相フオン、ベートマン、ホルウエツグ氏が（一千九百十四年八月四日に）獨逸の白耳義侵入は白耳義に當然何等かの不都合があつての爲めでないことを承認して居ることも知つて居る、獨逸は「不正」を行つて居た、白耳義の「正當なる抗議」に反抗して行動したとホルウエツグ氏も云つて居る。然るに二三ヶ月の後（即ち一千九百十四年十二月二日）に、同宰相は獨逸議會に於て、自分は其時「軍事上の理由」に依つて斯く言つたのであると抗辯して居る。當時白耳義は獨逸の提出したる條件に對して同意する如き模様であつたと宰相は言つて居る、宰相は言明して、實を言へば當時獨逸政府は白耳義に對する罪狀は之を「豫想」して居たのである、又た斯く豫想する「證據」もあつたのだと云つて居た、然しこれだけでない。外相フオン、ヤーゴウ氏は一千九百十六年四月六日に宰相を傷く素破抜いた、即ち宰相が一千九百十四年八月四日に演説した時には、宰



批難攻撃を連發した。而してかゝる取るに足らざる獨逸の對聯合國批難攻撃も或部分は、歐洲の實狀か日本の一部には捏造されて弘まつて居るかも知れぬゆゑ、其重なる點だけでも訂正して置くことは必要であると思ふ。

**所謂英白協約** 獨逸人が毎も好んで指摘して居る處は、白耳義は其英國との關係上妥協的中立をして居たと云ふことである。此獨逸の言條は、一千九百六年に起つた事件に胚胎して居るのである。同年に於てモロツコ問題に就ては獨逸が佛國に對する態度は殊に侵略的であつた。(本書十六章參照)それ故當時英國より二人、白耳義より二人の軍人が會合して非公式に意見を交換した。此時の公文書は其後屢々公表されて居るから、是れを讀めば直ちに此會議は全く白耳義の中立が、彌々獨逸の爲めに侵害された曉に於て、探るべき處置を研究したものであることが知れるのである。それゆゑ英白兩國間に軍事的協約に少しにても類するやうなものは決して締結されて居なかつたと云ふことの證據は明かである。

第一に英國が「獨逸を支持すべく聯合行動に出づること」を彌々約束したのは八月五日のことで、獨逸が白耳義に最後通牒を發してから六十時間以上も經過した後である。

第二に戦争が開始されてからも、英國軍隊は暫くの間到着しなかつた。

尙ほ申添へたいことは、白耳義と英國との關係に於て白耳義に對する獨逸の言條は甚だ薄弱なるものであつたから關係文書を發表するにしても、種々小細工を弄したのである。例へば「秘密的意見の交換」と言ふ言葉を「秘密協約」と譯して居る。又白耳義陸軍省に於ける覺書の日附が一千九百六年九月末と書いてあるのを、一千九百六年九月締結すと譯して、凡て協約と云ふ考へに符合させやうとしたのである。

## 第六章 殺人犯者が自己の殺せし人の人格を非議す

### 獨乙が白耳義及び其隣國に對して加へたる誹謗

「汝は國民に向つて、吾等獨逸人は、勇武にして負くることなき天使より成る神聖なる國民にて、周圍には殺人者、惡漢、倭奸者等の惡人が取巻いて居ること信じさせやうとして居る、無稽なる妄想を弘めんとする者である。」（マキシミリアン、ハーデン氏論、獨逸の評論雜誌「ツクンフト」）

獨逸は何が故に白耳義を怒れるか 八月三日に獨逸宰相は白耳義公使に向つて、獨逸は白耳義を批難すべき何等の理由を有せず、又た「白耳義の態度は今日迄常に完全に正しかつた」と辯明して居ることは既に述べた通りである。

併しながら、其後獨逸は白耳義に對して忽ち激怒して來たのである。第一は白耳義が獨逸の豫期に反して猛烈に自國を防禦したこと、第二は白耳義が頑張つたゝめに獨軍の佛國侵入が一時阻止され、計畫に齟齬を來たしたことからである。

それは夫れとして、其後又獨逸は、白耳義が自國に比して更らに遙か有力なる敵と對抗したるがため世界の同情は皆白耳義に集まつたことを自覺したのである、元と獨逸は佛國へ侵入さへすれば其手段として條約の破棄や無抵抗の人民を虐殺することは何でも無いと高を束つて居たのである。

其以來獨逸は白國政府及び國民、又た英佛兩國の白耳義に於ける關係に對して、亂暴なる併かも稚氣滿々たる

いだことを後悔して居る程であるから歐洲に於て再び戦争を賭するやうなことは好まなかつたのである。英國が其當時獨逸に對する寛容の態度は今次の戦争に於て其結果を現はし、愛蘭に於ける獨逸の陰謀となつたことが知らるゝのである。(フォン、ビュローロ公は右の著書中に、其當時の一般外交状態は英國に取つは不利で無く、又た獨逸は未だ戦備が整つて居らなかつたことを認めて居る。)愛蘭問題の解決は、他の何れの帝國にも許さるべきもので無い言論及び集會結社の自由の下に達せられたる處である、之は愛蘭に居住した人でなければ實際了解の出来ないことである。此困難なる解決が一時獨逸の陰謀の爲めに殘酷に壞はされたことは英國民が獨逸に始末書を作らせる事項中に尙は一項目を加へた譯である。

此他の事項に就ては後章に於て詳細明瞭に述べるつもりである。



利害は何等著しき影響を受けなかつたのである。然も英國は彼等救済の爲めに終始一貫數百萬圓の義捐金を醸出した。而して英國政府は自己のためには何等利益なき此種の外交は土壌の爲めに嘲けられたのである。從來是等兩國の世界に對する關係は凡て利己的なることを公然標榜して居るのである。

### 南亞事件と獨逸

南亞に於ける將來の聯邦に對する獨逸の陰謀は、英國をして戰爭を開始するの餘儀なきに致らしめた主なる原因である、然も此開戦に對しては英本國の思慮ある人士は猛烈に反對したのであつたが併し此戰が終結するかせぬのに早く既に英國人は自國に反抗したるボーア人に完全なる自治權を與へたることに依つて世界を驚したのである。今日二人のボーア人の將官は英軍及びボーア軍を指揮して獨逸に正當なる複讐戰を行つて居る。即ち此二將軍は西部亞弗利加の南部獨領を占領し又獨帝が海外に有する最後の領土なる東部亞弗利加を完全に擄得したのである。

若し獨逸が南亞に於て英國の地位にあつたならば、又た若し獨逸が英國を遇せるが如くに自ら遇せられたならば將又た獨逸が英國よりも一層強大なる海軍を持つて居つたならば、獨逸が如何なる行動に出でたかと云ふことは之を察するに餘りあるのである、當時獨逸議會に於ける討論中明らかに此事實が示されて居る。又當時の宰相フオン、ビュロー公の著書にして、今次の戰爭中に再版されたる「獨逸政策」中にも明らかに記述されて居るのである、之に依つて見るも、獨逸は凡て理由なき且つ全く利己的の干涉に對しては、満足を得るために其海軍力に訴へたることであらう。

### 獨逸と愛蘭

併し英國は獨逸ならば爲すらしき此種の行動は採らなかつた。英國は既に南亞に於て血を濺

あるか如何うか分からぬが、「併し善道の爲めには強硬に戦つた立派なる歴史を持つて居るのである」と述べて居る。此頃バルフォア氏は、多くの小國が獨立するやうになつたのは、英國が海上に敵する者を持たなかつた過去二世紀間の事であると指摘して居る、則ち「伊太利は統一され、希臘は其獨立を得、白耳義は一國を形成し、南米諸共和國は建設され、而してモンロー主義は生れた」と、尙ほ之に對して英國が海上に敵する者を持たなかつた時代に、英政府は奴隸賣買の惡習を防止してしまつたことをバルフォア氏は附記しても宜いのである。

（瑞西國記者の聚めたる過去百年間の事實に據る「世界歴史上に於ける英人の特性」の附録を見よ、）英國人は希臘の中立を確立せんが爲めには血を濺いだ、尤も其血の内にはバイロンの血も混つて居る、丁度其如くに白耳義王國を樹立する爲めにも英國は亦た其主動者となつて居る。

奧太利の羈絆を脱せんとして遂に希望を達したる伊太利の爲めには、英國ほど血と金とに於て熱烈なる同情を寄せた國は他になかつた。又た波蘭人には倫敦で得たる如き情誼厚き友は未だ曾て無かつたのである。

リンコルンが黑人奴隸制度を脱して合衆國を建設せんがために南方諸州と戦つて居つた時に英國人中の最も善良なる人々は總てリンコルンに左袒したのである、殊にランカシャ紡績工場の従業員は奴隸が製作せる綿を用ふるを潔しせず終に餓死したるが如き特筆すべき佳話がある。

英國に於て古來最も著名なる宰相の一人は、勃牙利人虐殺に對し土耳其を膺懲せんとせる露國に同情を表せざるが爲めに其地位を失ふに至つた。

英國利害の消長は敢て勃牙利人の運命とは關係を持たなかつたと同様に、アルメニア人虐殺に對しても英國の

自國政府に送りたる公文書を一讀すれば分かる。

「アルバート皇帝が英國の援助を求むるために送りたる其書簡の通讀（英國衆議院に於て）は議場を深く感激せしめたり、衆議院は今夕軍事費支出を決議せんとす、協賛を得るは確かなり」と。

首相アスキス氏の宣言（英國首相は下院に於て宣言して）「若し吾人が躊躇し又は姑息的手段に安んじたならば我國は不名譽を自身に蒙らざるを得ざることを茲に只だ一言する。」

「吾人は嚴肅なる國際的義務を履行する爲めに戦つて居る、此義務たるや若し之を日常生活に於て個人間の關係であつたならば單に法律上のみならず又た名譽上の義務として之を考ふべきもので、苟くも自尊心ある人は之を默過するに忍ひぬのである。物質的威力が時として國家人類の發達上主要なる權力であり又た要素である如く見ゆる今の時に、吾人の主義とする、假令小國なりとも強大不遜なる大國の專横的意志の儘に國際上の信誼をも蔑視して蹂躪さるべきものでないと云ふことを明らかならしむる爲めに戦つて居るのである。」

是等の主義を維持することは世界文明に關係する處重大なるものである。

英國の經歷　英國衆議院に於けると同様に國民一般の輿論も亦感動された。「其援助」は悶え苦しむ白耳義國民の憐むべき求めに應じて與へられた。日本の中學生諸子は何れも英國國民は假令何等かの缺點はあらうとも、「自由の爲めに正當に戦ふて居る」國民の趣旨に對しては利慾を離れて之を援けると云ふ世界の國民中殊に名譽ある地位に立つものであることを知つて居る。

有名なる某著述家の言の如く「英國人は空想には餘り動かされない國民である」と云ふことは果して其通りで



し自國が此條約を蹂躪せば、英國の輿論は之れが爲めに如何に感動するかは充分分かつて居る筈である。之は獨逸が佛國と戰爭中、英國は只だ引込んで、獨逸に白耳義で思ふまゝに遣らせて呉れと云ふ依頼を英國は幾度となく獨逸から受けたのに依つても分かる。一週間の内に前後四回も之を頼んで來たのである。

七月二十九日に、獨逸は、白耳義の中立を尊重することを約束することは出來ぬが併し若し英國が引込んで居ると云ふならば獨逸は歐洲に於ける佛國の領土は何處も併合することは無いと申込んだ。之れは英國首相が「破廉恥」と侮辱したる獨逸の提案である。

八月一日、倫敦駐在獨逸公使は、英國が中立を保持すれば其代償として「佛國及其領土の保全は獨逸に於て之を保證すべし」と云ふ、サー、エドワード、グレー氏が記述せる通りの相談さへも持ちかけたのである。

八月三日、獨逸大使は（倫敦の諸新聞に寄書して）「若し英國が何處までも中立國たるに於ては獨逸は全然海軍の行動を放棄し、白耳義海岸を根據地として使用せざるべし」と申出た。

八月四日、今度は獨逸外務大臣が「最も積極的な保證」を爲して「獨逸は白耳義に於て如何なる軍事的行動に出づるとも白耳義の領土を併合する如きことは何等の口實に依るとも萬々あることゝなし」と述べて居る。

英國輿論の沸騰 それ故、若し英國が白耳義中立の保證者の一人たる自己の義務を無視して獨逸の白耳義侵入を許容する意志があつたならば、假令暫時にても戰爭を避けて自己の利益を保護することが出來たと云ふことは充分明白である。

英國が戰爭に加入したのは全く公益の爲めであつた、排獨思想に刺激された譯ではない。八月三日佛國大使が

八月四日獨軍は白耳義に侵入した。獨逸は再び英國から「斯くては容易ならぬ結果を來す恐がある」から、「既に此場合に差掛つては居るが」、最一度考へ直ほしては貰へまいかと云ふ問合はせを受けたが、獨逸は白耳義に對する無法なる攻撃は此儘止める譯には行かぬと斷然拒絶した。此時始めて英國は嫌や、い、い、乍らも宣戰を布告したことは總ての公文書が之を示す通りである。

**英國民の激昂** 英國政府は先きに、若し白耳義の中立が侵害される場合には英國民の激昂は之を抑制することが非常に困難であると通告した。之は英國民の性格を正しく豫想したものである。若し獨逸が一千八百七十年の戰爭に於ける如く、佛國々境を越えて之を進撃するに甘んじたならば、英國の輿論は、宣戰に對して甚だ多數の有力なる一團となつて強硬に反對したことであらう。有名なる佛國政治家クレマンソー氏も言へる如く「白耳義の中立が侵害されざる限り英國は果して何時劍を抜いて立つか、誰にも分らない」のである。英國は佛國の身方として戰ふの義務は持たなかつた。單に佛國と協商を結んだのみで其同盟國ではなかつた。サー、エドワード、グレー氏が七月三十一日附の公文書に於て之を説明する如く佛國は元來露國の同盟國なるが故に戰爭に加はつたのである。塞耳比に於ける紛争は「佛國の關する處ではない」。此地に在る者一人として之が爲めに英國の條約又は義務に累を及ぼすと思ふ者は無いのである」と。

**獨逸の英國買収策** 併し英國は、佛國が其國境より攻撃を被むるとも、佛國の身方として立つ義務はないとするも、獨逸が白耳義を通過して佛國を攻撃せんと脅す時は英國の歐洲公法に對する義務は忽ち其渦中に投ぜらゝることになるのである。公法には白耳義を「永世中立國」と最も明らかに宣言してある。蓋し獨逸には若

## 第五章 英國開戦の決心

### 英國が戦争に参加せる理由

「唯一枚の紙片」 フォン、ヤゴー氏に就きては是迄に止めて、八月四日伯林駐在の英國大使に向つて宰相フォン、ベスマン、ホルヴェヒ氏は「非常に狼狽しながら、白耳義の中立を擁護する爲めには戦争をも辭せざる英國政府の行動は實に「恐るべき」ものであると云ふ苦情を出した。是は「只だ中立と云ふ一語は只だ一枚の紙片」に過ぎぬとして居たからである。英國大使は答へて、英國の名譽は「白耳義中立を擁護する爲めに全力を盡すべしと云ふ嚴肅なる約定を守ること」を要求するのである。此嚴肅なる約定は其儘之を守るべきのみ、若し然らざれば將來英國との約定に人は果して信を置くか、約定を守れば其結果憂ふべきものがあらうとも、之を以て嚴肅なる約定を破る口實とは到底爲されない」と云つた。

英國が獨逸に與へたる數度の警告 戦争開始の前夜に於て獨逸は、白耳義の中立を維持すべき歐羅巴の義務に對する英國の意見に就ては、何等不審の點がなかつたことを茲に述ぶるは無用ではあるまい。

七月三十一日、英國は獨佛兩國に對し兩國は歐洲の公法を遵守し且つ白耳義の中立を尊重すべき特別の保證を要求した。佛蘭西は之に對し直ちに保證を與へたが、獨逸は何等答ふる處がなかつた。

八月一日英國は獨逸に對し、若し白耳義の中立を侵害する如きことがあつたならば「英國は輿論の激昂を抑制することが非常に困難である」と警告した。



之に對してフォン、ヤゴ―氏は「予は一個人としてそれを認める。併し外務大臣としては云ふべき意見を持たぬ」と答へたのみであつた。

白耳義の態度の正當なるを公式に承認す　フォン、ヤゴー氏との對談の續きは又均しく興味あるものであつた。氏は公使に向つて、

「獨逸が貴國に御願ひする處は大したことではない。唯だ自由に通過することが出來て獨軍の必要とする佛國の或要塞地點を占領したいと云ふに過ぎないのである」と。

公使は之が返事には困らなかつた。曰く「若し佛蘭西が同様な事を我に頼んで我國がそれに應じたと假定したならば貴國は我國を卑怯なる誠意なきものとして罪を問ふではなからうか」と。フォン、ヤゴー氏が此切實なる質問に答へることの出來なかつたことは少しも不思議はない。

公使は更らに語を繼いで、

「兎も角も貴國には我國を咎める理田があるか、我國は過去七十五年間常に獨逸のみならず他の列強に對して中立の義務を盡したではないか。我國は獨逸に忠實なる友邦としての證據を示したではないか。之に對して獨逸は何を以て報ゆるつもりであるか。白耳義を歐羅巴の戰場としやうとするのではないか。而して近代の戦争が如何に荒敗と慘禍とを齎すか。予は寒心に堪えぬ」と。

フォン、ヤゴー氏は之に對して唯だ「獨逸は何にも白耳義を咎むる理由を持つてゐない。白耳義の態度は常に正當であつた」と答へたのみであつた。

白耳義公使は「然らば貴下は白耳義が名譽を失はずして回答したる處以外には何にも言ふことが出來ぬのを承認しなければならぬ」と答へた。

「佛蘭西は白耳義侵入の準備をして居る」と言つたに過ぎなかつた。白耳義政府は「佛蘭西に對する獨逸の奇怪なる譏謗に就て多く語るは無用のことである」と説明した。白耳義政府は明瞭に佛蘭西が白耳義侵入の意志のなかつたことを聲明して居る。

公式に佛蘭西に對する誹謗を止む 獨逸外務大臣フォン、ヤゴー氏は、若し獨逸が白耳義に侵入しなかつたならば、佛蘭西は我れに先んじて侵入したであらうと云ふ獨逸の口實の全然無根であつたことを立證した。八月四日、伯林駐在の英國大使と對談中外務大臣は斯く言つて居る、

「獨逸は最も敏活なる且つ最も容易なる途に依つて佛蘭西に侵入し、而して戰時行動を進捗せしめ、出來得る丈早く決戰的打撃を敵に與へんとしたのである。これは獨逸に取りて死活の問題である。若し獨軍が南方より進軍したと假定したならば、道路の不備と要塞の堅固なるによつて非常なる抵抗を受け又多くの時間を費さなければ目的を達し得なかつたのである。此時間の損失は則ち露軍が獨逸國境に近づく時間を益する譯である。迅速なる行動は獨軍の大なる長所であつたが、露軍の長所は其無盡藏なる軍隊の補充力であつた」と。

又其前日フォン、ヤゴー氏は伯林駐在の白耳義公使に對して次の如く談つた。

「若し獨逸が兩方面からの挾撃を脱れ様と思へば、先づ佛蘭西に決戰的打撃を與へ、轉じて露西亞に向ふ様になければならぬと。

それに對して公使は「併し佛蘭西の國境線は隨分長いから白耳義を通過することは避けることが出來はしないだらうか」と言つた。フォン、ヤゴー氏は「其國境線は防備が餘り堅固過ぎて居る」と答へた。



る意志があつたと云ふ證據は、未だ嘗て擧げられてない、併し獨逸は此言譯ばかりは毎も繰返へして居たのであるから、若し其様な事實があつたとすれば、必ずや獨逸は之を證據立てる爲めに如何なる事實をも引合に出した筈である。然るに何等此様な事實はなかつたのである。

之に反して佛蘭西は以前の言明を繰返して七月三十一日英國及び白耳義政府に對して「白耳義の中立を尊重することに決した」と云ふ契約を與へた。白耳義首都駐在の佛國公使は又「假令白耳義の國境は獨逸の大軍が襲來しても佛蘭西軍が白耳義に侵入するが如きことは決してない」と言明した。是等の言明に加へて、佛蘭西は白耳義を通過して獨逸に對して急激なる攻撃を開始する準備をして居なかつたことの證據を擧げることが出来るのである。其證據と云ふのは、佛蘭西が白耳義政府からの援助の申込みを受けてから二週間の後、漸く相當の兵力を送ることが出来たと云ふことである。

(白耳義侵入及び英佛露に對する軍事的援助の申込時日は八月四日で幾等かの佛國騎兵が到着したのは八月五日で又相當の佛軍が到着したのは八月十六及び十九日であつた。而して英軍がモンズに上陸したのは八月二十二日であつた)。

佛蘭西が獨逸に先んじて白耳義に侵入しやうとして居つたと云ふ獨逸の言譯の無根である證據は、之が獨逸の最後の通牒に書き加へてなかつたことで明らかである。最後の通牒に書いてあつたのは唯だ獨逸政府が佛軍は白耳義國內に侵入せんとする「意志を持つ」との情報に接したと云ふに過ぎなかつたのである。

八月四日、獨逸宰相フオン、ベスマン、ホルヴェヒが議會に於て演説したる處も同じ意味であつた。宰相は唯だ

## 第四章 獨逸の口實

「佛蘭西は獨逸の侵入に先んぜしならん」

### 有罪の自白

獨逸が斯る驚く可き行動を爲すに就いては何か口實を設けるために非常手段に出づるであらうとは世人の均しく豫期せる處であつた。

獨逸は條約上の契約を悉く破つた。

獨逸は其外交家の個人的言明を僞つた。

獨逸は自國の國際公法教科書中に條約上の義務に關し明瞭に記述せる處に反する行爲に出た。

國境に於て獨逸に反抗したる無害の白耳義人を殺戮し、以て獨逸は人道上許す可からざる暴虐を敢行した。

世界舉つて其無法を責めたるに對し、獨逸宰相は議會に於て獨逸の「國際公法違反」を打消す可からざることを認めて居た。又た「白耳義の正當なる對敵行爲」及び「獨逸が敢行したる蠻行」をも自告したのである。是れに優る明白なる白狀は又とあるまい。

### 佛國に對する讒謗

茲に於て口實を作り始めた。フオン、ベスマン、ホルヴェヒ氏は（議會に於て）、又フオン、ヤゴン氏は（柏林駐在白耳義公使との對談中）、共に獨逸が若し白耳義に侵入しなかつたならば佛蘭西は獨逸に先鞭を付けて侵入したであらう。否既に佛蘭西は其準備をして居つたと辨訴した。

「言譯をする者は自分を罪に陥る」と云ふ歐羅巴に一つの格言がある。佛蘭西が獨逸に先んじて白耳義に侵入す

に全力を盡すならば世界の尊敬を贏ち得て精神的に復興するであらうと宣言せられ、而して外務大臣は「我は假令征服さるゝとしても決して降参の意志なし」と云ふ反抗的言を獨逸に向つて發した時に、

「涙が幾多の外交團員の眼より落ちて居た。此涙こそ斯の如き勇敢なる言動を發したる人々の心に共鳴せる最も名譽ある涙であつたのである。斯の如き決心を以て白耳義は其政治的名譽を極度に發揮して遂に光榮ある國となつたのである。」



義務を果さざるものとなるべしと云ふ文句に讀み移つた時、余は咽喉が張り裂ける様に感じた。全く感情が迫まつて居たのである。それでも余は最後迄讀み續けてしまつた。

「ウェッバー氏は予の前に直立した儘不動の姿勢を取つて居た、氏は突然予の兩手を握り暫らく無言で予を見詰めてゐたが稍振ひを帯びた聲で白耳義萬歳と言つたのみであつた。次に氏は二の文書を筆記して公使館へ歸つた」

**獨逸の失態** 尠なくも或一人の白耳義公人の意見を徴するに、獨逸の目的は、白耳義國防の弱點を知悉して居る故之を威嚇して軍隊の自由通過を得るものと想像して居たらしく思はれた、故に白耳義政府の強硬なる回答に依つては獨逸は侵害を躊躇するに至るであらうと云ふのであつた。

「獨逸が友邦の中立を全然無視して迄も政治的失態に陥ると云ふのは實に容易ならぬことである。其上世界の非難は逃るゝに由なく最後の勘定の時には之が随分重く懸つてくることであらう」と。

然るに獨逸は自己の失態に悟らなかつたのである。而して白耳義政府は自國の義務を遂行することに着手した。

**外交家の感動** ド、ボンピエール氏は獨軍侵入の當日、宮中の陛下の御前に於ける感動の情況に就て次の如く述べて居る。

「室の中央に、他の人々から少し離れて埃甸國公使館參事官が立つて居た。此人が來合はせたのは偶然である。當時の活劇には全く關係のない本國政府の或照會を携へて來たのである。大勢の人々の感動の中に在りて、自身も耐りかねて涙を拭き取つて居たのである。」

開戦當時白耳義の歴史的議會に於て皇帝は假令白耳義が物質的に滅亡するとしても無法なる侵入者に對し防禦

白耳義人の行動 白耳義人の取りたる處置は次の如き回答を送つたことで之は確かに歴史上最も氣高き

ものと一つであつた。

「獨逸政府が強請しつゝある白耳義中立の侵害は明らかに國際公法を蹂躪するものなり。」

「白耳義政府にして若し此要求に應じたらんには國家の名譽を犠牲にし又た歐洲に對する義務を果さざるものとなるべし。」

「白耳義政府は其權利を侵害する者に對し全力を盡して之を防禦せんことに決したり。」

翌朝獨逸軍隊は白耳義に侵入した、其當時の震駭すべき光景は後章に於て述べやう。

活劇 白耳義の外務次官ド、ボンビエル氏の述べた活劇の事實を此處に載録するは必ずしも本論の進行を

妨げないことと思ふ。此人のみならず、白耳義外務省中一人として獨逸の通告に對しては斷然拒絶の外何物もないと思はぬ者はなかつた。其の言に據れば當時一般の感情は次の如くであつた。

「碎けるならば玉と成つて碎けるに如くはない。吾等の運命は獨逸の要求に應じた場合よりも更に惡くなることはなからう、若し吾々が獨逸の要求に應じたとしたならばどんな顔をして英佛人に會はされ様かと。」

此回答を送附した翌朝、英國公使館附一等書記官ウエツパー氏は獨逸の通告及び白耳義の回答を複寫す可く外務省を訪問した。ド、ボンビエル氏は此際の活劇を次の如く記述して居る。

ウエツパー氏は文書の大意は知つて居ても其詳細の内容を知らなかつたらしい、余は氏に双方の文書を読んで聞かせた。余が次の白耳義政府にして若し此要求に應じたらんには國家の名譽を犠牲にし而して歐洲に對する其

## 第三章 白耳義侵害さる

### 卑劣と高潔との對照

白耳義の慘憺たる苦境　此慘憺たる危機に遭遇したる白耳義の回答は如何であつたか。白耳義の人口は獨逸の六千萬に比して僅か七百萬に過ぎない、軍備の點より見れば恰も巨人に對する小兒の如き者である、故に獨逸宰相が戦争開始後に言へる如く「必要の前には法律なし」と叫び得たのも當然であつた、白耳義の立場は恰も風前の燈の如きものであつた、動員するには一週間の餘裕さへもなかつた。而して白耳義政府の第一の義務は自國民の生命財産の安全を保證することであつた。佛蘭西に對して白耳義は暫時の間小なる楯となることは出来やうが、佛蘭西は白耳義には何の役にも立たなかつた。唯恃みとする英軍の來援も、英國の當時の狀況より推せば到着に手間取れて何等の頼みにもならぬ様に思はれたのであつた。白耳義が考へる時間は只だ其の一夜が與へられたのみである、其短時間の間に於て名譽を全うする最良の決心は其侵入者に對して單に形式上の軍事的威示行動を取るのみであつた。米國の或有名なる法律家の言の如く、「總ての物質的利害は實に白耳義が強大なる其の隣國の強制的要求に服従すべきを勧めた。白耳義國內を通過して迅速に進軍し以て佛蘭西の虚に乗ずれば獨逸の成功は期せらるべく思はれた。而して白耳義は獨逸の勝利の援助者として戰捷の分配に與かる地位に居たのである。併も白耳義人は、昔シーザーがゴール種族中最も勇敢なるものと宣言したる古代ベルガイ民族の名譽を終に傷けなかつたのである。」



隊は動員された。而してブラッセルに在る同じ獨逸公使は白耳義首都の不安なる記者に面接して「軍隊は白耳義の領土を通過せざるべし」と言明した。同公使は白耳義外務大臣と會見して「白耳義人は獨逸の行動に對して安心して可なり」との個人的意見を述べた。

極秘の依頼 然も是等の言明を與へたる當夜、獨逸公使は白耳義政府に一公文書を呈した、それには「極秘」と記してあつて翌朝七時前迄則ち十二時間以内に獨軍の白耳義國內自由通過の許可を求めて來た。而して若し白耳義が拒絶した際には同國を目して敵國と見做すと掠かしたのであつた。

思ふが尙ほ余の口頭の聲明を確かめる爲め北獨逸聯邦及び其同盟諸國は白耳義の中立を尊重すべき宣誓を此處に文書を以て貴卿に送達す」と書いてあつた。

而して前章に於て述べたる如く此宣誓は遵奉されたのである。

ベスマン、ホルヴェヒ及びフォン、ヤギー氏等の聲明 一千九百五年ブラッセル駐在の獨逸公使は或る公式の宴會に於て、「白耳義中立の尊重なる語は獨逸政治上の常用語である」と述べた。

六年後則ち一千九百十一年、白耳義は獨逸の或新聞の記事に關し獨逸政府に抗議すべき必要を感じた。其際當時の宰相(フォン、ベスマン、ホルヴェヒ)は、「獨逸は毫も白耳義中立を侵害するの意志なし」と言明した。

一千九百十三年則ち歐洲大亂の前年、外務大臣(フォン、ヤギー氏)は議會の豫算委員會に於ける討論の際(四月二十九日)獨逸軍隊は白耳義中立に關して何等慮る必要なしと云ふ意見を抱ける某議員に對し、「白耳義中立は國際條約の規定にして獨逸は是等條約を尊重する決心である」と説明した。然るに他にも斯の如き疑惑を抱いて居た議員が有たので陸軍大臣は起立して「獨逸は白耳義の中立が國際條約に依りて保證されたることを忘れてはならぬ」と述べた。

侵入の前夜再三の保證 一千九百十四年となつて獨佛の間將に戰端を開かんとする際、白耳義の外務大臣は獨逸の條約上の保證及び諸大臣の個人的言明を信じ、白耳義の中立の侵害されると云ふことは有り得可からざることであるとの意見を發表した。實に其當日ブラッセル駐在の獨逸公使は白耳義政府に向つて、「獨逸に於ける意向は(先年ベスマン、ホルヴェヒ氏の言明したる)變更しない」ことを確めた。二日後則ち八月二日獨逸軍

## 第二章 獨逸大臣の同一事項に對し四回に亘る個人的約束

### 二宰相の聲明

#### 獨逸の法律解釋

前章に述べたる所は世界公法の一部とも云ふべき諸條約に依りて保護されたる白耳義中立のことであつた。

獨逸は是等條約に署名し之を保證したのみならず、堂々たる國際法教科書中にも亦た權威ある二宰相二國務大臣の言責中にも引照してある。先づ「ハントプフ、デス、フォルカレヒツ」(民權論)中にも其第三卷十六章九十三、百八、百九の各頁に於て如何なる場合に於ても何等の例外もなく白耳義中立は絶體的神聖なるものと論じてある。續いて同書には、白耳義の中立條約を保證する如き條約は大なる「進歩の目標」である、又た之を保證したる諸國は、依頼があつても無くても、是等條約を嚴守する爲めには干涉しなくてはならぬと書き、更らに「歐羅巴の形勢を不安ならしむるものは國際的信義に關する是等義務を列強が恣に放擲するより甚だしきものはない。」と斷言して居る。

#### ビスマークの言明

次に獨逸大宰相の言明に就て述べやう。一千八百七十年佛蘭西が普魯西に宣戰したる際、伯林駐在の白耳義公使は普魯西は窮したる場合諸條約を無視して白耳義の中立を侵害しはしないだらうかと云ふことを恐れた。然るに獨逸宰相ビスマークは大丈夫をう云ふことは無いと請合つた。

七月二十二日ビスマークが白耳義公使に送りたる文書中に「余は諸條約の現存して居る間は不必要であるとは



更らに該條約には「中立國が其中立に對する攻撃を防禦する爲めに兵力を用ふることあるも之を對敵行爲と認むる能はずと規定してある。

## 第一章

獨逸が白耳義中立を尊重すべく約したる四箇の條約

の保證の下に置くべし」と宣言した。

### 普佛戰爭中に於ける白耳義中立の尊重 普佛戰爭中に於ける白耳義中立の尊重。一千八百七十年

普佛兩國間に戰爭が起つた。其時英國の發議により、兩交戰國は白耳義の中立に對して誤解なからんが爲めに、「前記の五國間條約則ち一千八百三十九年條約の規定を破毀若くは侵害することなくして」別に新條約を白耳義と締結したのである。(八月九日)此英普佛間の新條約に於て普魯西は「北獨逸聯邦(普魯西及び其他北獨逸諸州の普佛戰爭當時に於ける稱呼)は佛國に對して對敵行動を取るにも係はらず普魯西は白耳義の中立を尊重すべき確乎たる決心を有す」と誓ひ、佛國も亦之に對して同様の約束を爲した。而して英國は自己の態度に何等誤解なからしむるため若し普佛兩國の何れか、此協定を破り白耳義に侵入するが如きことあらば、直ちに之を攻撃するの方針に決めた。此普佛戰爭當時に於て白耳義の中立に對して尊重を拂へる二の實例を擧ぐれば、第一は若しナポレオンと其軍隊とがセダンの包圍を脱して白耳義に脱れ得たならばセダンに於て降伏の不名譽を避けることを得たのであるが、そうは出来なかつたのである。第二はセダン落城後、普魯西は其負傷兵を白耳義を経由して獨逸に輸送する許可を求めたけれ共許されなかつた。

### 海牙條約の規定

右の外に白耳義に關係ある條約は一千九百七年獨逸を含む四十四ヶ國間に締結せられたる海牙條約である。同條約には白耳義の如き中立國の領土は侵す可からずと規定してある。

又た該條約には「交戰國は中立國の國土を経由して軍隊を輸送し又た一切の軍需品若くは糧食を運搬するを禁ず」と規定してある。

# 第一章 獨逸が白耳義中立を尊重すべく約したる四箇の條約

一千八百三十一年より一千九百七年に至る條約

ゲエテ曰く、「虚偽は常に人の耳に私語かれつゝあり。故に我等は絶えず眞實を語らざる可からず。」

## 大隈侯の解釋

大隈侯は「白耳義が中立國として存在するは世界平和の爲めに缺く可からざるものである」と明らかに說かれて居る。其言の如く白耳義の地理的位置及び其平坦なる地勢よりして西部歐洲の重要な戦争は大概白耳義國內に於て戦はれたのである。侯は又た「此理由を以て歐洲列強は白耳義を永世中立國として定めたのである」と言はれた。侯は尙も語を續けて、「此中立國は今や獨軍に占領せられた」と說かれて居る。此事實は之れ以上に適切に序述することは出来ない。併し本章に於ては此事柄を今少しく詳細に亘つて述べる。

## 白耳義國存在の由來

一千八百三十一年に於て白耳義は和蘭と合併するを嫌ひ分離して別箇の王國を形成した。其年英、佛、露、奥、普、(獨乙帝國は一千八百七十一年に始めて起つた)間に成立したる一條約に白耳義は獨立且つ永世中立國たるべしと締結せられ、且つ右五列強は白耳義の領土保全と神聖なることに就て協約した。

和蘭は白耳義の分離に好感情を有して居なかつたが、結局一千八百三十九年に於て終に新白耳義國の獨立を承認した。和蘭は白耳義との條約に於て白耳義は「獨立永世中立國たるべき」ことを承認した。茲に於て同年即ち千八百三十九年に締結せられたる倫敦條約中に普、奥、兩國を加へたる五箇國の君主は和蘭、白耳義條約は「是等君主



- 八 死者の名簿の保存を防ぐため之を差出せよとの獨軍の宣言……………英文四六頁
- 九 白耳義に於て殺害されたる四十八名の僧侶のため羅馬に於ける追悼會の招待狀……………英文五六頁
- 十 メコロンガゼット紙上白耳義より獨逸まで物品を運搬すべしとの運送屋の廣告……………英文七九頁
- 十一 獨逸公報に發表されたる四千萬法の戰時稅納附命令……………英文八一頁
- 十二 獨帝と白耳義主との意見の相違……………英文一四一頁

|                     |      |
|---------------------|------|
| 獨兵の放火用火藥錠           | 一二八頁 |
| 白耳義王其兵士を激勵す         | 一二九頁 |
| 戰爭中白耳義王の住宅          | 一三六頁 |
| 白耳義皇太子              | 一三六頁 |
| 英國シヨージ皇帝と白耳義アルバート皇帝 | 一三七頁 |

## 二 寫眞版及復寫圖

### 英文中挿圖

|                                                 |       |
|-------------------------------------------------|-------|
| 一 白耳義の勇敢                                        | 英文七頁  |
| 二 獨軍侵入の際リエジュに於ける白耳義國將軍の愛國的宣言                    | 英文二五頁 |
| 三 アルバート皇帝に送くれる日本刀                               | 英文二七頁 |
| 四 住民の舉兵を戒むる民政軍政兩長官の宣言書                          | 英文三一頁 |
| 五 銃器所持者之を差出すべしとの知事の宣言                           | 英文三三頁 |
| 六 リエジュ附近に於て虐殺されたる六十一名(内婦人四名)のために舉行されたる追悼會の招待狀   | 英文三七頁 |
| 七 タミーヌに於て發表されたる死者三百三十六名(内二名は僧侶九名は婦人)及び負傷者五十九名の名 | 英文四三頁 |

|                            |      |
|----------------------------|------|
| 一千九百十五年の秋に於ける塞爾比           | 七三頁  |
| 獨逸と死との舞蹈                   | 八〇頁  |
| 大砲の食物                      | 八一頁  |
| 飛行船の勝利                     | 八八頁  |
| キャヴェル嬢の處刑                  | 八九頁  |
| 獨逸の媾和提議                    | 九六頁  |
| 軍國主義に捕はれたる文明               | 九七頁  |
| シ、ファス                      | 一〇四頁 |
| 「木の葉の落つる(秋)前に平和は來らん」       | 一〇五頁 |
| 獨兵が敵の負傷兵を殺戮せる愉快なる物語の記事     | 一二頁  |
| 三人の婦女を慘殺せる事實を證する獨兵の書簡      | 一三頁  |
| 負傷者の手足を切斷せる事實を記載せる獨兵の書簡の一節 | 一三頁  |
| 殺人の自白                      | 二〇頁  |
| 放火と敬神                      | 二〇頁  |
| 獸行の一例                      | 二一頁  |
| 恥づべき行爲の自白                  | 二八頁  |



|                             |     |
|-----------------------------|-----|
| カレーに進む道……………                | 一七頁 |
| 無辜の虐殺……………                  | 一八頁 |
| 上空よりの獨逸文明……………              | 一九頁 |
| 白耳義の母の群れ……………               | 二四頁 |
| 白耳義の寡婦の群れ……………              | 二五頁 |
| 白耳義の負傷兵其死兒を葬る……………          | 三二頁 |
| エーヤシヨット殉難者の發掘……………          | 三三頁 |
| 白耳義に於ける無辜の人質を銃殺す……………       | 四〇頁 |
| 妻子の目前に行はれたる白耳義の處刑……………      | 四一頁 |
| 或る白耳義の家……………                | 四八頁 |
| 獨逸文明……………                   | 四九頁 |
| 體力完全なる白耳義人皆獨逸に連れ行かる……………    | 五六頁 |
| 白耳義の良友(其二)……………             | 五七頁 |
| 米國救助委員事務所前の餓へたる白耳義人の群れ…………… | 六四頁 |
| 嚴冬に家なし……………                 | 六五頁 |
| 獨逸戰時財政の不思議……………             | 七二頁 |

挿 畫

一  
レーマーカー筆諷刺畫

「軍艦よりも客船を沈める方が餘程樂です、ね向ふから發砲しませんから」……………二頁

ルシタニヤの小兒……………三頁

白耳義の小兒の群れ……………一二頁

「何故彼女はうんと云はぬだらう、うんとさへ言へばもつと爲になつたらうに」……………一三頁

野蠻人の如く白耳義に侵入せる獨逸皇帝……………一六頁

獨軍の楯として用ひられたる白耳義人……………一頁

珍らしからぬ光景……………四頁

アントワープの退却……………五頁

「構はないよ、若し僕がせなければ誰かゝするに極切つて居るよ」……………八頁

白耳義の良友……………九頁

惡魔の相貌……………一二頁

斯の如きは是れ獨逸文明……………一三頁

獨兵の夢……………一六頁

二十一 他の列國も責む可きか

公平なる事實の審査……………一八五頁

二十二 英國人は獨逸人を嫌ひしか

五百萬の民衆が軍人となれる理由……………一九二頁

二十三 全部の結論

平和の障害……………一九九頁

## 附 錄

世界史上に於ける英國人の特性

瑞西記者の聚集せる過去百年間の事蹟……………二〇五頁

現時の戦争に於ける英國人の特性

一 東京日々新聞……………二一〇頁

一 ヘラルド、オブ、エシヤ……………二一二頁

英國人の武士道

佛國記者の英國魂及大和魂觀……………二二三頁

告示の譯文……………二二九頁



## 四 歴史上の事實

- 十四 白耳義侵入の動機に就ての虚偽……………一三三頁
- 獨逸の眞意曝露す……………
- 十五 英國が獨逸と善良なる關係を持続せんがために爲せる努力及び其努力が間斷なく妨害されたる顛末……………
- 海軍協商に係はる危怪なる噂……………一四一頁
- 十六 英國が戰爭を二回防遏したる顛末……………
- 獨逸竟に其野心のある處を曝露す……………一四六頁
- 十七 獨逸の更に大なる計畫……………
- 全世界統治の企圖……………一五五頁
- 十八 獨逸は何故に現時の大戰爭を起せしか……………
- 一千九百十三年中の出來事……………一五九頁
- 十九 歐洲戰爭前後の外交史……………
- 戰爭を避けんとせるサー、エドワード氏の苦心……………一六三頁
- 二十 聯合國は何が爲めに戰ふか……………
- 英國外相の精細なる陳述……………一七三頁

「絶對的確證」ある七件の戦時法規侵害……………七四頁

十一 論決の根據となれる實證

一 慎重に且組織的に企圖されたる虐殺殺戮及暴行……………七六頁

二 婦人に對する狼藉……………八二頁

三 人間の楯……………八九頁

四 負傷者及捕虜の殺戮……………九〇頁

五 掠奪及放縱なる破壊……………九四頁

六 組織的放火……………九九頁

十二 若干の事實と之に對する獨逸の解釋

獨逸の自覺……………一〇一頁

三 占領當時

十三 白耳義國占領中引續き同國人を虐待せること

一 白耳義人が竊盜、科料及課税に依りて強奪せられたること……………一一一頁

二 白耳義人が缺乏に苦しめること……………一一六頁

三 民事裁判の否認せらるゝこと……………一二三頁

四 キヤヴェル嬢の慘殺。其適例……………一二四頁

|   |                           |     |
|---|---------------------------|-----|
| 五 | 英國開戦の決心                   | 一三頁 |
|   | 英國が戦争に参加せる理由……………         | 一三頁 |
| 六 | 殺人犯者が自己の殺せし人の人格を非議す       |     |
|   | 獨逸が白耳義及其隣國に對して加へたる誹謗…………… | 二三頁 |
| 七 | 今次の戦争に於ける白耳義の軍事上の功績       |     |
|   | 人命の犠牲……………                | 三六頁 |
| 八 | 白耳義に起れる蠻行                 |     |
|   | 誹謗に依て其度を高めたる驚く可き蠻行……………   | 四〇頁 |
| 九 | 六箇の都市の悲惨事                 |     |
|   | 一 ルーヴアン市の學理的又た熟慮ある破壊…………… | 五六頁 |
|   | 二 タミースに於ける六百五十の殉難者……………   | 五九頁 |
|   | 三 デナンに於ける八百人の殺戮……………      | 六〇頁 |
|   | 四 アンダヌに於て獨兵斧を振て殺戮を行ふ…………… | 六五頁 |
|   | 五 エーヤショットの死體發掘……………       | 七〇頁 |
|   | 六 ナムールに於ける二千人の虐殺……………     | 七一頁 |
| 十 | 英國調査委員の戦慄すべき論決            |     |



# 目次

## 挿 畫

畫家レーメーカーと其序説

## 記 事

### 一 白耳義侵入以前

一 獨逸が白耳義の中立を尊重すべく約したる四箇の條約

一千八百三十一年より一千九百〇七年に至る條約……………一頁

二 獨逸大臣の同一事項に對し四回に亘る個人的約束

二宰相の聲明……………三頁

### 二 侵入當時

三 白耳義侵略さる

卑劣と高潔との對照……………六頁

四 獨逸の口實

「佛國は獨逸の侵入に先せしならん」……………九頁

終つた。

予は凡て是等の事項が獨立公平なる法廷に於て審議されることを切望して止まない。  
聯合軍の申條が果して立つか如何うか、之は讀者が此書を読んだ上で分かることである。

一千九百十六年秋日

長野縣立澤光榮寺に於て

ジェー、ダブリュー、ロバートソン、スコット識

戦争前には、各國共多年軍備に多額の金を費して居た。恰も戦争は幾百萬人と云ふ者の職業になつて居た。何時かは戦争が有らうと云ふことは元より怪しむに足らなかつた。世界は遂に火薬庫の姿となつてしまつたのである。何れの國にしても、只だ善隣の誼みを進めるがために、他國の目的や必要に克く折合はせやうとするだけでは戰艦一隻たりとも造くる氣は無かつたのである。それゆゑ戦争に對する罪を只だ一箇國の人にのみ着せてしまふのは聊か藝のない談である。併し戦争に對して國家的責任を決めることは出来なく無いから、今度の肉飛び血迸る慘劇に對しては其原因全く獨逸に在りと云ふのが此書の嚴肅なる主張である。之は隨分苛劇なる申分ではあるが、併し元より充分なる證據が無ければ斯ふは云はない。願はくば讀者が此書に收めてある事實に依つて、戦争の原因のみに止まらず、更らに其行動をも充分に糾して、著者の論の當否を判斷されたい。

聯合軍の申條はグレー子爵が一千九百十六年十月二十四日に左の如く之を概論して居る通りである。

同じ事を又た遣つてゐる必要はないと云ふ人もあるけれども、之が將來の平和狀態に關係を及ぼすから、幾度遣つても宜い。

一千九百十四年の七月には一人として獨逸を攻撃しやうとを考へて居たものは無かつた、之は一千八百七十年の時の談を繰返すに過ぎぬのである、獨逸にては準備全く成り、彌々と云ふ時になつて、他の一國を挑んで攻勢を取らせるやうに計略を廻らし、之に言ひがゝりを付けて最後通牒となつた。

白耳義の侵入にしても同じわけである。鐵道の作戰も出兵の方略も皆準備が出来て居たのである。

一千九百十四年に、戦争を避けやうとした努力も、獨逸が既に戦争を希望して居たのであるから遂に失敗に



る犠牲と又た其團結力、是等を著書は充分に認めては居らぬであらうと云ふ誤解を讀者から受けるやうなことがあつても亦た甚だ遺憾である。苟も人文の發達を念頭に持つ人々は獨逸人の德義心が分かつて居らぬことは無い然るに獨逸の如き大國が自家の存在と列國の關係とに就て、只だ目前の慾望のために氣を奪はれ本心を失ひ、折角の德義心をも汚すに至つたことは、將さに歐羅巴の歷史上最も悲惨なる事柄の一である。今獨逸側と戰つて居る國の人々の驚きは、恰かも平和なる家庭の中に俄に強盜が飛込んで來たと同様である。聯合軍側の國民は今や苦みと歎きの中に耐らへては居るが、併し之がために早く復讐をしやうと思ふよりも、先づ重き任務が慥と自分等の上に置かれて居ると云ふことを考へて居るのである。此任務とは萬國警察力とでも云ふべきもので、犯罪者を充分に取締り之を懲罰し、今後再び斯る犯罪のために人間の記録が決して汚されぬと云ふことを請合ふためである。

## 平和の基礎

我等は修羅の巷を遠く離れて日本に居る。併し歐羅巴に降りかゝつて來て居る禍の容易ならぬことは幾分之を悟るのである。此際に當つて、平和を欲望することは人間自然の本性である。併し今血腥い天下は正氣を失つて居るやうな場合に、平和を求めるには、何よりも先づ常識に訴へるより外は無い。それで最も明晰なる常識から考へて、第一に平和を破れる原因を世界に對し又た獨逸國民に對して立證せざる限りは、却ても平和の確實なる基礎を得る見込が無い。

レーメーカー筆の漫畫は大版刷のものが到着し、後から之に英文と日本文との説明を付けたのである。その爲めに版畫の儘で見るよりも少し美觀を害するやうになつたのは遺憾である。

予は本書が餘り長くならぬやうに努めて意を用ゐたのであるが、大なる問題に就て一と通り充分なる意見を述べやうとすれば多くの紙面を要するのは止むを得ない。多數の讀者は本書に記述せる事柄に就て既に熟知の箇處もあらう、併し其他に未だ世間に知られざる事項のあることを信するのである。

此書を今少しく良きものたらしめんことは誰よりも著者が最も痛切に感ずる所である。此書に筆を下すに當つては尠なからざる不利を感じた。必要な參考書を手に入れることが出來ず、それが爲めに文面を更らに強硬なるものとしやうと思つてそれが出來なかつた。併し此書が一言誇りとする處がある、即ち著者は此書を著はすに英國の法廷に於ける證人の宣誓中にある「誠實、全き誠實、誠實の外には何物無し」と云ふ文句の通りに誠實を以て記述することを勉めたのである。著者は暴行、卑劣なる軍國主義及び高官の瞞着的行爲等凡て慨歎に堪へざる物語が、世界民族の道義心發展上危急なる此時機に際して公表せらるゝことは我が義務なりと思考するを以て、此書が親誼ある人士により驚愕の念と同情の感を以て一讀せられんことを敢て希望する次第である。

## 獨逸に對する我等の態度

若し讀書の中に此書を読んで、獨逸が戦争前幾多の方面に遂げたる進歩を疎んずる結果を來たすやうなことが有つては著者は之を甚だ遺憾とする、又た多數獨逸陸海軍人の天晴れる振舞、獨逸國民の大多數が國家に拂へ

たる最大美術家として稱讃されるやうになつた。

## 作畫の品位

ラーマーカーは其大なる技巧上の熟達の上に依りて有名なる譯ではない。深き誠實心と又た物の特徴に突入る正しき洞察力とを持つて居るので大美術家と云はれるのである。斯る天稟と、惡に對する燃ゆるが如き嫌惡の念とを有するに依つてラーマーカーは惡逆非道なる獨逸軍隊の卑陋なる行動を描寫することが出来たのである。佛國の有名たる批評家の言の如く、ラーマーカーは獨逸兵士通有の實際的性狀を遺憾なく看破し得たやうに思はれるのである。右の評に曰く

「併し又た獨逸兵士は戰爭、掠奪、強姦及び上官の命令等に依つて、凡て戰爭を野蠻的行動と思つたがため、兵士の心中にある野獸的性格が纜を切つて暴れ出す其刹那には獐惡なるものであるが、元來ボメラニア州あたりの田舎の激昂したる鐵器商位のものであるとラーマーカーは又た明かに指摘して居るが、之は實に事局に對して克く考察し、説明し、人に真相を知らしむる哲學者の如き態度を失はぬものである」云々。

獨逸がラーマーカーから受けた侮辱を如何う思つて居るかは、六千圓の懸賞を掲げて逮捕させやうとしたのを見て分かる、ラーマーカーは今倫敦に住んで居る。

## 作畫の題目

ラーマーカーが是等の作畫に入神せる熱情を了解しやうとするには白耳義に起りたる事件を正確に知るの必要がある。以下の紙上に於て余は事の真相を、感情と偏見とを去つて毫も疑ふ所なきやうに慎重精密を旨として事實を簡明に記述するには非常に苦心したのである。記述する處は總て公報其他全然信用するに足るべき報道に基いてゐるのである。



# 緒言

## 美術家ラーマーカーと其序説

「ホエツトレー曰く、眞理を第一位に置くか第二位に置くかに依りて總ての問題に變化を生ず。」と。

歐州大亂の産みたる最大美術家 本書の目的は二方面にある。第一は特殊の名聲を博したる一人の美術家を日本に紹介し、第二は此美術家が其天才的技能を集中したる著名なる事件の顛末を最も簡単に序説せんとするにある。

ラーマーカーは歐州大亂の産みたる殊に傑出したる美術家である。白耳義に加へたる獨逸の暴行を世に知らしむるが爲めに其全技能を捧げた。併し此人は白耳義人ではない。和蘭人を父として和蘭に生れた。和蘭人は昔は白耳義人と親密の間柄であつたとは言へなかつたのである、又た母は獨逸人であつた。

彼の作品の中本書に收めてあるのは一部分に過ぎぬのであるが最初或る和蘭新聞が之を載せ始めたのである。

ラーマーカーの着眼點は單に人道的なるのみならず又愛國のであつた。獨逸に隣接して居ることゝ又た其廣さの點に於て和蘭は白耳義に似て居る。それで和蘭は早晩白耳義に均しき運命に遭遇すべきことを豫期して、ラーマーカーは獨逸人の白耳義侵入策の真相と其胸算とを明かに同胞の和蘭人に解からせやうと思つたのである。

彼の戦争畫の名聲は忽ちに上がった。巴里に於ては作畫の一大展覽會が開かれ、倫敦の週刊雜誌「ランド、アシンド、ウオーター」には此畫が掲載されるやうになつた。忽ちラーマーカーの名は歐州及び米國に於て戦争が産み



## 予が死せる友又た生ける友に

一

戦争は深く之を憎むも

文明の道のためには

潔く

一命を捨てゝ顧みざる

若き人々の

光榮ある紀念として

此書を捧ぐ

二

英國の歴史文學又た其國民の

特性を識るによりて

英國人を憤起せしめたる

動機を

了解する

予が日本の友人のために

此書を捧ぐ



D  
511  
R62  
EAST

2-17-78

「日本、英國及世界」、「土地問題」、「自由國に於ける自由農民」等の著者

ジェー、ダブリュー、ロバートソン、スコット著

# 是でも武士か

歐洲戰爭の原因及び行動に關する研究資料の集録

ルイス、レーメーカー筆諷刺畫二十八圖及挿畫、復寫圖並に書簡寫

眞版等二十四圖挿入

東京、大阪、京都、福岡、仙臺 丸善株式會社









是でも武士が